THE MAGUS ERA

BOOK 16

Blood Red

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

The Magus Era

(巫神纪)

by

Blood Red

(血红)

Synopsis

Long ago, there were people who stood upon the earth with their heads held high. They never bowed to anyone because of their indomitable spirit. They were capable of controlling wind and lightning, and conquering dragons and serpents. They seemed strong enough to split the earth and shatter the stars with their fists. They traveled throughout the land and called themselves Magi. Eventually, one of them would become a Supreme Magus! These men are the ancestors of human beings. Their blood is what we all share today.

Qing Long is the former strongest man in the world. He traveled through space and time and was reborn as Ji Hao in the Fire Crow Clan of the Southern Wasteland. It's a complicated world. Forces from both inside and outside of the clan want this young and talented boy to die. Under great pressure, Ji Hao makes a deal with a mysterious man, who resides in his spiritual space, never showing his real face. He gains two drops of blood from a dragon and phoenix. Afterwards, Ji Hao becomes increasingly more powerful.

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Law @ Qidian International

Translation Edit by Hitesh_ @ Qidian International

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ Hasseno Blog

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 1501: The Heaven and Earth Divine Tower

Outside Pan Gu world, deep in the Chaos...

Yu Yu sat on a cyan lotus hassock, with a transparent longsword put on his knees. He gently flicked his fingers on the sword and raised sharp, sonorous buzzing sounds. From time to time, he would raise his calabash and take a few sips of the wine, singing a folk song he learned from the human world with a bright voice, along with the buzz.

Po, Gui Ling, and the other few senior disciples stood behind him. Facing such a vigorous and unrestrained Shifu, Po and the other few senior disciples could only keep their eyes wide open, focusing on their younger brothers and sisters, who had been fighting against a group of Chaos monsters in a distance away while trying their best to avoid looking directly at Yu Yu.

Tens of thousands of Yu Yu's disciples had composed a sword formation. Different colored sword lights tore apart the Chaos like thousands of meters long, sharp rainbows, flashing towards hundreds of thousands of golden-monkey-like, fierce creatures like a storm.

These golden-monkey-like creatures were no taller than three-inches, but their long golden fur were feet long. They were strangely violent, moving as fast as the wind while screaming with sharp and hoarse voices. They wielded their sharp claws, which glowed with a faint, cold, golden light. Facing the dazzling sword lights created by Yu Yu's disciples, they defended themselves with their claws, which raised fire sparkles and caused metallic clangs.

"Their claws are very sharp. Po, later on, tell your young brothers and sisters to cut off their claws. When we get back, you can turn these claws into a set of top-grade flying swords." Yu Yu narrowed his eyes and pointed at some of his disciples, shaking his head as he

sighed, "Look at these young brothers and sisters of yours. Can their flying swords even be counted as...swords?"

Po grinned embarrassedly, rubbed his nose, and responded, "Shifu, as you required, their swords were made by themselves. Hehe...their swords are indeed a bit coarse and ugly. But, I can assure you that those are swords, not machetes!"

Gui Ling and the other few senior disciples giggled.

Yu Yu's eye corners twitched as he sourly turned around, gave Po a threatening glance, and said, "I did say that. Well, for the sword art, the flying swords made by yourself surely are the best. But, how would I know that some of your young brothers and sisters are so poorly talented in sword-crafting?"

Shaking his head, Yu Yu murmured, "Should we change our rule? All new disciples have to search for essence metal materials in the Chaos and forge one-hundred flying swords with acceptable quality for our sect before they formally join us. How about that?"

While Yu Yu and his senior disciples were chatting relaxedly, their expressions suddenly changed.

They were powerful cultivators, such that any slight change that happened in the surrounding environment could stir their spirit sensation. At the moment, Yu Yu and his senior disciples simultaneously sensed an immense natural fortune landing on themselves.

Even to Yu Yu, this natural fortune delivered a major improvement. Yu Yu instinctively made a deep breath. A Chaos power stream rose from his head and turned into a dense cloud above him, covering the area with a radius of ten-thousand miles. Upon the cloud, three enormous lotuses emerged, emitting a bright cyan light that illuminated the Chaos.

Yu Yu shivered slightly. Thin drops of cold sweat actually oozed out of his forehead. He immediately turned around and glanced at

Pan Gu world. A natural mark of the great Dao flashed across his eyes. At this very moment, Yu Yu suddenly sensed that the screen which had been keeping himself and the prime great Dao of Pan Gu world apart, was much thinner than before.

He was actually able to see the traces of the prime great Dao of Pan Gu world directly with his eyes. Infinite mysteries had been flowing into him, being absorbed by Yu Yu like a clear stream. An indescribable, mysterious aura could be sensed around him. His cultivation hadn't changed for tens of thousands of years, but all of a sudden, it improved significantly.

At Yu Yu's level, any slight improvement of cultivation equaled a terrifying increase in power. With the help of the suddenly appeared, massive natural fortune, his heart of Dao was suddenly enlightened. How could 'slight' ever describe the improvement of his cultivation? Yu Yu's face blushed and his blood boiled. Uncontrollably, he began shaking his body.

Sensing the sudden improvement of his cultivation, Yu Yu managed to remain calm. However, Po, Gui Ling and the other two senior disciples of his couldn't help but sit down and cross their softened legs. Their eyes were unfocused while sweat was streaming down their backs. They tremblingly looked at Pan Gu world. An endless power of Dao descended, pushing them rapidly to an immeasurably high level.

The improvement of their cultivations happened faster than that of their spirit power. Therefore, they instantly fell into the infinite power of Dao and lost all their sensations.

Among Yu Yu's senior disciples, Po had the best cultivation. Abruptly, three lotuses emerged above his head. Following two muffled 'dongs' that sounded like bell rings, two among the three lotuses above his head each had a laughing man in a long robe jump out.

The two men glanced and bowed to each other, then reverently

took three circles around Yu Yu's lotus hassock. They laughed out loud and then sat back onto the lotuses above Po's head.

"Wonderful!" Yu Yu was overjoyed. Looking at the two men above Po's head who looked like living human beings, Yu Yu applauded and laughed aloud.

Along with a series of resonant shout, Gui Ling and the other senior disciples had hazy figures jumping out of the lotuses above their heads as well. All hazy figures saluted to Yu Yu, then sat back to their lotuses.

In a distance away, a big half of Yu Yu's other disciples in the sword formation suddenly had clear lights shining from their bodies, and lotuses blooming above their heads. Some had one lotus, and some had two or three. Their sweat ran down like raindrops; they trembled intensely, and their sword moves suddenly grew more powerful, by ten times at least.

They were at bottlenecks before, such that with a little deeper understanding about the great Dao, they could make a major progress. Nevertheless, cultivation was never an easy thing, and the great Dao was even harder to understand. Therefore, some of them had been trapped in the bottlenecks for hundreds, even over a thousand years.

But all of a sudden, a mighty natural power descended and gifted them a much deeper understanding about the great Dao of nature, upon which, they broke the bottlenecks and made a major breakthrough.

Far away in the Chaos, Priest Dachi looked at the three lotuses blooming above the heads of the handful of disciples of his, then nodded and smiled. Pondering for a while, he took out the Divine Pivot Hall from his sleeve, which he took away from the heaven years ago.

As Priest Dachi pointed out his finger, the great hall, which had been glowing with a splendid starlight, collapsed into streams of

starlight and hovered in the Chaos, condensing again into a three-hundred and sixty storeys, octagonal tower, surrounded by warm glows and mist.

"Xuan Du, go, send this tower to your brother Ji Hao. With this tower, he can control the heaven and earth formation freely with his mind. And, don't forget to tell him that, from now on, this heaven and earth divine tower is the only controller of the heaven, and the entire heaven is under his full control."

Priest Dachi smiled mildly while handing this tower to Xuan Du, who stood beside him.

Xuan Du gave a faint smile as he held the dazzling tower with his left hand, treading on a cloud and returning to Pan Gu world speedily.

Chapter 1502: Appoint Ministers

Xuan Du left quickly, and returned even quicker. He went back to the Chaos after he sent Ji Hao the heaven and earth divine tower, which was remolded from the Divine Pivot Hall. From the short conversation that happened between him and Ji Hao, the latter sensed the great kindness and delight from him and Priest Dachi.

Apparently, Ji Hao was promoted as a divine emperor, which was highly beneficial to Priest Dachi, Priest Qingwei, and Yu Yu. Xuan Du had gained great benefits from this as well.

As Xuandu told him to, Ji Hao merged a drop of his spirit blood with the heaven and earth divine tower.

Along with a thunderous boom, the three-hundred and sixty storeys quaint tower, which was glowing with a golden light and surrounded by purple mists, rose from Ji Hao's hand and stood in the core of the Divine Sun Palace. Each storey of the tower was one thousand miles tall, and the entire tower was three-hundred and sixty thousand miles tall.

A magical power erupted from the tower. Countless spell symbols sparkled in every building in the heaven simultaneously; every core of the heaven and earth great formation, which was composed of the entire heaven, released thin beams of light which merged into the tower.

Ji Hao trembled slightly. The massive information intake was a bit unbearable to his embryo of Dao. His embryo of Dao emitted a blinding light, while the tower released a strong warmth, helping it absorb all the information from the heaven and earth great formation.

Time flew. Ji Hao spent whole seventy-two hours to get a full control of the heaven and earth divine tower.

"They have actually...planned this!" Ji Hao was seriously

shocked. Back then, accompanied by Po and the other senior disciples of Yu Yu, Ji Hao broke into the heaven. Later on, Xuan Du suddenly showed up from the tower that Po borrowed from Priest Dachi, and took away the entire Divine Pivot Hall. Back then, Ji Hao felt that Priest Dachi had a plan.

Afterward, Gong Gong occupied the heaven, but since the Divine Pivot Hall was taken away, he wasn't able to activate any power of the heaven and earth formation. Therefore, as a magical, powerful supreme treasure, the heaven had actually become a completely useless piece in Gong Gong's hands.

Today, Ji Hao merged his spirit with the heaven and earth divine tower, and finally figured out Priest Dachi's plan. By now, except for Ji Hao, no one in the world was allowed to use any of the power of the heaven and earth great formation.

Back in the ancient era, all five divine emperors had the right to control the heaven and earth great formation. But, after what Priest Dachi did, the shared right of the five divine emperor now belonged to Ji Hao alone.

Even if the heaven rose again in the future, and the thrones of the other four divine emperors were reoccupied in the central Divine Sun Palace, by controlling the heaven and earth divine tower, Ji Hao would be able to control every single thing in this heaven. In the coverage of the heaven and earth great formation, no matter how powerful the other four divine emperors could be, they would always be puppets under Ji Hao's control, unless they were strong enough to destroy the heaven, under the supervision of the great Dao of nature!

The other four divine emperors could ascend to the thrones, but would have no real power. Instead, the entire heaven, everyone in it, and everything happening in it, would be under Ji Hao's very control.

"Did my elder uncle always know that I would become a divine

emperor one day?" Browsing the information given by the heaven and earth divine power, he abruptly shook his head and continued murmuring to himself, "Not possible! My elder uncle couldn't have predicted such a thing even if he were a saint...Which means, Xuan Du took away the Divine Pivot Hall..."

'So, back then, Xuan Du took away the Divine Pivot Hall to simply harm the enemies without benefiting ourselves!' Ji Hao clicked his tongue as he thought.

Ji Hao guessed that Priest Dachi had been wanting to destroy the foundation of the heaven since long ago, but he couldn't find an excuse for it. As Ji Hao broke into the heaven, he seized the opportunity and took away the Divine Pivot Hall, weakening the heaven and earth great formation by about ninety-nine percent. After that, what could the heaven possible do?

Undoubtedly, Priest Dachi didn't know that Ji Hao was going to become a divine emperor back then. He took away the Divine Pivot Hall simply to break the foundation of the heaven.

This time, Ji Hao become a divine emperor, and Priest Dachi immediately remolded the Divine Pivot Hall and sent it back to heaven. The heaven and earth divine tower indeed allowed Ji Hao to control the heaven and earth great formation in a perfect way, but the shared right of all five divine emperors now belonged to Ji Hao all alone.

Which meant, the heaven was now controlled by Priest Dachi, Priest Qingwei and Priest Yu Yu!

"Great plan... I like it!" Clicking his tongue, Ji Hao chuckled to himself, "Ao Bai, Qing Qiang, don't blame me for having the heaven and earth great formation and the entire heaven all to myself. Hah, if you disagree, go talk to my elder uncle. You'll see if he would slap or kick you two to death!" Proudly, Ji Hao looked at his people standing in the Divine Sun Palace.

Man Man and Shaosi were smiling at him. For what Ji Hao had

achieved, they were sincerely happy.

Feng Xing, Yu Mu, and Taisi grindingly looked at Ji Hao. Together, they had been through all kinds of difficulties, and now, Ji Hao was a divine emperor. They were happy, and in the meantime, they also had many expectations.

A large number of Gold Crow Clan commanders were also following behind Ji Hao. They looked around in confusion, seeming to be overcautious. Following Ji Hao, they had already stepped into the heaven. This central divine palace, which occupied the land ten-thousand-miles squared, had become the Divine Sun Palace. However, they still couldn't believe their own eyes and ears.

Ji Hao, the naked little kid who followed them around all day, suddenly become a legendary divine emperor. Did this really happen?

Holy ancestors' souls! The ancestors of Gold Crow Clan people must have chosen a perfect location for the ancestral temple of the clan. These Gold Crow Clan people believed that when they had the time, they needed to return to Gold Black Mountain to perform a serious offering ceremony in the ancestral temple and bring more fresh blood offerings to the ancestors' souls in the temple.

Ji Hao smiled. He raised his head and waved towards the sky. Following his move, a purple jade scroll appeared in the air. That was the 'divine god directory'.

This was a name list of all divine gods under the leadership of the five divine emperors, a true divine tool of the great Dao. Any living being would immediately be promoted by the world to become a divine god, gaining the power of a corresponding part of the great Dao of nature, a supreme, divine power.

Pondering for a short while, Ji Hao bit his fingertips broken and solemnly wrote down the first character on the directory.

'Under the witness of the world, Shaosi is the Goddess of fate, in charge of weal and woe in the mortal world.'

'Under the witness of the world, Taisi is the God of fate, in charge of life and death in the mortal world.'

'Under the witness of the world, Feng Xing is the God of Wind, in charge of the wind in the mortal world.'

'Under the witness of the world, Yu Mu is the God of Rain, in charge of the rain in the mortal world.'

'Under the witness of the world, Ji Xia is the God of War, leading the divine warriors in the heaven.'

'Under the witness of the world, Qing Fu is the Goddess of Green, in charge of all plants.'

'Under the witness of the world, Yi Di is a Deputy God of War...'

'Under the witness of the world, Yuan Li is a Deputy God of War...'

'Under the witness of the world, Shermie is the God of Water...'

'Under the witness of the world, Mr. Crow is the General Manager of the Divine Sun Palace...'

A purple mist poured down from the sky and quickly merged into the body of Mr. Crow, who stood on Ji Hao's head. Mr. Crow gave a shrill caw in both pain and pleasure. As his feathers shook intensely, he slowly became a scrawny old man in a golden robe.

'Under the witness of the world, the pair of fire dragons are Generals of the Divine Sun Palace...' The pair of dragons roared resonantly. Like Mr. Crow, they trembled when the purple mist surged into their bodies. Slowly, they turned into two muscular men, who were nine-meters and two-feet tall.

Ji Hao appointed nearly everyone he knew and trusted as divine gods, but after that, he looked at Man Man, seeming to have a headache.

This girl was a troublemaker!

In the end, Ji Hao helplessly shook his head and wrote down Man Man's title on the directory — Pan Gu world Evil-slaying Generalissimo, who could bully anyone she wanted!

Chapter 1503: All Followers Get Promotion

Outside Yao Mountain City, in a carefully trimmed patch of woods, under the moist, cool shade, zoysia grasses had been shaking without being blowing by a wind, emitting a refreshing aroma. Heng Luo and her friends were mounted on red foxes, slim leopards, and other accompanying spirit creatures of theirs, playing in the woods while laughing with silvery voices. Occasionally, green light spots would drift out of their fingertips, merging into the zoysia grasses.

Qing Fu led a group of young boys and girls, wearing short shirts made from coarse clothes, and surrounded a large tree, observing the growing state of the zoysia grasses. She squatted by a few sprouting zoysia grasses, explaining to the young boys and girls about the nature and effects of zoysia grasses, and how to estimate years of growth of zoysia grasses based on all features. The group of kid listened carefully.

"Zoysia grasses can cope with almost all symptoms. It's gentle and nourishing. About thirty percent of all magic drugs have zoysia grasses as an ingredient." Qing Fu gently looked at these boys and girls and said, "We have more and more people in Yao Mountain City, so in the future, we will be needing more and more magic drugs. Relying on ourselves is always better than relying upon others. It can't be wrong for us to grow more medicinal herbs."

Looking at these zoysia grasses, Qing Fu felt a bit helpless. The history of Yao Mountain City was too short. Even though these special woods were now taken care of by Heng Luo and the other jungle spirits, the oldest zoysia grass had only been growing for about ten years. These zoysia grasses were not even as old as the wild ones found in the forest that belonged to Gold Crow Clan back in the Southern Wasteland, not to mention the ones growing in medicinal herb bases of the few mentionable large human families

and clans.

As a master of magic drugs and poison, Qing Fu deeply understood the importance of magic medicines to a human clan. However, medicinal herbs could only accumulate their powers over a long time. Unless she was the legendary Green God, who had the power to grow all plants in the world, as a magic drug and poison master who was not even a Magus King yet, what Qing Fu could do?

While sighing, Qing Fu paused suddenly. He heard the rumbling voice from the sky, which seemed to echo through the entire world. The voice wasn't talking with the human language. Instead, it used an ancient language which was extremely hard to understand. But magically, Qing Fu and all children around her understood what the voice said.

'Under the witness of the world, Qing Fu, is the Goddess of Green'?

Qing Fu raised her head in panic. She raised both arms and spread a dense green mist to shield the children around her. Back in Southern Wasteland forests, she had seen quite some spirit creatures who were good at creating visions and sounds to confuse human beings and shake people' hearts. Falling into their traps, one could lose a soul, a few spirits, or even the entire original soul.

She worried that some evil spirit creatures might have come to the woods around Yao Mountain City. These children were the seeds of the art of magic medicine who were carefully cultivated by Qing Fu. She would never allow those evil spirit creature to take away their souls.

All of a sudden, from the whole forest around Yo Mountain City, all plants moved without being blowing by a wind, shaking while releasing a pure and strong grin power, which gathered quickly to Qing Fu.

High up in the sky, in the starry void, all stars with a nature of

green shone simultaneously. Green star lights descended from the sky and mixed with the green power released from all forests and jungles in Pan Gu Motherland, condensing into an enormous swirl, drilling into Qing Fu's head.

Qing Fu slightly trembled. All secrets regarding the Dao of green revealed themselves to her. She suddenly figured out many questions that had puzzled her for a long time. Shee sensed the world, and immediately understood what had truly happened to her.

"Ji Hao, my good boy! How come you are a divine emperor now? My, Qing Fu's kid, the little Ji Hao from Gold Crow Clan, is a Divine Emperor now!"

Qing Fu stood under the tree, stunned. Shee couldn't believe all this. The sunlight and the green power flew ceaselessly into her body as the world rebuilt her body. Inside her body, natural marks of the great Dao of green emerged one after another. In the woods, all zoysia grasses began growing rapidly, and a thick aroma spread out.

"They can be oracles of Green." Glancing at the group of children stood around her, who were all stunned as well, Qing Fu pointed her finger at them.

Fist-thick green light streams poured down from the sky and quickly remolded the bodies of these children. Their bodies emitted the aromas of plants, and their powers soared.

Within a couple of breath, the hundreds of children became oracles of Green, with high-Magus-King-level powers. Under their wills, strong gales were raised, green lightning bolts burst from the surrounding forest, and the thunder vibrated the earth.

"Ayaya, Aunty Qing Fu!" Along with a group of beautiful and sprightly jungle spirits, Heng Luo rushed out from the woods and asked, "What happened? What happened? A voice said Divine Emperor Ji Hao appointed me as a Deputy Goddess of Green! What

is 'Green'? A Deputy Goddess of Green? Me! Really?"

Heng Luo suddenly understood what happened. She raised her head and looked at the sky, stunned.

She was a free jungle spirit who lived in Southern Wasteland jungles, with no worries, doing whatever she liked. But how come she suddenly became a Goddess in the heaven? Above the masses? This was such a massive change of identity. Heng Luo felt that she had to go ask for some booze from Stone and Treeman to clear her mind.

In Yao Mountain City, in a military camp, Ji Xia and a large group of Gold Crow Clan commanders had been supervising the practice of Yao Mountain Territory warriors.

'Soft balls', 'p*ssies', 'junks', 'idiots', all kinds of bad languages had been bursting from his mouth, exploding above the heads of all warriors like thunders.

Suddenly, a raging fire descended from the sky, stirred up scorching airstreams as it condensed into a giant swirl. In the sky, all stars with a nature of fire sparkled simultaneously. A strong fire power gathered from all directions, surging into Ji Jia's body.

Bong! Ji Xia's muscular body grew taller by about three-feet. His clothes were burned out. Instead, a red armor created by the world itself appeared on his body. Lava-like fire rose from his body as Ji Xia's long hair turned red, fire flakes spurting out from his eyebrows and eyeballs.

"The God of War? Commanding all divine warriors? Hah! Ji Hao, good boy! Are you telling your father to kick a*ses? Hah! Scums from the Dark Water Serpent Clan and Bi Fang Clan idiots who bullied us back then...Under the order of the heaven, I will lead my warriors to punish the evils. I may let you live because I have mercy, or I may kill you, because I am supposed to! You shall all wash your necks and wait for your Master Ji Xia!"

Ji Xia growled towards the sky. Along his voice, red light streams poured down from the heaven, merging into the bodies of the group of important Gold Crow Clan commanders around him. Instantly, their bodies burned intensely as well.

In Yao Mountain City, a stream of fiery light landed on the head of every Gold Crow Clan person, every single one of them.

As old people said, 'when a man gets to the top, all his friends and relations get there with him'. Without pressure and within his authority, Ji Hao gave all the remaining divine positions to Gold Crow Clan people.

Chapter 1504: Fuso Staff

When the entire Yao Mountain City was stirred because of the changes that happened to Gold Crow Clan people, Ji Hao had already left the heaven with Mr. Crow.

This time, Mr. Crow, in the shape of an especially tall and scrawny old man in a golden robe, proudly sat in the driver's seat of the nine dragons chariot, wielding a whip condensed from fire, causing loud and clear 'clapping' noises.

"Caw! Caw! Nine little loaches! Run faster!" Awarded by the world, Mr. Crow attained his man shape, but his voice still sounded like a fire crow, hoarse, high-pitched, cawing all the time.

Excitedly whipping the nine fire dragons, Mr. Crow drove the chariot soon into the starry void like a small sun. The chariot flew straight to the Pan Gu sun. No ordinary human being could ever approach any natural star in Pan Gu world, not even if he or she could clearly see every natural star. He or she would run out of life and die on the way to any star, even at the highest flying speed.

The starry void in Pan Gu world was mysterious. Countless natural stars composed a magnificent army, and each star had a small independent world. What people saw in the sky were only projections of the natural star, while the real stars were hiding in their small independent worlds.

Without knowing the orbit and the secrets of the star, no ordinary living being could approach one by simply looking at it and flying towards it. He or she might feel that the star was getting closer and closer, but in fact, it was going further and further away.

As the only present divine emperor who was chosen by the world, and had ascended to the throne with the great Dao of sun, Ji Hao clearly sensed the Pan Gu sun. The connection that existed between him and the Pan Gu sun was tight. The nine dragons

chariot left a sharp arc in the sky and took a few circles around the Pan Gu sun, then suddenly dazzled. An enormous golden gate of light appeared before the chariot.

The chariot flew into the gate. Immediately, the temperature soared, and the great heat even shook the fiery light emitted from the chariot intensely. Under the unbearable heat, Ji Hao felt awfully uncomfortable, despite his power.

Ji Hao was shocked. Was this the true power of the Pan Gu sun?

He had just broken into the small independent world of the Pan Gu sun, and was still far away from the edge of the sun. But, he already felt it hard to cope with the great heat released from the sun. Was this the true power of the Pan Gu sun? Compared to it, the Pan Jia sun was like a firefly beside a bright moon.

The golden essence sun fire blazed everywhere like a boundless ocean of fire. The highly compressed essence sun fire even condensed into golden sun crystals that piled up into tremendous continents and towering mountains in the fire ocean.

Ji Hao took out a top-grade spell symbol axe, which was crafted exquisitely by Xiu Clan craftsmen. Puff! This one-hundred-ton axe became a strand of smoke, being swirled away by the golden fiery light and disappearing.

"Caw! Caw! Amazing!" Mr. Crow widely opened his golden eyes and screamed, "Here, what a familiar sense of power...Amazing! Ji Hao, is this place the small world of sun? Where the ancient Gold Crows were born?"

Ji Hao nodded heavily. Giving a deep shout, he let out a golden fiery light from his body. The surrounding dense essence sun fire sensed Ji Hao's sun power and instantly quieted down, turning gentle and peaceful. The temperature dropped largely.

Along with a thunderous noise, a thousand-miles-wide, endlessly long golden path appeared.

The path was paved with sun crystals, and embossed with countless Fuso trees surrounded by Gold Crows. These lifelike Gold Crow embossments had fiercely sparkling eyes. Those eyes even rolled in the sockets, that made them look like real living creatures.

Only when their gazes landed on Ji Hao and Mr. Crow did these Gold Crow embossments seem to be much nicer. But, when they saw the pair of fire dragon generals, these embossments seemed even to come alive, as the extreme greed and fierceness emerged in their eyes.

Ji Hao somehow felt that if Mr. Crow and he weren't on the scene, these Gold Crow embossment on the path would have pounced and tore apart the pair of fire dragon generals, swallowing every single piece of them already.

"Scary place!" The pair of fire dragon generals seemed especially stately and strong, but they followed Ji Hao not long after they were hatched. Therefore, in fact, they were still 'infants' who hadn't even lived their first century yet.

This pair of generals had mighty looks, but were actually not daring enough. Sensing the unfriendly gazes from all directions, they alertly moved towards Ji Hao. They wished they weren't in their man shapes at the moment, because if they were still in their dragon shapes, they would have coiled on Ji Hao's arms long ago.

Ji Hao proceeded along the path without being able to tell how long he had walked, until an immense golden sun appeared in front of him.

The immeasurably huge Pan Gu sun had been spinning slowly while glowing blindingly, releasing an inexhaustible heat and light. Above the sun was a thousands of miles wide, magnificent palace, floating quietly.

Golden buildings, golden pillars, tiles and bricks, golden plants, especially the towering golden Fuso tree standing in the middle,

were all blazing and spreading a thriving life-force.

The Fuso tree was a magical tree created by the world along with ancient Gold Crows.

Back then, when the East Emperor Taiyi fell and the bloodline of ancient Gold Crows disappeared, this Fuso tree was left in here for countless years.

When Ji Hao and Mr. Crow drove the nine dragons chariot speedily to the palace above the sun, this towering, thriving Fuso tree, which had been giving an endless light and heat, suddenly quivered. It was like an elderly human being abruptly woken up from a dream.

A soft, extremely gentle Chaos power reached to Ji Hao and Mr. Crow, coiling around their bodies like an old human being that stood by the door of his house, welcoming his grandchildren. An indescribable, strong warmth embraced Ji Hao and Mr. Crow, surrounding them tightly.

The Fuso tree was way too powerful. Back when Pan Gu created the world, it failed to attain a human shape, till the prehistorical era of this world, it was already impossible for it to attain a human shape by cultivating itself. It couldn't leave the sun. It had been standing here, waiting quietly...Perhaps, it didn't even know what it had been waiting for. But, all these years, it stood in here.

Ji Hao and Mr. Crow flew out from the chariot and quickly came to the Fuso tree.

Silently looking at this tree, which had the purest sun power in the world, Ji Hao began talking respectfully.

"Old Fuso, I learned about you from the will of nature. It's so lonely in here. Come with me. This is Mr. Crow, who has been taking care of me since I was a child. He is my general manager now, and needs a spirit supreme treasure. Are you willing to follow him?"

A faint beam of light shone from the tree and scanned across Mr. Crow's body.

The sun quaked slightly. The tree didn't make a sound, but it did make a decision. It airily flew up and shrank its enormous body. At last, it became a golden staff and fell in Mr. Crow's hands.

Chapter 1505: The Essence of the Sun

"Caw?" Mr.Crow excitedly wielded the staff. The staff was antiquely styled, as long as his body. The head of the staff was a three-legged Gold Crow, with spread wings and fiercely, widely opened eyes. Its sharp claws emitted a faint golden light, making it look especially ferocious.

Mr.Crow moved, as his broad golden robe fluttered in the air. Leaving arc traces in the sky, he pounced, smashing the staff in the air. Every strike he made vibrated the space and caused a thunderous bang.

Ji Hao locked Mr. Crow's body with his spirit power. After being appointed as a divine god by Ji Hao and absorbing the sun power, Mr. Crow's power soared. But still, he was no better than a high-level Divine Magus. Nevertheless, once the Fuso staff fell into his hands, his sense of power began improving rapidly, soon reaching the level of Supreme Magi, but still not stopping.

From the staff, an incredibly strong power had been flowing into Mr. Crow's body, strengthening his body, purifying his soul, improving his nature, and building a foundation for his cultivation of Dao. Mr. Crow didn't need to cultivate himself. By simply holding the Fuso staff, his cultivation and power would be improved.

"The old Fuso waited for too long. Without a hesitation, it agreed to serve as Mr. Crow's spirit supreme treasure." Ji Hao nodded delightfully. This was indeed a surprise. Ji Hao didn't expect The Fuso tree to agree to follow Mr. Crow so soon. Perhaps, the old tree had truly been too lonely for too many years.

Ji Hao scanned across the broad and empty place, shaking his head. No living creature was here in this small world of sun; no one had ever come in for long. How many years had this place been like this for? How many years had this old tree stood here all

alone?

Once, powerful creatures laughed and played under its crown. East Emperor Taiyi, and ancient Gold Crows, they all disappeared from the world. As a creature with a soul, these lonely years must have been difficult for the old Fuso tree.

"Mr. Crow, be friends with old Fuso." Ji Hao clicked his tongue and said. "Don't use old Fuso to hit cats or dogs or other insignificant ones. Don't use old Fuso to beat anyone unless he or she is important enough, because that would be humiliating." Ji Hao said grinningly to Mr. Crow, then gave a complicated glance to the Fuso staff, which had been releasing a great heat and an infinite light. Turning around, he walked to the tallest building in the golden palace.

As the power of the sun coiled around Ji Hao, everything about this whole palace had been printed in Ji Hao's heart.

Ji Hao easily passed through numerous paths and corridors and unsealed countless natural divine seals, as if he had been here for many times. At last, he reached the tallest building, which was tens of thousands of meters tall, and all empty. The throne that East Emperor Taiyi used to sit in stood in the palace all alone.

Behind the dazzling throne was a soft sphere of golden light wrapping a small independent space, which was created by an unimaginably great power.

A golden pond, three-thousand-miles in diameter, occupied almost the entire small space. A glistening golden liquid was contained in the pond, pure and clear, emitting a magical, refreshing aroma.

Every other hour, a bean-sized drop of golden liquid would drip down from the dense golden clouds above the pound. The pearl-like golden drop would bounce tens of times and cause a series of silvery tinkles, then slowly merge into the pond.

This was the essence of the sun, a pure natural treasure generated from the sun crystals. Back in the ancient era, East Emperor Taiyi fed Gold Crows with the sun essence and allowed them to have strong bodies and great powers within a short span of time.

Looking at this full pond-full of sun essence, Ji Hao was thrilled.

He had a large batch of followers from the dragon-kind and the phoenix-kind, but in the end, these dragons and phoenixes weren't his most loyal followers. Ji Hao couldn't trust them completely. Indeed, they had to follow Ji Hao's orders, but somehow, there was always some gap between them and Ji Hao.

Ji Hao needed a strong force, which was absolute elite, completely trustworthy, could do anything for him, and would follow him to the end of the day. This force also needed to be able to coordinate with him, a divine emperor. The force needed to match his power to the greatest extent, and absorb the improvement gifted from a divine emperor.

"You are the suitable ones, caw!" Ji Hao smiled and cawed gently to Mr. Crow.

Turning around, he took out his divine seal and threw it up into the sky, generating a thunderous boom. A three-thousand and six-hundred meters long golden mirror descended from the roof of the palace. Within the blinding golden light, the Gold Black Mountain in Southern Wasteland emerged in the mirror.

This was the Divine Sun Palace. Everything from everywhere the starlight reached could be clearly seen through this mirror. Ji Hao saw the tens of towering mulberry woods on the mountain, and the mulberry woods down the mountain. He also saw the shrilly cawing, boundless group of fire crow hovering in the sky.

For countless years, these fire crows, which possessed a thin trace of Gold Crow bloodline, lived together with the Gold Crow Clan people. They were the sharpest eyes and ears of Gold Crow Clan

people, the most loyal, reliable partners on battlegrounds, and the guardians of the holy realm of Gold Crow Clan.

The fire crow family had a huge population, over ten times greater than the total population of Gold Crow Clan. About a billion fire crows lived in Gold Black Mountain. Every morning, when the sun rose, the shrill and resonant 'caw, caw' from millions of fire crow was the worst nightmare of the little Ji Hao. That endless 'caw, caw' would force one to roll out of one's warm bed!

"Come on, come one, you all!" Ji Hao locked his fingers together and waved towards the mirror.

Back in Southern Wasteland, near the Gold Black Mountain, many Gold Crow Clan people, who were surprised by the sudden change that happened to their bodies, saw a magical scene. They saw a golden light beam pour down from the sun and condense into a path, embossed with Gold Crows.

A familiar and incredibly strong power was released from this path. All fire crows on Gold Black Mountain sensed it. They cawed thunderously, madly flapping their wings as if they were all out of their minds. Led by the group of oldest, largest fire crows, they flew towards the path like a giant dark cloud, covering the sky.

In the Gold Black Mountain area, all fire crows were driven crazy, and so were the ones in other areas of Southern Wasteland jungles.

Countless fire crows flew to the golden path, as fast as they could, with all their strengths. While flying, a similar broad golden path emerged in front of them, and they happily flew in.

The entire sun was shaking slightly. The sun essence dripped from the golden cloud quite slowly, but all of a sudden, an explosion happened. More and more sun essence fell from the cloud, seeming like a heavy, golden rain.

Countless fire crows flew out of the mirror, happily hovering

around Ji Hao. They ruptured their scalps slightly, each shedding a drop of spirit blood. They offered their spirit blood to Ji Hao, to merge into his divine seal. Afterward, they dove into the golden pond, which was expanding rapidly.

After every drop of spirit blood merged with the seal, the power of the great Dao of sun would descend on one fire crow, to protect it from being stuffed to death by the sun essence, which contained a giant amount of sun power.

All five crows sank into the pond and quietly curled their bodies, letting the essence sun fire drill into their bodies, remolding them and bloodline. Gradually, the third claw started to grow from the bellies of the largest, oldest fire crows.

Chapter 1506: Crow Warriors of the Sun

In the sticky golden liquid, countless fire crows with red or black and red feathers fell into a deep sleep.

Ji Hao stood by the pond, looking down at the fire crows. As he reached his spirit power into their bodies to sense the changes, he couldn't help but shake his head. After all, they were after-world ordinary creatures, and couldn't be compared with pre-world magical creatures like Gold Crows. Even with a giant amount of sun essence to remold their bodies, the powers of these fire crows were still barely satisfactory.

The group of oldest fire crows already had their Gold Crow bloodline activated. When they woke up, they should be as strong as Divine Magi. As for the young and the middle-aged fire crows, among them, the ones in relatively good conditions should be able to reach the level of Divine Magi as well, while the rest ninety percent of them could reach the level of Magus Kings at most.

The majority of all fire crows were female crows and young crows. Absorbing sun essence, they could reach the level of Senior Magi. Young crows had potential, so it wouldn't be a problem for them to break into the level of Divine Magi in the future. The female crows had consumed too much spirit blood already, and therefore, it would be lucky if a handful of them managed to reach the level of Magus King.

They didn't have strong foundations after all. A thin trace of Gold Crow bloodline existed in their blood, but they were merely the umpteenth generation mix-blooded descendants of ancient Gold Crows. The effect delivered by their thin Gold Crow bloodline was too limited.

Along with a series of muffled noise of a staff knocking on the ground, Mr. Crow walked in with the Fuso staff. He came behind the throne and walked into the small space, popping up his golden

eyes as he carefully observed the asleep fire crows in the pond. Mr. Crow was actually one of the young and middle-aged ones in the fire crow family. Among all fire crows in the pond, some were much older than him, and some were generations younger.

What had been happening now was related the future of the entire fire crow family. Mr. Crow looked at these crows in the pond, and couldn't help but scream, "Caw, caw, this isn't good, no good...Feathers are still black. How can this be?"

Newborn fire crows had black feathers, and as they grew stronger and stronger, more and more redness would appear on their feathers. When a fire crow's feathers all turned crimson, he or she would be an outstanding one among all. However, the feathers of ancient Gold Crows were pure golden; they were beautiful, splendid, entirely gold, like Mr. Crow now. As a Gold Crow, Mr. Crow shouted with his shrill voice when he saw the feathers of a big half of all his families sleeping in the pond being still black or red and black.

Abruptly, the eyes of the fierce-looking Gold Crow on the head of Fuso staff rolled. Meantime, a clear voice came into the minds of Mr. Crow and Ji Hao.

Mr.Crow paused for a second and laughed, "You are right, the first generation of Gold Crow were created on your branches. You are the true ancestor of fire crows. Caw, caw, we are counting on you now. Please, please, caw, caw!"

While grinning, Mr. Crow held the Fuso staff with both hands and carefully planted it by the pond.

Ji Hao held his breath as well, seriously looking at the rapidly growing staff. He watched the staff become a Fuso tree again. This time, instead of growing back to its original shape, it carefully controlled its power and kept its body at about a thousand miles in height.

The Fuso tree with its luxuriant foliage began shaking gently.

Following a rustling noise, burning golden leaves fell from its branches. Each leaf had been releasing a strong life-force; in these leaves, the fire condensed into hazy figures of tiny, sparkling Gold Crows, faintly visible.

Specifically, East Emperor Taiyi was the only creature of the sun, born when the world was created. Gold Crows were magical creatures created when the sun essence merged with the life-force of the Fuso tree, based on the great Dao of creation.

In other words, East Emperor Taiyi was the son of the sun, while the Fuso tree was the mother of Gold Crows. It was hard to say if the sun was the mother or the father, but for sure, East Emperor Taiyi and Gold Crows shared the same origin, and their bloodlines were connected. For this reason, back in the ancient era, East Emperor Taiyi and Gold Crows were fairly close.

The secrets of the creation of Gold Crows existed in the Fuso tree's memories. As the leaves fell, more and more golden leaves merged into the bodies of all fire crows.

The feathers of these fire crows burned out immediately, and their skins were exposed. Their bones creaked, and muscles squirmed quickly, as thorough changes had been happening to their marrow and blood. Bones and muscles squirmed in their bellies, and slowly, the third claw grew out.

The Fuso leaves opened the gate of evolution for these fire crows. At the moment, they had been transforming into the perfect, strongest Gold Crows. Sun essence was flowing into their bodies in ceaselessly streams, providing them with a strong energy to support their evolution.

Gradually, new golden feathers grew from their skin. The new golden feathers seemed to exist between intangible and tangible, looking like a frozen flame or melting golden glass. On each feather, countless tiny spell symbols had been hovering, circling, seeming so magical, so beautiful.

The sense of power released from their bodies grew stronger rapidly. Their powers soon broke the limitations of their bloodlines, turning greater and greater, fiercer and fiercer.

They were still in sleep, but some of them had already cawed out loud.

They were becoming pure-blood Gold Crows. Compared to ordinary fire crows, their sizes didn't change too much, but their voices were much more resonant than before. A billion fire crows cawed in sleep together, which created an overwhelming sound wave that even made Ji Hao dizzy. Uncontrollably, his eyeballs began rolling in his eye sockets.

Mr. Crow was excited. He raised his arms high, jumping around by the pond. Thrillingly, he cawed out loud as well to respond to his families sleeping in the pond.

Abruptly, along with a sonorous caw, a Gold Crow suddenly flew out of the pond, slowly spreading his wings. He was no more than a hundred meters tall, but his body began expanding quickly, and his wingspan immediately reached three-hundred-miles-wide.

The pure essence sun fire erupted from his body. He happily flapped his wings and opened his beaks and caws.

Mr. Crow grinned, squeezing his eyes into a pair of curved line. "Great-grandpa, you woke up! Try, try to become a man, will you?" He said.

The old Gold Crow cawed again and turned around his enormous body, suddenly becoming a scrawny, tall old man who was wearing a golden robe. He looked exactly like Mr. Crow in his man shape.

"Great-grandpa!" Ji Hao laughed out loud and rushed up to hug the old man as he shouted, "Hah! I can't steal your feathers to make arrows in the future!"

The old Gold Crow slowly tilted his head, then seriously looked at Ji Hao and said, "Good boy, good boy. Ji Hao, from now on, our

Gold Crow Family is relying on you!"

More and more Gold Crows flew out of the pond, rolled in the air, and became tall and slim people in golden robes. They surrounded Ji Hao while laughing loudly with cawing voices.

Ji Hao's Crow Army of the Sun was formally raised.

Chapter 1507: The Anger of Priest Mu

Fire Crows were sprightly and active. They were birds, so they loved to fly all over the sky and scream.

Now, about a billion fire crows had shifted into human shapes. These curious, excited fire crows instantly burst into thunderous shouts and laughter, roughhousing with each other. The palace of the sun was vast, but at the moment, one could see scrawny fire crow people in golden robes dashing everywhere. They flew up to the roofs, ripped off roof tiles, and dug into the ground. The magnificent palace was soon turned into a mess by them.

Some found a wine cellar. Immediately, tens of thousands of fire crows marched in and emptied the cellar. Countless fire crows rushed up and drank up every drop of wine stored in the cellar, then fell to the ground, drunk.

Some found an armory. This time, hundreds of thousands of fire crows rushed in and took out all armors and weapons in it. They equipped themselves and began playing 'good guys and bad guys' with each other. All of a sudden, a loud series of bangs could be heard, as thousands of crossbows went off simultaneously, releasing a storm-like wave of arrow that turned a great hall into a sifter.

Before long, a billion crazily darting around fire crows turned the thousands of miles squared palace of the sun upside down. All exquisite decorations, flower vases, water bottles, even the pots, bowls and the spoons were all plundered by them.

If any other creature dared to act so unbridled and aggressive in the palace of the sun, it would have been incinerated by the defensive seals in the palace long ago. However, these fire crows had all left their spirit blood in Ji Hao's divine seal, which meant they were now under the protection of the will of nature. Besides, Ji Hao had ascended to the throne which belonged to East Emperor

Taiyi, and was now the official owner of the Pan Gu sun. Therefore, the defensive seals in this palace could kill any living being but these man-shaped fire crows. Not to mention the fact that the Fuso tree, the true great ancestor that lived in this palace, was still here. It covered the entire palace with its tremendous spirit power, unsealed all seals, and opened all treasuries and secret spaces wherever these fire crows reached.

Relying on the Fuso tree, the fire crows swept across the palace without scruple, seizing every single valuable object in the palace of the sun.

Tens of fire crow elders surrounded Ji Hao, cawing by his ears with high-pitched, hoarse voices, "Indeed, let our kids empty this place! Ji Hao, it's not easy to accumulate wealth for the family. We Gold Crow family have never been rich. We should take as much as we can, as fast as possible, when we see valuable things!"

The oldest fire crow elder brushed his long beard with his fingers while looking at Ji Hao, honestly teaching him, "Look at this palace, so magnificent, so splendid. The owner of this place must be someone powerful. We should take away these treasures as soon as possible, then set this place on fire. Like people said, 'chop up a corpse and obliterate all traces', so no one can know we did it."

Ji Hao rubbed his forehead, wanting to cry. Didn't these fire crow elders understand that this was the palace of the sun, the core territory of Ji Hao, which was even more important than Yao Mountain City? These fire crows had been robbing themselves!

And, 'set this place on fire, chop up a corpse and obliterate all traces'? This sounded quite reasonable, but how on earth would you start a fire in the sun, and burn the palace of the sun? This palace was divine, nourished and strengthened by the sun power for countless centuries. Not even the strongest fire in the world managed to burn it, so how on earth would they burn this place?

Shaking his head and waving his hand, Ji Hao laughed

embarrassedly and said, "Elders, grandpas, let's go now. I am a divine emperor now. From this day on, fire crows, ah, no...Gold Crows are my closest guards. You need to learn to train the army."

Hearing him, fire crow, no Gold Crow elders cawed shrilly in chorus. In excitement, they wielded their arms and jumped around Ji Hao.

The closest guards of a divine emperor! The guards of an actual divine emperor, instead of the batting beasts of a small Southern Wasteland clan! They had indeed brought glory to their ancestors, and made their ancestors illustrious! How many years had it been since such a glorious thing happened to the fire crow family in Southern Wasteland?

Tens of gold crow elders screamed. Following their voices, countless gold crows gathered over, cawing and making a disordered but formidable array.

Ji Hao didn't want to waste time. In the future, Ji Xia would take his time to train these crows.

He started the nine dragons chariot. The tens of oldest Gold Crow elders followed Ji Hao onto the chariot, after which, a stream of fiery light flashed into the sky, swiftly towards the outside of the small world of sun. Gold Crows shifted back into their original shapes and followed behind the chariot, lining up according to their sizes. The largest, strongest ones were at the front, while the smallest, weakest ones were at the tail. Countless Gold Crows screamed and transformed into a golden torrent, following closely behind Ji Hao.

The wings of a billion Gold Crows were gradually connected. The formidable array extended for hundreds of thousands of miles, dazzling with a golden light and cawing with soul-shaking thunderous voices as they followed Ji Hao and left the small world of sun.

These Gold Crows didn't give up on plundering even on their way

back. Seeing the sparkling continents and mountains piled up by sun crystals, they hurriedly cast their natural magic and collected a giant amount of sun crystals. As a nature of all crows in the world, they loved sparkling things the most.

When the golden torrent flooded out of the small world of sun, the entire starry void quaked slightly.

It was not so obvious when they were back in the small world of sun, but once they were out, the fire burning on the bodies of these Gold Crows, which now had the purest Gold Crow bloodlines and had their powers soared, seemed even to melt the sky. Even the fire of the weakest Gold Crow was strong enough to melt a mountain.

Countless Gold Crows merged together, looking like an extended sun that was blazing, scorching, and dazzling in the sky.

If Ji Hao hadn't been restraining the heat released from all these Gold Crows with the power of the nine dragons chariot, a medium-scale drought would be caused in Pan Gu Motherland.

He dared not to let these Gold Crows stay in the mortal world for long. Therefore, Ji Hao hurriedly drove the chariot to the heaven.

Flying a short distance, a cyan-colored figure suddenly showed up in the front. That was Priest Mu with a badly darkened face, as he trod on a cloud and blocked Ji Hao's way.

From both sides of Ji Hao, the pair of fire dragons walked to the front of the chariot with large steps and shouted in unpracticed human language, "That...small old man, stay out of the way. Do you know whose chariot this is?"

As the one following Ji Hao since the beginning, Mr. Crow recognized Priest Mu and understood that this wrinkled, bitter-faced priest could not be offended.

Cautiously holding the Fuso staff, Mr. Crow stood up and looked at Priest Mu, then cawed and yelled, "Caw, Priest Mu, caw, are you

here to bring Ji Hao another trouble? Caw, do you see all our people? We have so many people today! Caw! Don't do anything reckless!"

Without taking even a glance at Mr. Crow, Priest Mu stared at the Fuso staff and shouted, "Fuso, my friend, back then, I visited you myself to offer you the position of the third master in my sect. Yet, you rejected my offer without a hesitation. Today, why are you serving a kid?"

Priest Hu growled harshly, "Am I not as good as the kid Ji Hao?"

Chapter 1508: Bygones

Ji Hao stood up and walked to Mr. Crow, silently looking at Priest Mu.

Priest Mu looked at Ji Hao with his bitter face. A cyan-light sparked in his eyes.

He was a powerful cultivator, and no one could know what was he thinking, or what he would do in the following moment. Therefore, Ji Hao had already prepared for the worst. The Pan Gu bell and the Pan Gu sword were ready. Meanwhile, he contacted the small world of sun, which was not yet far away. Once Priest Mu make any undesirable move, Ji Hao would activate the power of the Pan Gu sun to give him a heavy strike.

Suddenly, a pure and warm power spread from the Fuso staff, calming Ji Hao's strong will of fighting and easing his faint anxiety.

A thin beam of red light shone from the beaks of the Gold Crow on the head of the staff. Within the light was a hazy, three-feet-tall Fuso tree. It was a tree, but everyone on the scene clearly sensed that the tree seriously took a 'glance' at Priest Mu.

Afterward, a deep, slow, and old voice could be heard from the hearts of everyone present. Fuso tree seemed to be not good at speaking. Instead, it directly communicated with the others with its soul power.

"Priest Mu, back then, what did you say? What, did I say?" said Fuso tree.

"Hehe," The tree snorted with an obvious scorn and continued, "The third master in your sect? Eh?"

Priest Mu's never-changing bitter face twitched slightly, and even his immeasurably thick skin blushed a little bit. Embarrassedly, he opened his mouth. As a fierce light flashed across his eyes, he

shouted, "Fuso, my friend, it's good for you to remember...I made the offer with honesty and sincerity. In the end, I even offered you the position of the great master. I was willing to be beneath you, but you actually turned me down."

Wielding the wooden staff holding in his hand, Priest Mu's voice sounded sharper and sharper, more and more aggressive, "Fuso, my friend, what did you say back then? That you were tired of wars, and wanted nothing more than living an isolated life in the world of sun, without taking part in any mortal affairs. But today, you let yourself fall to be the spirit thing of a feathered animal!"

"Caw!" Mr. Crow cawed in rage as he attempted to curse Priest Mu. In front of a billion crows, Priest Mu called him 'a feathered animal', which was truly hurting. But, Ji Hao covered Mr. Crow's mouth with his hand as he looked at Priest Mu, then smiled faintly and coldly, "Eh? Did such thing really happen? Was Priest Mu really willing to let you be the Great Master? Hehe... hehe... hehehehe!"

Hearing Ji Hao's series of cold 'hehe', Priest Mu seemed to become more and more embarrassed, even showing a savage look in his eyes.

Fuso tree released a faint red light screen. In the screen, the golden fire burned to the sky. In was nowhere else but the small world of sun. Within the boundless golden fire, a towering linden tree was slightly shaking behind Priest Mu. Streams of green mist poured down from the tree and shielded Priest Mu, allowing him to move strenuously through the golden fire.

"That day, not long after East Emperor Taiyi fell, the Gold Crow Family suffered a heavy loss, upon which, they were ambushed by a strong force from Ten Sun County from the Eastern Wasteland. Gold Crows were slaughtered, and a big half of all human clans that inherited their powers were wiped out. The survivors fled to Southern Wasteland." Fuso Tree's voice echoed across everyone's heart.

Mr. Crow and the other Gold Crow elders cawed in chorus. The Gold Crow family was destroyed, and human beings who had their powers were slaughtered. The ones who luckily survived hid in the void and escaped to Southern Wasteland, living under the protection of the Fire God, Zhu Rong.

Zhu Rong and Gold Crows were friends. After all, they were all the ancestors of fire players. Personally, Zhu Rong protected all surviving possessors of the Gold Crow bloodline. These were the experiences of Ji Hao's ancestors from the Gold Black Mountain, and the origin of the Fire Crow Clan in Southern Wasteland.

"After East Emperor Taiji fell, Priest Mu, my friend, you came to the sun world." Fuso tree continued slowly, "At first, you promised me the position of the third master in your sect. You also promised to help me passing the natural trial and attain a human shape at all costs...I rejected."

Priest Mu remained silent with a sulky face. The blush on his face became more and more obvious, uglier and uglier.

"Priest Mu, my friend, you believed that you were strong. I refused to follow you, so you attempted to force me with violence. Unfortunately, my friend, you were in the sun world. The sun is the ruler of all stars in the world, and I root in the sun world. More or less, I can use the power of all the stars."

In the red light screen, Priest Mu was holding a wooden staff and releasing strong streams of green mist, pressing towards Fuso tree. The Fuso tree was shaking his branches. In his leaves, the hazily sparkling stars were faintly visible. Centered on his body, the stars in his leaves composed a giant scale star formation.

The formation was magical, such that Priest Mu consumed up his power and launched a violent series of attack, but failed to break it.

"Priest Mu, my friend, you failed to break my star formation. On the contrary, your power and life-force was worn out by the essence sun fire. You lost much more than I did." said Fuso tree

blandly, "Priest Mu, my friend, you didn't think that..."

"Enough!" Priest Mu suddenly burst into a raging growl, "Fuso, my friend, about what happened back then, you have to give me a reasonable explanation. You are pushing this too far! You'd rather become the spirit thing of a feathered animal than the great master of my sect? You are..."

"Priest Mu, back then, you forgot that even though we are both pre-world trees, you have a nature of green, while I am the rarest kind among all pre-world trees, with a nature of pure fire. The fire suppresses the green, that is the Dao of nature." Fuso tree's old yet strong voice echoed.

Fuso tree interrupted Priest Mu. Hearing Fuso tree telling the old story, Priest Mu's face was entirely red already.

"Therefore, Priest Mu, my friend, you were injured severely by me with one strike!"

In the light screen, Priest Mu wielded his wooden staff and madly attacked Fuso tree. He tried for long but failed to shake the Fuso tree. As he put down the staff and gasped for air, the earth under Fuso tree split up all of a sudden. A water-tank-thick root thrust out of the ground and struck onto Priest Mu's chest.

Priest Mu's chest hollowed. The blood was squeezed out of his mouth, eyes, ears, and nose simultaneously as he shambled backward quickly.

Fuso tree's branches wriggled like fierce boas as they whipped on Priest Mu's body. Priest Mu could barely cope with Fuso tree's attack. At last, he activated a golden, dazzling tower, defending him against the tree.

Priest Mu panted for a while, then solemnly bowed and apologized to Fuso tree, seriously admitting his mistake. Sincerely and passionately, he again invited Fuso tree to join his sect. Because of the nature-level suppression Fuso tree showed to Priest

Mu, Priest Mu generously offered Fuso tree the position of the great master in the sect. He was willing to be the second master, while Priest Hua would descend to the third master."

As Priest Mu said, Fuso tree rejected his offer with the excuse of getting tired of war, and wanting to live an isolated life in the sun world. Priest Mu didn't give up. He tried to persuade Fuso tree for another long while, but Fuso tree never accepted his offer.

Helplessly, Priest Mu left the sun world, as Fuso tree refused to join his sect so determinedly.

Ji Hao laughed, "Priest Mu, no wonder you didn't want Elder Fuso to talk. It turns out that back then, you..."

Priest Mu finally exploded in anger.

"Ji Hao kid, shut up!" He yelled at Ji Hao.

Chapter 1509: Be Frustrated

Priest Mu shouted out loud. Before Ji Hao could respond, countless Gold Crows following behind the chariot began cawing to curse.

Crows always liked to scream. These Gold Crows had just attained their man shapes, and were truly excited. With Priest Mu as a perfect target, they immediately put all dirty languages that they learned from Gold Crow Clan people in use!

In Southern Wasteland jungle, what good word could those bad-tempered, brave, and straightforward men say during battles?

Priest Mu had a great cultivation, but still, the thunderous wave of 'cawing' from these Gold Crows made him dizzy. Meanwhile, he was so enraged by the extremely nasty and dirty languages of these Gold Crows that he even temporarily lost his eyesight.

How many years had it been? Ever since Saint Pan Gu created the world, not a single living creature dared to talk to him like that. Yu Yu was the one that he feared the most, but when did Yu Yu ever humiliate him like this? He never heard such words from Yu Yu, not even when they were fighting each other.

"Ji Hao kid, you are killing yourself!" Priest Mu gave a bright shout. He remained perfectly motionless, but following his voice, another Priest Mu had already reached to Ji Hao, swinging the colorfully shining wooden staff down to Ji Hao's head while starting a fierce gust of wind.

Without a hesitation, Ji Hao activated the Pan Gu bell. From the sun world behind him, a golden stream of light merged into his body and provided him with an inexhaustible power. The Pan Gu bell buzzed suddenly, as great-river-like torrents of Chaos power surged in all directions, stirring the surrounding space for ten-thousand miles in radius. The peaceful starry void was stirred into chaos, as all natural powers were disordered.

'Dong'! The wooden staff landed violently on the bell.

Ji Hao slightly quivered. Along with the bell, he was forced back for seven to eight steps. He felt suffocated and nearly vomited blood. He stared at Priest Mu in shock. Was this the true power of a powerful being at Priest Mu's level?

"Hm, nothing more than another East Emperor Taiyi!" Priest Mu scornfully sneered. Wielding the wooden staff and leaving shreds of afterimages in the air, the staff landed on the bell over and over again like a storm. Bell rings could be heard without an end, while Ji Hao was forcing backward without a pause. Within a blink of an eye, he had drawn back for over a thousand miles.

Watching Ji Hao fall into a disadvantage, Mr. Crow spread the pair of golden, blazing, enormous wings on his back, and gave a sky-shaking resonate caw. He raised the golden Fuso staff high and hit Priest Mu's back.

Priest Mu, who was talking, remained moveless, and the one attacking Ji Hao didn't turn around. Another Priest My showed up suddenly, right before Mr. Crow's face. The colorfully shining wooden staff holding in his hands drew an arc in the air and bumped loudly against the Fuso staff. Fuso tree's muffled snort could be heard from everyone's heart, "Priest Mu, my friend, you've gone too far!"

Along with a thunderous bang, Fuso staff burst into a blinding fiery light. Mr. Crow was sent flying away by a tremendous force, while the colorfully glowing wooden staff held in Priest Mu's hands was surrounded by a golden fire. The fire blazed, wearing away the colorful light layer by layer. The flame soon coiled around the staff and scorched it. A strange aroma began spreading from it.

"Fuso, my friend, you return to the sun world right now, go back to your isolated life. Then, I'll still respect you." The Priest Mu who remained motionless said, "If you insist on coming back to the

mortal world, you can either join my sect, or...die and disappear!"

Fuso tree sneered, "Die and disappear? Linden tree, are you gonna make me die and disappear?"

The fuso tree stopped calling him 'Priest Mu, my friend'. Instead, Fuso tree used his real name. Clearly, Fuso tree had flared up.

A green mist spread around Priest Mu's face. The Fuso tree was enraged, and so was he.

As he said, if Fuso tree stayed in the sun world, everyone would be fine, and no one could bring any trouble to the other. If the Fuso tree was too bored and wanted to come out and take a stroll, as long as he did not interfere with Priest Mu and Priest Hua, they could still pretend to be friends.

However, Fuso tree suddenly decided to join a force...Even if Fuso tree chose to take root in Pu Ban City to protect human beings, Priest Mu would still tolerate this unreasonable decision of his. Priest Mu would restrain his anger and do nothing but let Fuso tree do whatever he wanted, even though to Priest Mu, the strangeness of the humankind was never desirable.

Nevertheless, Fuso tree chose to follow no one else but Ji Hao, a new divine emperor!

If this could be tolerated, what could not? Ji Hao was Yu Yu's disciple. Yu Yu, Preist Dachi and Priest Qing Wei had been suppressing Priest Hua and Priest Mu all these years, such that Priest Hua and Priest Mu sometimes even felt hard to breathe. For an awfully long period of time, Priest Hua and Priest Mu' disciples couldn't even take one single step out of Western Wasteland. Even when preaching their sect in Western Wasteland, Yu Yu, the one who claimed to be traveling around the world, interrupted them all the time.

Priest Mu would never, ever let a pre-world powerful being like Fuso tree join Yu Yu's side. Especially when Fuso tree had a nature

of fire, which made him a natural enemy of Priest Mu. Even though Fuso tree was weaker than Priest Mu, with a natural advantage, he could still rival Priest Mu and Priest Hua.

Except for Priest Mu and Priest Hua themselves, none of their disciples would have a chance to win against Fuso tree!

What was even more unacceptable was that back then, when Fuso tree injured Priest Mu, the latter humbly offered him the position of the great master in his sect and invited him to join the sect. But, Fuso tree scorned the offer. However, today, Fuso tree willingly become Mr. Crow's spirit treasure!

Was Priest Mu not as good as a featured animal?

Wielding the burning wooden staff, Priest Mu launched a series of attacks on Mr. Crow. He had to kill Mr. Crow today, even if he let Ji Hao live. He needed to kill this reckless, arrogant feathered animal who humiliated him, Priest Mu.

Mr. Crow moved uncontrollably. The Fuso staff put him in motion. With heavy yet accurate steps, he moved in the air and perfectly dodged every strike launched by Priest Mu.

The Fuso staff banged against Priest Mu's wooden staff over and over again, causing muffed swooshing noise. Priest Mu's wooden staff burned more and more intensely. Suddenly, following a thunderous bang, the wooden staff was burned into a strand of ash by the spirit fire of Fuso tree.

"Good, good, good! Fuso my friend, your spirit fire is more powerful now!" Priest Mu sneered and said, "Let's find out how many staffs of mine you can destroy today!"

Wielding his broad sleeve, countless silhouettes flashed across the air. Around Priest Mu, three whole thousands clones of his showed up, each holding a wooden staff and approaching Mr. Crow with large steps.

"So many?" Mr. Crow screamed, "Caw! Help!"

Countless Gold Crows burst into shrill caws. Recklessly, they rubbed their fists and attempted to rush up together to defeat Priest Mu by taking advantage of the numbers.

From high up in the air, a beam of sword light silently descended. The heart of priest Mu, the real one, suddenly missed a beat. As he raised his head and looked at the sky, the sword light had already reached his head.

Puff! A large half of Priest Mu's long hair was cut off by this sudden sword attack. He paused briefly, gave a raging shout, then disappeared without a trace, along with all his clones.

Chapter 1510: Crow Warriors Sword Formation

A figure flashed across in midair. That was a priest with a fierce sense of power. Treading on a cold beam of light, he descended from the sky.

This priest looked exactly like Yu Yu, but his power sensed largely different from Yu Yu's, and he didn't have pupils. In his eyes, especially sharp sword lights had been interweaving, as metal clangs were faintly audible from his eye sockets.

Ji Hao had already gained a pretty deep understanding of Yu Yu's art of Dao. He knew that this priest must be one of Yu Yu's three clones. Judging by the fierce sword intent of his, he must be a clone created based upon Yu Yu's supreme art of sword.

Treading on a fiery cloud, Ji Hao came to this priest. He kneeled and kowtowed, then greeted him, "Shifu."

The priest held a water-like clear transparent sword. From his pair of eyes, beams of sword light suddenly shone to feet away as he growled, "What a shameless old wood! He attacked a junior with his real body, real power. He fled fast, otherwise, I would cut through his face to see how thick his skin is!"

Squeezing a faint smile out of his frosty, stiff face, he reached out his hand. A strong invisible force helped Ji Hao stand back up from the ground. With satisfaction, he nodded at Ji Hao, looked at him from head to toe, then turned around and bowed slightly to Mr. Crow's staff.

"Fuso, my friend, you are in a good mood!" He still sounded frostily cold. His frigid voice sounded like a pair of sharpest swords clanging emotionlessly against each other, bringing everyone on the scene a sharp pain from their ears.

"Yu Yu my friend, it's been a long time." Above the Fuso staff, a

hazy Fuso tree emerged, while Fuso tree's rumbling voice echoed through the hearts of everyone, "Last time I saw you, you brought Priest Po to me and asked for a few of my branches to forge swords. Did you make a good treasure?"

Yu Yu nodded and said, "A set of pure sun Fuso sword, includes nine swords, still buried in the earth meridians of my Palace of Dao and being nourished. My friend, since you've decided to come back to the mortal world, please, take a good care of this young disciple of mine."

Fuso tree chuckled, but didn't say another word. The hazy tree merged back into the staff.

Yu Yu nodded, then turned around and looked at the Pan Gu sword held in Ji Hao's hands, said slowly, "This is a good sword, truly good sword, a top-grade divine piece. But, it's new and hasn't grown a spirit. Alright, today I will make it complete."

Holding his transparent longsword, Yu Yu swept across his own palm with the sword. Following a clear popping noise, his palm was cut broken. Especially sharp and pure sword lights erupted from his palm, transforming into countless swiftly hovering spell symbols, which all merged into the Pan Gu sword.

Ji Hao saw clearly that these spell symbols were composed of the secrets of Yu Yu's sword art. Yu Yu's supreme sword art was forcibly compressed into spell symbols by this clone of his and imprinted in the Pan Gu sword.

The Pan Gu sword quaked slightly. At first, it let out a faintly audible, weak buzz. Afterward, it buzzed brighter and brighter, louder and louder. By the end, the sword buzzed so shrilly that even the starry void was shaken intensely. Waves of visible, transparent ripples spread in all directions, making the nearest tens of natural stars sparkle, as if they were frightened. Even the orbits of these stars changed slightly, as though they were trying to dodge the supreme sword intent released from the Pan Gu sword.

Ji Hao felt that the Pan Gu sword became 'smarter and smarter', that it seemed to fly up into the sky and kill an enemy all by itself. By now, this sword was already like a sword master with the best cultivation. Any slight, random movement made by it could become a flawless, unstoppable sword attack.

The Pan Gu sword suddenly came alive. It was like an enormous Chaos monster which had sunken in a deep sleep for countless years, without a soul, but suddenly woke up. It now had its own instincts and independent mind. It was impatient, so eager to drink the fresh blood of a prey.

An incredibly fierce sword intent, that even gave Ji Hao a piercing pain from his palm, burst from the Pan Gu sword. Ji Hao sensed the aggressive sword intent and sensed the pain even while being the owner of this sword. Mr. Crow and the other Gold Crow elders, who stood around Ji Hao, had drawn back to over a thousand miles away long ago, because they could not bear the fierce sword intent. If they came slightly closer to the sword, their souls would be torn apart by the sword intent.

"About there! Nourish it moment by moment with your embryo of Dao. In the future, releasing the sword light from your mouth and killing an enemy a million miles away won't be a difficult thing." Yu Yu nodded in satisfaction, then glanced at the giant group of Gold Crows, who had been cawing from a distance away.

"Gold Crows? With such a pure Gold Crow bloodline? Fuso my friend has indeed made great efforts this time...It seems that he never forgot the death of East Emperor Taiyi." Yu Yu gave a faint smile and said to Ji Hao, "These are your guards of Dao too, aren't they? They are talented, but their foundations are slightly weak. I have a pure sun sword formation. Here, train them with this."

Yu Yu gently flicked the cyan-colored, transparent longsword held in his hand. Following the buzzing noise, countless extremely thin cyan-colored beams of sword light dazzled from the sword. Accurately, a sword light beam landed on the spot between each

Gold Crow's eyebrows. Simultaneously, all Gold Crows raised their heads and spread their golden wings. From their bodies, a suffocating, fierce power started to be released.

Within a second, a powerful, highly lethal sword formation was imprinted in the deepest area of these sword warriors' souls, as if they had been trained in it for countless years. Yu Yu was indeed immeasurably powerful, and was truly generous to Ji Hao.

"Now, you have a sword formation, and the warriors to compose it, but still need the swords to match it." Yu Yu chuckled with an emotionless voice, then nodded to Mr. Crow's staff, and said, "Fuso my friend, this time, let's do it together, shall we?"

Boom! The Fuso staff shifted back into the enormous tree shape. As countless giant branches waved, Fuso tree's voice rumbled, "Just take these branches. Hmm, large amounts of sun crystals had accumulated in the sun world. Among those, one-hundred-million years old essence crystals are perfect for forging swords."

Along with a series of cracking noise, hundreds of giant branches fell off from Fuso tree. Following creaking sounds, these branches fell apart and transformed into one-foot and two-inches-long golden wooden swords, darting all over the ground.

Yu Yu took a deep breath and waved his hands towards the sun world. A million-miles-long sun crystal continent was dragged directly out of the sun world by him.

He pointed out his right forefinger. Following his move, the tremendous continent disintegrated and transformed into extremely pure strands of essence sun fire, flying across the sky and flowing into the wooden swords made by Fuso tree. A squeaky noise could be heard, following which, Yu Yu condensed the essence sun fire into countless complicated sword spell symbols, imprinting on each wooden sword. Before long, a weak sword intent could be sensed from every wooden sword, while the wooden swords turned transparent and glistening like crystals.

Joint-handedly, Yu Yu and Fuso tree spent a whole month and crafted countless golden flying swords; each Gold Crow warrior had one.

Finishing with the swords, Yu Yu gave Ji Hao a few more words, especially warning him to stay vigilant against Priest Hua and Priest Mu, then drifted away and returned to the Chaos.

With a billion Gold Crow warriors raising a sky-devouring fire, Ji Hao headed back to the heaven with a formidable army.

Chapter 1511: Priest Hua's Destiny

When Priest Mu blocked Ji Hao's way and questioned Fuso tree in the starry void, in a desolated area in Western Wasteland, in the peaceful world created by Priest Hua and Priest Mu, Priest Hua was sitting under a linden tree with his legs crossed. Suddenly, he opened his eyes. A dim, seven-colored light flashed across his eyes.

"Who is waiting out there?" Abruptly, he asked with a low voice.

A priest silently walked over from behind a linden tree. His hair were coiled into a pair of buns on his head, each bun having a tiny red flower binding on it. He had white skin and a pretty face, walking airily and unhurriedly, without making any noise.

Politely, he kneeled and kowtowed to Priest Mu, then asked reverently, "Shifu, how can I help?"

Priest Mu's mouth corners curved slightly upwards. He took out a tiny, exquisite, thirteen storey tower, which was inlaid with pearls, from his sleeve, and handed to the priest while saying, "Miao Xiang, your elder uncle went to the starry void for something important. I should be cooperating with him from here. At the moment, how many disciples of ours are here?"

"Shifu, apart from the other few and me, Dragon, Lion, Tiger and Mammoth have just returned with a large number of new outer disciples. At the moment, the four brothers are busy giving lectures to the new disciples to strengthen their hearts of Dao." Miao Xiang took over the tower with a serious look and responded. He was a little surprised.

Priest Hua smiled and said, "Giving lectures? If they do nothing but sitting there and talking, everything they teach would be impractical, unreal. As per the great Dao of our sect, all cultivators should be brave. They should be pursuing progress, trying to sense the freedom of soul. Giving mere lectures? Useless, all useless."

Pointing at the pearl tower in Miao Xiang's hands, Priest Hua smiled again and continued, "Today, I will give the new outer disciples a chance to truly strengthen their heart of Dao and improve their powers. You, Dragon, Lion, Tiger and Mammoth, you take all new disciples to butcher the heaven for me."

"Butcher?" In shock, Miao Xiang looked at Priest Hua. He never thought that such a cruel word would actually come from Priest Hua.

"Eh? Do you disagree?" A seven-colored dim light flashed across Priest Hua's eyes. He suddenly pressed his finger between Miao Xiang's eyebrows and said, "Go, do a good job! Remember, the warriors of the heaven or our outer disciples, if they fall, bring back their souls with this tower.

A tremor went through Miao Xiang's body. Instantly, his eyebrows turned colorful. Giving a twisted grin, he bowed to Priest Hua and stood up from the ground, disappearing into the air while starting a faintly scented gust of wind.

After a quarter of an hour, leading Dragon, Lion, Tiger, and Mammoth mounted on their mounts and followed closely behind Miao Xiang, heading to the heaven. Tens of thousands of disciples under Priest Hua and Priest Mu' guidance surrounded them, holding differently colored flags for magic formations. Behind them, large groups of human warriors and non-humankind warriors they brought back from Liang Zhu City had been shouting Priest Hua and Priest Mu' names loudly.

In the boundless linden woods, Priest Hua suddenly burst into raging growl, and began struggling.

"Devil, what do you want?"

Priest Hua's eyes sparkled with the dim seven-colored light as he chuckled abruptly and responded to himself, "Priest Hua, my friend, you are me, and I am you now. Don't you want what I want? The creatures in Pan Gu world, their souls are so sweet, so

tasty. Every time we devour a soul, our power will raise largely."

"Once our disciples bring back enough souls, and once you have tasted the wonderful feeling delivered by your soaring cultivation, you will not refuse my kindness anymore." Priest Hua laughed with a hissing voice, "When we truly merge into one, we will devour Priest Mu. From then on, our Dao will be the only ruler of Pan Gu world!"

Roared, Priest Hua locked his fingers together, pressing heavily to the spot between his eyebrows. "Wishful thinking. Devil. I will certainly absorb you with my great power."

A brightly glowing, jade-like, purely white figure silently showed up behind Priest Hua. Thumb-sized white blooms had been drifting out of the figure, spreading an indescribably refreshing aroma in the linden woods.

"Great Freedom, is this your choice of prey? It's a true top-grade body, but it seems that you cannot make him surrender." The white figure giggled. His voice had constantly been changing, sometimes strong like the voice of a man, and sometimes soft like the voice a woman. "Do you need my help?"

"My prey is mine. Great Happiness, don't you stir a finger." The dim colorful light shining in Priest Hua's eyes grew brighter and brighter, "Indeed, I cannot make him surrender, but it won't be easy for him to absorb me either. Later, his brother will return, and help him suppress me. You can take your chance and make your move."

The white figure nodded, then gave a faint smile and said, "Alright, I had just destroyed a great world thirty-thousand years ago. Based on the infinite corrupt happiness of the local creatures in that world, I created a new magic called 'great happiness soul-falling blade'. Great, I'd like to know how many blade strikes from me that so-called Priest Mu can take."

Great Happiness laughed hissingly in excitement and continued,

"These years, I traveled across the world and found many interesting things. For example, a very powerful enemy is approaching this world...An especially strong prey is arriving. I can't wait."

Both Great Freedom and Great Liberty laughed. Their weird laughter created an extremely strange atmosphere in the linden woods.

Abruptly, Great Happiness disappeared without a trace. Priest Hua opened his eyes. A puff of golden spot sprouted from his body and landed on the ground, turning into countless blooming golden lotuses. He bit his tongue heavily and boosted up his power to try to shout out loud, but all of a sudden, the seven-colored light shone in his eyes, and he lost the strength to shout.

A green figure flashed in. With an awfully bitter face, Priest Mu carried a wooden staff and slowly walked into the linden woods. He walked to Priest Hua and sat down, facing him with his legs crossed, then put the wooden staff on his knee. Holding a wisp of hair, he fixed his eyes on it.

"Brother, look, Yu Yu's sword art is even more masterly than before. Today, he sneakily attacked me, and I didn't even realize it until his sword light almost landed on me. With his art of sword and his sword formation, I'm afraid that we can't defeat him even if we act together." Priest Mu sorrowfully looked at his hair, without noticing the weird expression on Priest Hua's face.

"Actually, Yu Yu is nothing, is he?" With the seven-colored light sparkling in his eyes, Priest Mu chuckled, "My friend, only if you are willing to accept my kind, we can destroy Yu Yu so easily."

Priest Mu raised his head in shock. Seeing the dim colorful light in Priest Hua's eyes, he shouted out loud, "How can this happen? Devil, my brother had suppressed you completely earlier. How did you come out again? You are really bringing about your own destruction. I can not tolerate you any longer!"

Locking his fingers together, Priest Mu pressed his hands on Priest Hua's forehead.

Priest Hua laughed and locked his fingers as well, thudding his hands against Priest Mu's hands.

Great Happiness's purely white figure quietly emerged behind Priest Mu. He giggled, then suddenly transformed into a white stream of light, flashing to the back side of Priest Mu's head.

Chapter 1512: Proud Dragons, Arrogant Phoenixes

The rapidly flowing clouds calmed the fierce gale in the higher sky. Gusts of wind clashed against each other and generated waves of lightning bolts, but not a single bolt of lightning managed to approach the army under Miao Xiang's lead.

The pearl tower floated above his head. Countless tiny pearls inlaid on the tower released sharp beams of light, sweeping across the entire area. Strong gales, thunderbolts, sky fires... touched by the sharp lights, everything would disappear immediately.

Dragon, Lion, Tiger, and Mammoth sat on the backs of their mounts, looking around proudly. Seeing the great army behind them, their heroic spirit rose straight to the sky. They wished that they could march into the heaven right now and slaughter every single one under Ji Hao's command.

They hated Ji Hao. When they found out that Ji Hao was the new divine emperor chosen by the world, an endless jealousy grew in their hearts, aside from the hatred.

In terms of backgrounds, their sect was on equal footing with Ji Hao's sect, and their Shifu were as powerful as Ji Hao's Shifu. Therefore, Ji Hao was in no higher position than they were.

In terms of experience, Ji Hao was a young human being, who hadn't even completed his first century of cultivation. What about Dragon, Lion, Tiger, and Mammoth? They started their cultivations back in the prehistorical era; their powers were immeasurable. Regarding the age, the cultivation history, how could Ji Hao ever compare with them?

However, Ji Hao had become a divine emperor!

Thinking of the meaning of 'divine emperor', the jealousy grew in the hearts of Dragon, Lion, Tiger, and Mammoth as rapidly as

the growth of wild grasses. As a divine emperor, Ji Hao was now a ruler of the great Dao of nature, a supreme being in the whole world. Dragon, Lion, Tiger, and Mammoth had followed Priest Hua and Priest Mu for countless years, so they were clearly aware of the true meaning of 'divine emperor'.

A divine emperor was a difficult, dreadful target, that even Priest Mu and Priest Hua had to spend countless years to calculate and plan against to finally get...

"Shifu, forgive us!" Suddenly, Dragon, Lion, Tiger, and Mammoth each gave a deep shout. They glanced at each other and chuckled. They had been a team for centuries, and their minds were almost connected. They knew that they had been thinking about the same thing just now.

But that thing was unspeakable, unmentionable, even unthinkable.

"Ji Hao, where did that kid get the fortune to become a divine emperor?" shouted Dragon, "He had been troubling us back when he was still an ordinary human marquis. Now, he has become a divine emperor. Without a doubt, he'll be even more aggressive. Shifu told us to butcher the heaven, because we need to teach him a lesson.

Dragon, Lion, Tiger, and Mammoth laughed out loud together. Under Priest Hua's order, they didn't need to think about consequences. With a strong intent of killing, they hurried Miao Xiang to activate the pearl tower and speed up the clouds they trod on. In order to get to the heaven as soon as possible, they even largely consumed their own powers.

Outside the front gate of the heaven, a dragon commander and a phoenix commander were on patrol, along with hundreds of their elite warriors. The dragon warriors and phoenix warriors stood straight by the gate, vigilantly looking around with bright eyes

The two commanders squatted in a corner outside the gate, with

a large green jade bowl placed on the ground, in front of them. Three dices had been roiling and tinkling in the bowl, and large amounts of magic crystals and jades were piled beside the two commanders. They shouted and yelled, addicted to gambling.

Gradually, the smart phoenix commander took an advantage, having more and more crystals, jades, pearls, and other treasures piled around him. With a dark face, the dragon commander, who might have had nothing but muscles in his head, had been searching through his own body for more money. But, he failed to find anything to reverse the situation.

"Damnit! Something is wrong with this bowl!" Raising his head, the dragon commander smashed the large green jade bowl and yelled at the phoenix commander with a dark face, "I shouldn't have lost just now. The bowl has a problem. Hah! Let's start over, start over!"

While laughing, the dragon commander reached his hand towards the pile of crystals and jades beside the phoenix commander.

The phoenix commander glare at him and shouted, "Bullsh*t! These are already mine. How can you take them back? Ao Chun, I've heard that you were a scum long ago, but it turns out you're even worse!"

Ao Chun pointed his finger at the phoenix commander and shouted out loud in excitement, "Hah, Feng Yang, you swore! You won my money, yet you swore! Damnit! I can't let you take such a big advantage of me. Give me the money back, give it back!"

Ao Chun moved swiftly. He gripped Feng Yang's neck and conveniently pressed him down on the ground, disabling him from moving. Meanwhile, his right hand expanded to feet long, grabbing a handful of pearls and crystals from the ground and sending them to the bag tied around his waist.

In terms of physical strength, how could Feng Yang be Ao Chun's

opponent? He was pressed on the ground without being able to move. He struggled, but the only result was a great pain from his neck that nearly suffocated him. In rage, Feng Yang burst into roars to his warriors, "Are you all dead? Beat, beat him! Break this bloody long worm's head!"

Nearly a hundred phoenix-kind warriors were on patrol by the front gate of the heaven, including about ten golden wing rocs, twenty peacocks, and thirty ancient Zhen birds. All these warriors were brave, fierce, and combative. Watching their leader falling into a disadvantage, they pulled out their weapons without saying a word and marched towards Ao Chun.

Ao Chun also had nearly a hundred elite warriors under his command, included ten mix-blood dragons, twenty blood food dragons, and the rest being violent water-kind creatures like tiger sharks. Seeing the phoenix-kind warriors making their move, these dragon-kind warriors showed no sign of weakness. They leaped up and raised their weapons high. Along with a series of metal clangs, the two squads started an intense fight by the front gate of the heaven.

The moment they started fighting, Ao Chun and Feng Yang both began yelling and shouting. Following their voices, the front gate opened rumblingly. From the gate, large groups of dragon-kind warriors and phoenix-kind warriors rushed out. Seeing their people 'getting beaten', these proud warriors immediately joined the fight without asking who was right and who was wrong.

The battle was intensive. Within merely ten minutes, over a thousand warriors fell to the ground with bleeding heads. Many of them had broken bones, and some were injured even worse. They vomited blood, and couldn't even maintain their human shapes. While howling, these badly injured warriors showed their original shapes as they struggled on the ground.

At the moment, over a hundred severely injured sharks, tiger whales, octopuses, and turtles lied on the ground by the front gate

of the heaven, right beside about a hundred giant birds, that were all covered in blood.

Ao Chun and Feng Yang were stunned. For some insignificant wager, they started such a big fight. Even though they had always been proud and willful, now they clearly understood that they couldn't act as arrogantly and aggressively as they were back in their families anymore. After all, they now belonged to the heaven, and one scary thing existed in the heaven, called 'divine rules'!

According to the legends, no matter how noble one was, one would beg for death once he or she violated a divine rule!

Together, they ordered their warriors to stop. Under their orders, the warriors from both sides, who had been fighting passionately against each other, put down their weapons and stood still, not knowing what to do.

A strong gale brought dense clouds, from which, sharp beams of light dazzled. Miao Xiang, Dragon, Tiger, Lion, Mammoth, and a large batch of warriors broke the space and arrived.

People from the dragon-kind and the phoenix-kind, who had started a big fight by the gate of the heaven, paused in shock, and so did Dragon, Tiger, Lion, Mammoth. They hadn't done anything yet, but why were they fighting against themselves already?

"Evils invaded! Brothers! Pick up your weapons and chop them!" Ao Chun blinked his eyes and suddenly burst into a roar. Feng Yang's eyes shone while he hurriedly gave a growl, commanding his warriors to rush up.

Chapter 1513: Release Their Full Power

Dragons and phoenixes were born as enemies.

Dragons inherited Saint Pan Gu's strong body. So, no ordinary weapons or magic could easily harm their bodies, while their sharp claws and teeth made them the most terrifying killing machines in the world. They were known as the most powerful creatures in Pan Gu world.

Phoenixes inherited Saint Pan Gu's powerful soul. Their powers were mysterious and immeasurable, allowing them to control the world. They were born as mysterious magic users. Their magic could move the mountains, shatter the stars, and create oceans, that made them the rivals of dragons.

Dragons were wild and arrogant, while phoenixes were proud and reserved. Normally, they never liked each other, nor took each other seriously. They both claimed themselves to be the true descendants of Saint Pan Gu. However, for this exact reason, any living being who dared to challenge their noble, inviolable status, would suffer a joint beating from both the dragon-kind and the phoenix-kind, just like the army under the leadership of Dragon, Tiger, Lion, and Mammoth.

Tens of violent dragons roared resonantly and showed their true shapes. They lowered their heads and pointed their sharp horns at the enemies, lunging swiftly. They swayed their enormous heads, their beards shaking like daggers and swords. Following shrill swishing noise, tens of bloody paths were opened up in the army led by Dragon, Tiger, Lion, and Mammoth.

Wherever these violent dragons reached, countless enemies were torn apart by their horns. With their beards, they cut up all armors; with their sharp teeth, they chewed everyone who dared to stand in front of them, and with their strong scales, they crushed all who had the courage to approach them.

The tens of miles long dragon claws were even more terrifying. Those claws were incomparably sharp, wielding fiercely in the sky. Once a dragon claw pressed down on the army, a miles wide cloud of blood mist would be raised.

Occasionally, some powerful beings under Dragon, Tiger, Lion, Mammoth's guidance would rush up and ferociously attack these violent dragons. But, the dragons needed no more than a flip of their tails to break the bones of these Senior Magi, Magus Kings, and even Divine Magi, sending them flying away.

The dragons howled and created hundreds of miles long bloody paths in the army. In their way, at least one-hundred elite human or non-humankind warriors died under their claws and teeth, and a million were injured.

Body parts flew all over the sky. Injured human warriors difficultly drew back and hurriedly activated their spirit blood to heal themselves. The moment the fight started, the army under Dragon, Tiger, Lion, and Mammoth's lead was shaken by tens of dragons.

Ao Chun roared in excitement. He crushed a priest with his head, then yelled hoarsely, "Girls from the phoenix-kind, watch this, the power of our dragon-kind! We are the true descendants of Pan Gu! We fight like Saint Pan Gu! Back then, fighting like this, Saint Pan Gu slaughtered hundreds of millions of Chaos monsters!"

Suddenly, the sky was illuminated. Tens of pure-blood phoenixes joined hands and cast a magic called 'phoenix fire rain', which descended from the sky.

Water-tank-sized, crimson fireballs fell from the sky. The fire was pure and dense, without any heat, silently falling into the army led by Dragon, Tiger, Lion, and Mammoth. The fireballs exploded, setting hundreds of thousands of warriors on fire.

The fire's name was 'red lotus fire of sin'. If one had a pure, flawless mind, the fire wouldn't harm them. But, if any sinister

desire or emotion occurred in one's mind, it would become the fuel of the fire, and the fire would burn ragingly on one's body.

Countless warriors screamed as they twitched and struggled in the fire, but soon quieted down. Their bodies were incinerated, and their souls perished.

Feng Yang proudly raised his head. Holding a red wooden staff, which was even longer than his body, he said with pride, "This is the power of our phoenix-kind. We are no weaker than you dragon-kind! We are the true descendants of Saint Pan Gu. Saint Pan Gu slaughtered hundreds of millions of Chaos monsters, but did he truly do that by hacking every enemy with his axe?"

The tens of pure-blood phoenixes raised their heads. Their faces slightly twisted, as they were picturing Saint Pan Gu fighting against hundreds of millions of chaos monsters when he created Pan Gu world but all Chaos monsters invaded this new world and attempted to steal it.

Saint Pan Gu was such a powerful being. How could he be rude enough to hack all Chaos monsters to death one by one with his axe?

Without a doubt, he cast a mighty magic and wiped out all enemies in the surrounding ten-thousand miles wide area. The super magic used by Saint Pan Gu, how splendid, how beautiful!

Feng Yang and the other phoenixes moaned slightly. Merely by imagining the magnificent magic cast by Saint Pan Gu, their narcissism nearly brought them to an orgasm.

"Bloody sissy!" Hearing the strange moaning from Feng Yan and the other phoenixes, the group of dragon warriors spat to the ground, then turned around, shaking their heads and preparing to start the second round of massacre.

This time, they had to kill more enemies to win against those pretty phoenix boys, to let them know that pure violence and

strong bodies was the only fighting style of men. Casting a magic behind brave warriors? Only girls would do that!

Dagon, Tiger, Lion, and Mammoth almost exploded in anger!

They worked so hard to recruit these believers from the mines belonging to Yu Dynasty from the non-humankind. They saw a dragon horn penetrate the stomach of Si Gui, who was the strongest human warrior from Tusk Basin. They saw a dragon beard cut the chest of Piji Wuyue, who was smart and capable. They saw a great number of trustworthy disciples of theirs fall on the ground, injured badly.

However, these were all done by merely tens of dragons and tens of phoenixes!

It was said that currently, the heaven had six-hundred-thousand pure-blood dragons and three-hundred-thousand pure-blood phoenixes like these!

Miao Xiang's eyes sparkled with a seven-colored light. He raised the pearl tower to absorb the souls of all fallen warriors from the battleground while shouting, "Brothers...The heaven has a new ruler now. Why should we still be restrained by the agreement signed on top of Sky Pillar back then? Our Shifu ordered us to slaughter all living creatures in the heaven. Brothers, under our Shifu's permission, you can do it with no worries!"

Dagon, Tiger, Lion, and Mammoth glanced at each other, hesitating for a while. Then, Mammoth laughed abruptly and said, "Brother Miao Xiang is right. The heaven has a new ruler now, and that agreement...hehe... Besides, Sky Pillar has gone, so why should we still mind the agreement?"

Raising his hand, Mammoth slapped heavily on his head and continued, "Back then, the powerful beings in this world jointly signed the agreement. According to the agreement, they wouldn't allow their disciples to interfere in any affair regarding the great Dao of Pan Gu world. Hah, back then, we sealed ninety-nine

percent of our powers...All these years, we sealed our powers and took an opportunity to learn the great Dao of quietus. Today, let's do what we can!"

Followed by a thunderous boom, a terrifying power erupted from his body.

A suffocating power vibration pressed down on the heart of everyone on the scene. Struck by the power vibration, Ao Chun, Feng Yang and the others quivered, then began vomiting blood simultaneously!

They stared at Mammoth as if he were a ghost. Miao Xiang and the other three had slapped on their heads too.

Sky-shaking power vibrations were released, which even violently vibrated the front gate and a small half of heaven.

Chapter 1514: The God of Rain

An indescribable fear spread in Ao Chun's heart. Suddenly, he screamed out loud, "Retreat! Draw back to the heaven! Compose a formation against the enemy!"

Dragon smiled, as a golden beam of light rose from his head, within the light. A four-faced, eight-armed figure was laughing wildly on a hassock, which was condensed from the red lotus fire of sin. The figure was holding a bell, a tower, and six other treasures.

Ao Chun and the other tens of dragons shrank their bodies to the shape of human beings, with their heads remaining in the shapes of dragons, rushing to the front gate of heaven.

Dragon raised an arm which carried a pestle, and smashed down fiercely, generating a thunderous bang as he broke the horns and head of a dragon near Ao Chun. The dragon's brain splashed in the air, while his thick scales were shattered and bones were broken. With one single strike, Dragon killed this dragon.

"Damn!" Ao Chun's eye corners twitched. Glancing at the dead dragon who was beaten to death by Dragon with one strike, Ao Chun shook his head. Fortunately, fortunately, that dead dragon was a distant relative instead of a close descendant of the Dragon Emperor. Therefore, Ao Chun didn't feel much of sadness for him.

"Run faster! Run! Don't you even know how to run?! Hurry! Hurry! Hurry!"

While Ao Chun was hurrying his warriors, behind him, a three-faced and six-armed golden figure floating above Tiger's head gave a resonant roar and leaped straight to Ao Chun. The hundreds of meters tall figure reached out its right hand and gripped Ao Chun. Following the shrill howls from countless dragons and phoenixes, Ao Chun was crushed instantly.

"Heaven!" Watching this, all dragons and phoenixes screamed. Ao Chun was a close descendant of the Dragon Emperor, and had the purest dragon god bloodline. He was incredibly strong, such that not even a holy weapon could leave a scratch on his skin.

However, in Tiger's hand, Ao Chun's unbreakable body was squashed like a ball of mud. Tiger's power was unbelievable — These proud dragons and phoenixes hadn't seen such a scary living being all their lives.

How could such a powerful being even exist in Pan Gu world? They couldn't even imagine that.

At first, they had all sensed a strong pressure from Miao Xiang and the four, but not as unstoppable as what they were sensing now. The power vibration released from Miao Xiang and the four pressed on everyone's heart like a natural disaster, that took away all the courage of these dragons and phoenixes. They even dared not to fight back!

Did these people mention an agreement signed on top of Sky Pillar? What agreement? These dragons and phoenixes hadn't even heard of it!

"Ao Chun! You useless idiot! Brothers, retreat, retreat, retreat now!"

Nearly a hundred phoenixes led thousands of elite warriors and turned around, walking right away. Facing the intimidating being who squashed Ao Chun, not even the most bloodthirsty golden wing roc and devil peacock dared to confront him. These terrifying enemies should better be handled with the heaven and earth great formation.

"Kill them all!" Miao Xiang's eyes sparkled with a bright seven-colored light. An overwhelming, strong power spread from his body. He raised the pearl tower with his left hand and sent a strand of his power into it. All tiny pearls inlaid in the tower emitted sharp light beams simultaneously. The dazzling light swirled out of

the tower like whirlwinds, drilling into the dragon and phoenix troops.

Shrill howls could be heard without an end. The dazzling light beams swept across the bodies of thousands of water-kind and flying warriors. Their well-nourished, especially strong bodies were cut open as easily as pieces of tofu. The blood splashed on the gate of the heaven, with body parts rolling all over the ground. Bloody souls were trapped by an invisible force from the pearl tower, screaming while they were sucked into the tower instantly.

"Dragons and phoenixes, do you really think that you're the owners of Pan Gu world?" Dragon laughed with a twisted voice and said, "Young dragons, young phoenixes, you have no idea that back in the ancient era, you were indeed strong, but in our eyes, you were no more than top-grade materials for treasure-making!"

The group of priests laughed out wildly. The sense of power released from their bodies had become strangely frightening. They stared at Feng Yang and the others like wild beasts staring at their targets. With giant steps, they led countless human and non-humankind warriors to march to the front gate of heaven.

Some warriors from the dragon-kind and the phoenix kind who fled fast rushed into the gate, while the others, who didn't manage to run back into the heaven, were all killed by the pearl tower held in Miao Xiang's hand. Their souls were all drawn into the tower.

Seeing Miao Xiang collecting souls, Dragon, Tiger, Lion, and Mammoth were confused. Their sect was a decent one, not like those evil cults which focused on all kinds of dark magics. Therefore, souls were useless to them. However, that pearl tower was indeed a treasure that belonged Priest Hua, a great pre-world spirit treasure. As they recognized the power, surely, they wouldn't say anything about Miao Xiang' s behavior.

Four hundreds of meters tall golden giants created by the four aggressively rushed to the front gate of heaven, surrounded by

surging waves of power. A few dragons were roaring. With a group of strong water-kind creatures such as deep sea dragon whale, deep ocean devil octopus, they tried their best to shut the gate. However, before the gate was shut, Mammoth's golden giant had already bumped against the front gate while carrying a giant golden pestle.

Boom! The front gate of heaven was opened. The few dragons and their warriors who had been shutting the gate had their arms crushed. Vomiting blood, they were sent flying backward.

A series of alarm bells echoed through the clouds. Near the front gate, archways, palaces, mansions, towers, and other buildings shone with blinding lights and burned with raging fires simultaneously. Above these buildings, hazy stars flashed across the sky.

"Whoo-hah!" Growling in ordered lines, dragon warriors and phoenix warriors filled up the path behind the gate. Ferocious dragons and fierce phoenixes roared shrilly and thunderously. Under their commands, their warriors arrayed on the ground and in the sky, layer by layer.

Dragon, Lion, Tiger, and Mammoth couldn't help but pause. This army in front of them was way too tremendous, especially the tens of dragon kings and phoenix masters that blocked their way with dark faces. Both the dragon-kind and the phoenix-kind were especially rich. More or less, these dragon kings and phoenix masters had the power of pre-world spirit treasures spreading from their bodies. Dragon, Lion, Tiger, and Mammoth were proud of their strong powers, but still, they dared not to rush in directly.

Holding the pearl tower, Priest Miao Xiang shouted, "Four brothers, what are you waiting for? Brothers, let's do it together! Let Ji Hao know that there is a consequence of offending our sect!"

The four burst into roars. Behind them, the four hundreds of meters tall golden giants prepared to lunge.

At that moment, with a mild smile on his face, Yu Mu tried his best to open his beady eyes wider as he showed up suddenly before the army of dragons and phoenixes.

Facing the four golden giants, Yu Mu patted his own belly and said, "No, no! Ji Hao isn't here. We have to guard his place well. Hmm, what do I do as the God of rain?"

Yu Mu narrowed his eyes and gently wielded his hand. All of a sudden, a drizzle fell from the sky.

The soft raindrops landed on the bodies of the four and the human or non-humankind warriors behind them. As sharp as a blade, they silently cut their armors, penetrated their bodies, and shredded them.

Within the span of a breath, the gentle raindrops of Yu Mu wiped out at least a million warriors.

Chapter 1515: The Great Battle

"Damnable mortal man!" Dragon, Tiger, Lion, and Mammoth roared in rage. Watching the raindrops shredding their disciples, they sensed an actual pain.

Those disciples slaughtered by the rain, human or non-humankind, were all elites, true elites. They were full of admiration and piousness towards Priest Mu and Priest Hua, to their sect, and they were strong. These people were real elite disciples.

For all kinds of reasons, Priest Hua and Priest Mu chose Western Wasteland as the base of their sect. Western Wasteland was poor, scarcely populated. People in Western Wasteland were mostly wild warriors with muscles in their heads, but without much talent for cultivation.

Human slaves saved by Dragon, Tiger, Lion, and Mammoth from the mines in Liang Zhu City, and the non-humankind nobles who chose to join the sect were all strong-minded and smart, gifted for cultivation. They were the seeds of the sect, they were the future. The sect could afford to lose one or two of them, but over a million? That was like a stab in the heart.

"Damnable mortal man!" The four burst into another roar. They glared at Yu Mu, showering under the highly lethal drizzle falling from the sky, approaching Yu Mu with large steps.

They despised Yu Mu. Before Ji Hao appointed him as a divine god, Yu Mu was indeed a mortal being who looked like a giant meatball. Dragon, Tiger, Lion, and Mammoth didn't even want to take a glance at him, as if his fat would ooze out and stain their eyes.

Nevertheless, this bloody fatso, who just had a skyrocketing rise, actually killed so many of their elite disciples right in front of them with his divine power. Dragon, Tiger, Lion, Mammoth growled

like beasts, launched offensives to Yu Mu with all their powers.

Dragon didn't forget to turn around and tell Miao Xiang, "Brother Miao Xiang, shield the other disciples, and watch us kill this man."

Miao Xiang smiled faintly. Controlling the pearl tower, he released countless sharp light beams that wove into a giant glowing web, covering countless disciples behind him. But in fact, the light he released from the tower only protected himself. As for the other disciples, they were still being slaughtered by the drizzle.

"Souls, so many souls! Shifu's order, slaughter the heaven and collect souls!" Miao Xiang's eyes sparkled quickly with the seven-colored light. He cast his strangely greedy eyes on Dragon, Tiger, Lion, and Mammoth. The golden giants they created were so powerful. If their souls could be harvested, Priest Hua would be surprised, wouldn't he?

Dragon wielded his pestle and smashed violently on Yu Mu.

Yu Mu chuckled. Standing on the path leading to the heaven, endless divine power surged into his body from all directions. Under his will, a pure and clear water shield emerged above his head which defended him. Followed Dragon's growl, a raging fire rose from the pestle. The heavy strike he launched nearly shattered the space above Yu Mu's head.

The thin water shield remained motionless. This full strike launched by Dragon failed to deliver any effect to Yu Mu. Instead, the water shield took all the impact force, then distributed it evenly to the entire heaven.

This strike from Dragon was heavy enough to crush natural stars, but when distributed to the vast heaven, which was thickly covered in natural defensive seals, it became like a gentle slap to the ground made by an infant, that not even a grain of dust could be stirred.

Yu Mu's eyes shone with a dim blue light as he flicked his fingers.

Following a series of 'dong, dong' noise, fist-sized water bombs flew out and landed violently on the golden giants created by Dragon, Tiger, Lion, and Mammoth.

The four golden giants, which glowed splendidly, and were wearing all kinds of jewels, quivered intensively. They were actually forced backward quickly by Yu Mu's water bombs, barely steadying their bodies.

Yu Mu was far weaker than the four. However, he was a divine god appointed by the divine emperor himself. Standing in the heaven, he was supported by the divine power from the entire heaven, and protected by the will of Pan Gu world.

He was the God of rain, responsible for all the rainfall in the mortal world. As the God of rain, he now had the power of the great Dao of rain and great Dao of water. Even if he were a weak ordinary human being before he was appointed, by now, he could activate the power of the great Dao with a thought, and generate a terrifying power.

At the moment, the one attacking Dragon, Tiger, Lion, and Mammoth wasn't Yu Mu. Instead, it was the will of nature, the natural law that Yu Mu represented.

Divine gods, they were 'inhuman'. They had the powers of the world, and they enforced justice on behalf of heaven.

Dragon, Tiger, Lion, and Mammoth were unimaginably powerful. They had been forced back by Yu Mu's water bombs, but the water bombs didn't manage to do them any actual harm, other than leaving some marks on their bodies.

But still, they were soon forced out of the front gate, and were infuriated. With blushed faces, they stared at Yu Mu and roared at him. Yu Mu hadn't even lived his first century, while they were powerful beings, famous since the prehistorical era. Falling in a disadvantage in front of Yu Mu? They truly couldn't endure the humiliation.

Dragon shouted out loud. Once again, he slapped on his own forehead. A beam of blood-red light shone from his head, forming a blood-red cloud above his head. Within the cloud, a blood-red dragon with clearly visible scales hovered, bursting into thunderous roars from time to time.

Behind this blood-red dragon, the silhouettes of tens of thousands of dragons were faintly visible, hovering in the air. An immense energy wave stirred the sky, forcing the drizzle to stop falling.

Behind Yu Mu, countless dragons roared in rage. A few bad-tempered dragon kings even pulled out their weapons in fury and marched towards Dragon.

The blood-red dragon hovering above Dragon's head was composed of the spirit blood and souls of countless dragons. Based on a rough calculation, at least seventy-thousand dragons had died in his hands and become a part of this scary blood-red dragon.

Tens of thousands of dragons... Even though this was accumulated by Dragon slowly, year after year in his long span of life, but the number was way too shocking! Even if he might have sneakily killed no more than one dragon in three to five hundreds of years, anyhow, he had taken the lives of tens of thousands of dragons. All dragons on the scene were outraged, such that their eyes instantly turned red.

"The wind!" Feng Xing walked out from behind Yu Mu. Holding the Yu bow, he looked at the sky and gave a loud and clear shout.

A strong gust of wind was raised, blowing the raindrops in the sky. Feng Xing was the god of wind, while Yu Mu was the God of rain; together, the wind and the rain. The corresponding natural law was activated. The raindrops in the air suddenly changed shape. Under the effect of Feng Xing's divine power, the raindrops all turned into tiny, sharp arrows.

Along with a shrill noise, countless arrows flew to Dragon, Lion,

Tiger, Mammoth, and their disciples, even covering the sky.

Blood splashed in the air. Countless warriors made the last howl before they were torn apart.

Miao Xiang stepped backward with a faint smile, as Dragon, Lion, Tiger, and Mammoth stamped with fury. Shouting thunderously, they rushed up to the dragon army, which had also burst into roars.

The blood-red dragon gave a roar and released a blood-red flame from its mouth. Seven to eight dragon kings and hundreds of dragon generals at the front were sent flying away by the blood-red fire, vomiting blood. Two dragon kings were even directly evaporated, disappearing without a trace.

Chapter 1516: Seek Their Dooms

The rain of arrows had been killing the elite disciples brought by Dragon, Lion, Tiger, and Mammoth, swiftly and efficiently. Blood flowed rapidly on the stairs before the front gate of heaven in huge streams, while body parts fell down the stairs along with it. A blood-red rain dyed thousands of mountains in Pan Gu Motherland red.

Above Dragon's head, the hazy blood-red dragon roared to the sky, letting out blood-red flames. The flame was highly harmful to dragons, facing which, the strong bodies and thriving life-force of pure-blood dragons seemed to not even exist. Swept across by the blood-red flame, some dragons were entirely incinerated, thousands had their limbs burned out, howled in pain, drew back as quickly as possible.

Lion, Tiger, and Mammoth had all been trying their best too. Their unimaginable powers provided them with an incredibly high battle efficiency, which allowed them to kill or hurt a giant number of warriors from the dragon-kind. By launching one strike, they could kill or injure hundreds, even more than a thousand elite warriors.

The four golden giants created by them had been darting around, wielding their weapons. Showering under the arrow rain created by Feng Xing and Yu Mu, they remained perfectly unharmed. They swished through the air and swung their weapons fiercely, sending up countless body pieces and large streams of blood, splashing and flowing like waves

Both sides had been suffering a greater and greater loss, because of which, the intent of killing grew stronger constantly in everyone's heart. On the battlefield, people had all been trying their best, casting their most powerful secret magic to try killing each other.

During the tangled battle, Feng abruptly and sneakily pulled open his Yi bow, aimed at Tiger, who was the nearest one among the four. Along with a slight buzzing noise, an arrow flashed across the air at lightning speed and suddenly reached Tiger's face.

Tiger hurriedly gave a growl and raised a wooden staff with both hands to shield himself. He was swift enough, but Feng Xing's arrow was way faster. The arrow, which was condensed from a cyan-colored gust of wind, sparkled and sank deep into Tiger's left eye. It subsequently penetrated his head and came out from the back of his head.

Tiger screamed hoarsely in pain. He waved the wooden staff and sent two dragon kings who pounced on him flying away, then took out a thumb-sized golden pill with difficulty and put it into his wound.

A strand of mist rose while a beautiful golden lotus bloomed from his wound. The golden petals started falling off one after another. When the last petal fell, Tiger's wound recovered completely, and a new eyeball had grown.

"Little b*stard!" Forgetting about his manners, Tiger cursed Feng Xing, who hurt him with a nearly invisible arrow. He dropped his wooden staff and approached Feng Xing with giant steps. Wielding his arm in the air, a large sawtooth blade with a twisted shape was pulled out by him from the air. As he swung the blade, a black beam of light flashed across, cutting tens of strong water-kind warriors near him into pieces.

Looking at Tiger, Feng Xing gripped the Yi bow and stomped it heavily against the ground.

The heaven quaked slightly. On both sides of the path, tens of towers and tall buildings shone with splendid lights. An especially thick light stream descended from the air and landed on the bodies of all warriors from the dragon-kind and phoenix-kind, forming into dazzling armors. Meanwhile, under the light screen, Dragon,

Lion, Tiger, Mammoth, and all their disciples felt a thousand mountains had just been laid on their bodies, making their movements extremely difficult.

The entire heaven was rejecting them. Around them, the gravity changed, becoming thousands, even tens of thousands of times stronger than the usual gravity of Pan Gu world. The abnormally strong gravity generated invisible, disordered force streams, tearing their bodies.

Dragon, Lion, Tiger, and Mammoth were well-cultivated, with amazing magic powers. However, they weren't like Divine Magi, and they didn't have strong bodies. A series of bone cracking noise could be heard from their bodies, which twisted strangely. All their bones were nearly shredded by the strong gravity.

Some of their disciples failed to withstand the violent, disordered gravity force streams, and were torn apart into thousands of bits.

At the moment, on the path behind the front gate of heaven, the battleground suddenly quieted down. Dragon, Lion, Tiger, and Mammoth managed to remain standing in the lethally high gravitational force with great efforts, while all disciples who followed them into the gate died.

Heavy and ordered footstep sounds came from long distances away. The troops guarding in different areas of the heaven had been gathering over.

Other than the army led by the dragon-kind and the phoenix-kind, countless divine commanders and warriors surrounded by golden raging flames also came to reinforce. Dragon-kind and phoenix-kind warriors were slightly panicked, while all divine commanders and warriors had already composed a powerful great formation which was passed down from the ancient heaven. A sky-shaking intent of killing covered Dragon, Lion, Tiger, and Mammoth immediately.

Standing outside the gate, Miao Xiang smiled faintly. Dazzling

light beams flowed on the pearl tower held in his hands. The light beams scanned across the bodies of a large number of disciples who didn't manage to rush into the gate, and in the following moment, they were all teleported into the gate.

"Follow Shifu's order, kill!" With the pearl tower, Miao Xiang sent over ten-million elite disciples into the heaven in an instant. Among all these disciples, fragile Yu Clan people were immediately torn apart by the extra strong gravity, while strong human and Jia Clan warriors managed to stand straight slowly under the effect of the twisted, scary gravity.

They did no more than standing straight. The strong gravity awfully slowed them down.

Without any preparation, they were thrown into the heaven by Miao Xiang, surrounded by warriors from the heaven. Before they could even raise their weapons, countless divine commanders and warriors had lunged their spears, coldly and mercilessly.

Along with a golden fire, long spears penetrated their bodies. Divine commanders and warriors roared thunderously, raised their spears, and sent these twitching disciples up, high into the sky.

Colorful thunderbolts descended from the sky, swallowing these disciples without making any noise. The thunderbolts detonated dazzlingly, turning these disciples and their armors into nothingness, without leaving even a grain of dust.

Yu Mu was patting his large belly, making his fat shake rhythmically. Looking at the light screen descending from the sky, he sighed, "Heaven, so powerful! Standing in heaven, who in the world can defeat us? It's strange though! The heaven is so powerful, but then how did the ancient heaven fall? The non-humankind...Were they truly strong enough to defeat the ancient heaven?"

Dragon, Tiger, Lion, and Mammoth activated their life-saving

treasures simultaneously, causing differently colored light to wrap up their bodies. They stopped attacking the heaven army, but turned around in panic and asked, "Brother Miao Xiang, what are you doing? Why did you send all those disciples in here? Didn't you make them die for nothing?"

Dragon yelled even louder, "Don't make any more reckless moves! Let us break their formation, then you send the other disciples in!

Miao Xiang smilingly nodded to the four, but in his hand, the pearl tower dazzled again and sent another ten million elite disciples into the heaven. Same as the last time, these disciples were dropped randomly, without an array.

Countless sharp spears lunged with golden flames. Once again, these disciples recruited by the four with years of efforts were mercilessly slaughtered by the heaven army.

Chapter 1517: Muffled Thunder

"Miao Xiang!" Watching another ten-million elite disciples die for nothing, Dragon, Tiger, Lion, and Mammoth felt like someone was cutting their hearts. Because of the heartache, they even temporarily lost their eyesight.

The other disciples, the ones under Priest Mu and Priest Hua' guidance, had also been looking at Miao Xiang in confusion. They all understood that Miao Xiang had a strong background.He was powerful, and absolutely trusted by Priest Hua. Among all disciples under Priest Hua and Priest Mu' direct guidance, Miao Xiang wasn't the most powerful one, but he was definitely the one trusted the most by Priest Hua.

Miao Xiang shouldn't be doing any harm to the sect. But right now, he was doing precisely that!

Blown by the strong wind, the arrow rain had still been falling quietly. The four were able to defend themselves against the arrow rain with their great powers, but Miao Xiang's behavior disturbed them. The light emitted from their bodies began shaking and sparkling, while they shambled back towards the outside.

They stared at Miao Xiang in confusion and cursed him, roaring in rage from time to time.

Western Wasteland had always been a territory of fierce ancient beasts, and the soil in there was especially barren. Therefore, recruiting capable disciples was exceptionally difficult in the Western Wasteland. The four started Lotus Altars in Yu Dynasty and recruited this huge number of elite warriors as their new disciple with years of severe efforts. These disciples were the future of the sect.

Nevertheless, as the pearl tower shone in Miao Xiang's hands, ten-million disciples, who were seeds of the sect, were sent into the death zone. The pearl tower shone two times, and sent over twenty

million elite disciples to die. This heavy loss even made the four want to cry.

"Miao Xiang, are you insane? What are you doing? Stop now! Shifu didn't give you this pearl tower to let you weaken the sect!" The four stepped out of the gate and surrounded Miao Xiang.

"Whoo!" Seeing an internal conflict starting among the enemies, under Feng Xing and Yu Mu' orders, all heaven warriors, including the ones led by dragons and phoenixes, and all divine commanders and warriors, burst into roars. They immediately occupied all buildings near the front gate, based on which, they composed an even stronger defense.

Divine light streams descended from the sky one after another, activating more and more natural defensive seals in the heaven. Surrounding the front gate, warm mist rose in clouds, glowing with splendid lights. The colorful lights shone on the bodies of everyone on the scene, making all these people look like crystal statues.

By now, the defense in this area had reached an unimaginable degree, that even the air was turned as strong as an iron wall. No enemy could easily take even one step into the heaven now.

The four didn't have the time to stop Feng Xing and Yu Mu from building the defense. Instead, they surrounded Miao Xiang and glared at him. Just now, when the pearl tower shone twice, they saw an enormous number of talented disciples sent into the death zone for nothing by Miao Xiang. They were going to bring those disciples under their own guidance. Miao Xiang and the four had been brothers for years, but at this very moment, the four even wanted to swallow him alive.

"Brothers, why don't you attack the heaven? Why are you all here surrounding me?" Miao Xiang calmly and smilingly looked at the four, then said with a careless tone, "We lost some weak disciples, what's so wrong about that? This treasure of our Shifu is so

powerful, so I can't fully control it yet. What happened just now is only a mistake it made."

"How can our Shifu's treasure make any mistake?" Tiger was a bad-tempered one. "Miao Xiang, did you do this on purpose? Are you jealous of our achievements, of so many disciples we recruited? Did you do this to weaken the four of us?" He yelled at Miao Xiang.

Dragon, Lion, and Mammoth frowned, subconsciously gripping their weapons tighter.

Perhaps, that was the reason.

They were all disciples of Priest Mu and Priest Hua, and indeed, Priest Mu and Priest Hua had always been sharing everything with each other. However, their disciples weren't the same. Some of their disciples ganged up, and currently, a great number of small groups existed among their disciples.

For example, Dragon, Lion, Tiger, and Mammoth, the four of them were a united group, Dragon-slam, Tiger-blast, and other sixteen brothers were from another small group, while Miao Xiang and the other few trusted disciples of Priest Hua and Priest Mu were also the leaders of a small group.

This time, Dragon, Lion, Tiger, and Mammoth brought an impressively large number of human slaves and non-humankind elites from Yu Dynasty, making all these talented people join the sect. Without a doubt, this was a major contribution made by this small group.

These elites from Yu Dynasty would become their trusted disciples in the future. The problem was that the number of these people was way too huge. Billions of human slaves from about ten super scale mins of Yu Dynasty and millions of non-humankind beings... As new members of the sect, they might not be able to do much now, but in the future, when they cultivated themselves with Priest Mu and Priest Hua' supreme Dao, they would grow

stronger and stronger, while being united by the four...

By then, among all disciples of Priest Hua and Priest Mu, the four would become unusually strong, and for sure, they would suppress all their brothers and sisters, becoming the most powerful disciples under Priest Hua and Priest Mu's guidance!

As cultivators, the four had strong souls and clear minds. Within a single moment, they thought of many possibilities. Looking at Miao Xiang, their faces turned darker and darker. They believed that they had figured out the truth, that Miao Xiang was taking this opportunity to weaken the four of them!

"Miao Xiang, how dare you play a trick with us?" Dragon snorted and threw a glance at Tiger.

Tiger burst a thunderous roar, as he raised his dark long blade and hacked down towards Miao Xiang's neck at lightning speed. A fierce beam of blade light dazzled to the sky. The first move he made was a lethal one.

The four clearly understood that the pearl tower was a powerful treasure that belonged to Priest Hua. Priest Hua carried it almost everywhere. It was immeasurably powerful, and with it, Miao Xiang could have at least thirty percent of Priest Hua's power, which was more than enough to wipe out the four.

Therefore, even if Miao Xiang were a brother, since he now had an evil idea in his mind, the four had no choice but to kill him!

Miao Xiang gave a weird smile. In his eyes, a seven-colored, dim light sparkled. Meanwhile, a faint seven-colored light flashed across every single pearl inlaid in the tower. Next, extremely thin beams of seven-colored light burst from the tower. The four exclaimed out loud, when they were thrown back into the heaven, into the well-strengthened, great defensive formation built by Yu Mu and Feng Xing, along with tens of millions of disciples.

A destructive pressure came from all directions. Even under the

protection of their life-saving treasures, the four couldn't move.

"Brothers, it's lucky for you to die today! You will experience the great Dao of quietus of our Master Shifu!" Miao Xiang smiled warmly, then took out three fist-sized, lotus-seed-like bombs.

Flicking his wrist, he sent the three bombs flying into the heaven. These were Chaos divine bombs given by Priest Hua for Miao Xiang's protection.

Buzz! Three muffled thunders could be heard from the front gate of heaven in a row.

Chapter 1518: Horrifying

Priest Hua made these bombs himself, using a thin bolt of Chaos divine thunder that burst from the Chaos and the powers of the five basic natural elements in Pan Gu world, based on the great Dao of evolvement inside his own body, over a long period of time.

A regular magic bomb would explode after one thunderous bang, and release all its power, destroy everything within its attacking rage. The strongest explosive force generated by the bomb at that very moment was the most important thing about a magic bomb. However, Priest Hua's magic bombs were based on the great Dao of evolvement, and were different. The three bombs seemed to explode just now, but in fact, the explosion was merely a start.

The three bombs went off in a row, releasing layers of variable thunder power, blooming like the petals of a lotus. Waves of destructive power stroked across the surrounding divine seals like the softest tentacles, sensitive, gentle, drilling into the seals through the tiniest cracks, then exploding again inside the finest hole in each defensive seal.

Following thunderous booms, the Chaos thunder power spread in all directions, turning layers of divine defensive seals into ashes. Surrounding the front gate, buildings collapsed one after another. Behind the gate, within the area tens of thousands of meters in radius, everything was gone. Even the golden, shiny path was halfway blown up.

The thunder power destroyed everything in this area, after which, it continued spreading, tearing down countless buildings and crushing numerous divine seals.

The moment the bombs went off, Feng Xing and Yu Mu temporarily lost their eyesight and their hearts started drumming. They felt that death was right before their eyes. Together, they gave a bright shout and took out their divine seals, which were

condensed from their natural reward power when they were appointed as divine gods by Ji Hao, sending in all their powers.

In the surroundings, all towers and tall buildings glowed blindingly, then began spinning. Within the area thousand-miles in radius, all heaven warriors felt that the entire heaven was turned upside down. Instantly, the surrounding divine seals sent these elite heaven warriors away from the battleground. When the three magic bombs exploded, no one from the hundreds of millions of disciples, who were thrown in by Miao Xiang, was left in that area.

Heaven warriors were protected by the heaven, but the poor disciples led by the four didn't have the same treatment. Before they figured out what was going on, they were already gone amidst the soft yet destructive waves of thunder power.

The four roared with wrath. Their life-saving treasures emitted blinding lights while they stood side by side and combined their powers, defending themselves against the thunder power. Their treasures vibrated intensely. The four felt like being thrown into the Chaos, without seeing the sky or the earth. They felt that the world was spinning around, and the endless, fatal thunder power coming ceaselessly at them. They also felt that their power had been consuming up like the snow under the sunshine.

Following a series of cracking noise, the four golden giants, that the four didn't have the time to take back, collapsed in the thunder power. The four lost their eyesight at that moment. They sensed a tearing pain from the deepest area of their souls, as if someone hacked violently on their embryos of Dao, that made them nearly faint.

These golden giants were their clones, generated through a great magic that Priest Mu and Priest Hua created years ago. These golden giants were indeed powerful, but a cultivator needed to split his or her souls and merge it with a giant amount of natural powers to create one of these, then nourish it with his or her own

spirit blood all year round.

In order to raise the powers of their golden giants, the four had each invested thirty percent of their original souls on their golden giants. Just now, their golden giants were destroyed, and they suffered great losses. Their hearts of Dao were shaken, cultivations declined, and suddenly, they were largely weakened.

"Miao Xiang, we will kill you!" Dragon swore through gritted teeth. Floating above his head, a fist-sized golden bead, which was his life-saving treasure, cracked abruptly. Because of the thunder power released from the three magic bombs, a thin crack appeared on the bead.

Once again, a heavy loss was inflicted on Dragon. He could no longer stabilize his body condition. Uncontrollably, he opened his mouth and let out a mouthful of blood, then quivered and fell to the ground. Dragon couldn't even dream that the first severe injury he suffered in his life was given by the magic bombs made by his Shifu!

As the strongest one among the four, Dragon fell to the ground, coughing blood. Following him, Tiger and Mammoth both had their life-saving treasures cracked by the thunder power. Same as dragon, they too failed to withstand the injury they suffered, ending up lying on the ground and vomiting blood.

Tiger, the most bad-tempered one, gave a raging growl. He was also vomiting blood, but strugglingly, he shielded his three brothers and himself with his life-saving treasure. Meanwhile, he tremblingly put his right hand into his left sleeve and took out three of Priest Hua's magic bombs, and three linden-seed-shaped bombs.

The three linden seed bombs were made by Priest Mu himself. Unlike Priest Hua's magical, variable magic bombs, Priest Mu's magic bombs were the simplest type of bombs. However, Priest Mu's Dao was the Dao of quietus, and he sealed the power of

quietus, which was generated by him, in his bombs. The power of quietus was strong enough to silence everything, making both the time and space disappear, ceasing the existence of all living creatures.

"Miao Xiang...This isn't finished!" Tiger shouted at Miao Xiang, who was standing outside the front gate.

Flicking his wrist, Tiger sent the six bombs towards Miao Xiang. Next, he made a thunderous roar, bit broken his tongue tip, and sprayed his spirit blood on his life-saving treasure. This treasure, which kept Tiger company for countless years, exploded and released a pre-world light that wrapped up the four, tore apart the space, and fled westward.

"Haha, Shifu wants you dead. Going back is suicidal!" Miao Xiang's eyes sparkled with the dim seven-colored light. He pointed his finger at the pearl tower and released tens of beam of bright light that swirled the six bombs back into the heaven.

All six bombs went off together. An indescribable power of quietus spread out immediately, quaking the heaven slightly. Behind the front gate, all buildings in a thousand miles radius silently collapsed and fell apart into strains of dust, dissipating in the air at last.

Within this entire area, all divine seals were gone, and some heaven warriors, who didn't manage to run further, disappeared quietly.

Laughing out loud, Miao Xiang shielded himself with the pearl tower and shouted at the rest disciples behind him, who were all dumbfounded by now, "All disciples of our sect, break into the heaven and slaughter all living beings! This is our Shifu's order. If you can't do it, you will die, and your souls will perish! You will never live again! Follow me! Rush in!"

Wielding his broad sleeve, Miao Xiang pulled out a brightly shining longsword and rushed into the heaven, his face showing an

obvious intent of killing.

Following behind him, countless disciples growled out loud and tremblingly carried their weapons as they rushed into the heaven. They marched in through golden, splendidly shining paths, and quickly started a pitched battle against heaven warriors who were rushing up from all directions.

Not only Feng Xing and Yu Mu, Man Man, Shaosi, and Taisi had all come out with troops. Divine seals were activated in all areas. As divine lights and warm mists descended from the air, countless disciples were crushed instantly.

Raging shouts even quaked the sky as the rain of arrow swished across the air and covered the starlight as well.

Chapter 1519: Golden Bombs Wipe Out the Devils

The cawing laughter echoed through the sky while Ji Hao and his Gold Crow army returned from the starry void.

Far away from the heaven, a Gold Crow elder already cawed out loud impatiently, "Caw, you little thing don't know how to manage a life, you really don't. Why is there such a large empty area behind our gate? Are you planning to grow some bananas there or sweet potatoes?"

Another Gold Crowl elder shook his head and cawed, "Caw? Bananas, sweet potatoes, but you don't need to water them with fresh blood, do you? Look at that, blood flowing all over the ground. Are you growing those man-eating vines from Southern Wasteland?"

Ji Hao paused in confusion. What sweet potato? What banana? What man-eating vines?

Standing up, he looked inside the heaven, and was startled by what he saw. As the two Gold Crow elders said, a big half of the front gate had collapsed, with a thousands of miles wide empty area behind it. The beautiful buildings standing in that area had been flattened. Even the floor tiles were ground off, exposing the ground covered in blood.

Countless heavily armored warriors had been darting around in the heaven between buildings, fighting each other. At first glance, Ji Hao couldn't tell exactly how many enemies had broken into the heaven, and were fighting against the heaven warriors.

Under Ji Xia's direct leadership, the Yao Mountain army guarded in a distance away without recklessly joining the fight. Except for Yao Mountain army, the dragon force, the phoenix force, and all divine warriors and commanders from the Divine Origin Pool had

all joined the battle.

All divine seals in the heaven had activated themselves. But, without Ji Hao controlling the heaven and earth divine tower, the heaven and earth great formation as the strongest divine formation for both defense and offense, wasn't activated. The defensive divine seals based on all buildings in the heaven failed to deliver a satisfying effect in attacking. Therefore, the heaven warriors had paid quite a price to stop the enemies from breaking further into the heaven.

What shocked Ji Hao even more was that as divine gods, Man Man, Shaosi, Taisi, Feng Xing, Yu Mu, Yi Di, Yuan Li, Shermie and the others had actually been forced backward by the seven-colored light emitted from the pearl tower held in Miao Xiang's hand, even though they were under the protection of the natural law.

Feng Xing was as swift as a bolt lightning, and Taisi stayed behind to cast magic curses. Except for these two, all the others were covered in wounds. Their armors failed to defend them against the light of the pearl power. Every time a beam of light flashed across, a small, new puncture wound would be added to each of them.

If the divine seals in the heaven hadn't been continuously sending them away from dangers, and if the natural powers hadn't been ceaselessly healing their injuries, Shaosi and her friends would have lost the fight long ago.

"No rush, no rush. You have a great number of warriors, and I have quite many disciples. Let them take their time to kill each other. When they nearly die out, I will take care of you." Miao Xiang carried the pearl tower with one hand, and held a sword with the other hand, laughing perkily with a high-pitched voice.

Miao Xiang's eyes dazzled with the dim seven-colored light while his voice sounded like a ghost, "Young people, do you really think that there's nothing I can do to you? Do you truly believe that you

can survive my great power with these heaven seals? Haha, I am just playing with you...It would be so boring if I kill you too early, before all the useless things are dead, wouldn't it?"

The nine dragons chariot dove from the air at high speed. With a sullen-looking face, Ji Hao watched Miao Xiang's pearl tower release a beam of light that flashed across the air, tore apart Yu Mu's water shield, and left a thin slash on Yu Mu's belly, letting the blood gush out.

Yu Mu gritted his teeth and frowned, patting on his belly. As strong natural power surged into his body, the wound began healing very slowly.

This pearl-tower not only had an especially high offensive capability, but a strange power from it would also linger in the wounds it created, to make them extremely hard to heal. Yu Mu's face twisted while he trembled because of the sharp pain giving by the wound.

The nine dragons chariot approached the heaven swiftly. Ji Hao let out the heaven and earth divine tower, prepared to trigger the heaven and earth great formation. Abruptly, Miao Xiang gave a faint smile and said, "People, all here? I've been expecting you for long. What a group of waste! With my guidance, it still took you so long to get here. Cut the crap and do it now. Remember to be quick and merciless."

Strands of colorful glow emerged around Miao Xiang, while an indescribable aroma suffused the air. Weird silhouettes were faintly visible within the glow, stunning but strange, with no obvious features of gender.

Ji Hao paused in shock. Did Miao Xiang actually summon so many sky devils?

Fortunately, Ji Hao arrived timely. Otherwise, the consequences would be unpredictable if these sky devils were scattered in the heaven.

Ji Hao incanted a spell. Instantly, the heaven and earth divine tower released torrents of natural powers of earth, water, fire, and wind. The violent gale blew out from every window of the tower, while wisps of light beam immediately connected the tower and all divine seals in the heaven.

Generating a sky-shaking boom, the tremendous heaven quaked slightly, seeming to come alive.

The heaven and earth great formation was fully activated. As main components of the great formation, ten nature-designed divine formations began moving slowly, together like a precise millstone. All heaven warriors sensed warm streams coursing through their bodies, as all tiredness and injuries of theirs were gone. Suddenly, they all become energetic and extra powerful.

In the meantime, the disciples that followed Miao Xiang into the heaven were frozen. They were all strong, but none of them could move anymore.

The endless natural powers from all directions froze them. Facing the tremendous power of nature, they were like tiny bugs, without the power to fight back.

"Capture them all and brand them with slave marks. Don't let any of these audacious people go." Shouted Ji Hao, "Shaosi, you and the others step back. Do not let sky devils come near you!"

The heaven and earth great formation was activated, releasing an invisible, immense power that covered Miao Xiang and all of the sky devils around him. All the sky devils were forced to show their faces. They were beautiful boys and girls, legendary creatures, plants, glistening pearls, jade, gemstones... They were all breathtakingly beautiful, and no flaws could be found in their appearance.

Hearing Ji Hao shouting 'sky devils', a beautiful girl among the sky devils give a faint smile, then exploded into thin streams of smoke, rising into the sky and attempting to drill into Ji Hao's

body to devour his soul and control everything of his.

Before the girl reached three-feet high above the ground, a buzzing noise could be heard. Followed the noise, countless extremely thin golden thunder lights gathered from all directions and condensed into a water-tank-sized golden thunder bomb above her head. The golden thunder bomb fell down and generated a pretty loud boom, turning the girl's smoke into ashes, as it tore apart a large number of sky devils surrounding her.

That was a devil-yielding golden thunder bomb from the heaven, condensed from the purest positive power in the world. This kind of thunder bomb was an invincible opponent of all evils.

Chapter 1520: Priest Mu Arrives Again

"Ji Hao!" Miao Xiang shouted out loud, "Don't think you can do whatever you want with the power of the world only because you luckily become a divine emperor. Today, I will let you know that this so-called divine emperor crown of yours means nothing!"

Ji Hao descended from the sky, leaving a streak of fiery light in the air. Hearing Miao Xiang, he was angry, but still laughed out loud.

'Do whatever you want with the power of the world'? Was he talking about Ji Hao or himself? This place was the heaven of Pan Gu world, the realm of rule created by the world itself. Even back in the ancient era, no one dared to just attack the heaven in broad daylight like this.

Looking at the flattened area covered in blood, thousands of miles in radius behind the front gate of heaven, all the corpses and body parts on the ground, the half-foot-deep blood pool, all of this happened because of Miao Xiang. How did he dare to accuse Ji Hao of doing whatever he wanted?

"Sneaky priest, give your name!" Ji Hao looked at Miao Xiang and shouted.

"I am Miao Xiang, an attendant under my Shifu's guidance. Without worrying about all the disciples he brought to here, Miao Xiang calmly looked at Ji Hao and said smilingly, "Under my Shifu's order, today, I came to flatten the heaven and cut off the head of yours, a fake emperor!"

As the seven-colored dim light sparkled in his eyes, Miao Xiang uncontrollably said out loud what was buried in his heart, "Ji Hao, even if you have attained the world's edict, you are nothing more than a fake emperor in my eyes. Without my Shifu's permission, who dares to call himself an emperor?"

A frosty light flashed across Ji Hao's eyes. He landed on the ground, facing Miao Xiang from miles away as he said coldly, "Eh? Do I need Priest Hua and Priest Mu's permission to become a real divine emperor? Then those ancient divine emperors..."

Before Ji Hao finished, Miao Xiang laughed aloud, "They all died! Why do you think all ancient divine emperors disappeared without a trace? Those original divine gods, who used to rule the world, why did they disappear so soon? You, Ji Hao kid, you now have the power of East Emperor Taiyi, and you succeeded to his throne. But, do you know how did his soul perish?"

Opening his mouth, Ji Hao looked at Miao Xiang, pretending to be confused as he said, "Who can tell exactly what happened in the ancient time? You don't know what really happened either, do you?"

Miao Xiang laughed again, out loud. Pointing at Ji Hao, he yelled, "The end of East Emperor Taiyi is your future. I can tell you this. He refused to follow my Shifu's order, so he..."

A furious growl came from a long distance away, sounding like the raging roars of tens of thousands of King Kong lions. The tremendous sound wave squeezed blood out of Miao Xiang's body, through his eyes, nose, mouth and ears. The destructive shockwaves struck straight into his body.

Puff!

Miao Xiang's skin ruptured inch by inch, as large clouds of blood mist rose from his body. The seven-colored dim light immediately disappeared from his eyes. He quivered and woke up.

"Shifu! Shifu! I, I, am I possessed?"

In panic, Miao Xiang looked at countless corpses and body parts lying around him. Standing in the blood, his boots, which were woven from hemp ropes, were already soaked. The lower hemp of his robe was dyed red by the blood.

"Brother, brother, what happened to you? Who killed you?" Suddenly, Miao Xiang saw a familiar face under his feet. That was his brother, Miao Yi. They had been brothers since the prehistorical era, and were very close.

Miao Yi's face was twisted. His eyes had gone wide, as he couldn't believe the fact before he died; his eyeballs seemed to even pop out from his eye sockets. A sword wound started from the back of his neck and ended on his forehead. This especially fierce sword attack directly crushed his soul and perished his primordial spirit.

From Miao Yi's wound, Miao Xiang sensed a very familiar power. Tremblingly, he raised his right hand. The sword held in his hand was covered in blood. A strong hatred lingered around the sword, from which, one could even hear the screams of countless souls who were wrongly put to death.

Far away, Feng Xing stood on a pillar as he sneered and said, "Three days ago, this brother of your saw you under attack. Kindly, he came to you to help, but you killed him with one sword move." Clicking his tongue, Feng Xing continued, "A very sharp sword move. Your brother wasn't prepared for that at all, ending up dead under your sword."

Feng Xing's word was like a bolt of thunder that struck right on Miao Xiang's heart. He trembled intensely, subconsciously taking a series of step backward.

"No, no, no, not possible. Brother Miao Yi and I...We've been best friends for so many years...How could I kill him? You, it must be you, it must be you!" Miao Xiang's eyes turned blood red, as A faint blood mist slowly rose from his head. He seemed to lose himself to the evil, and turn his embryo of Dao into an embryo of evil.

A cyan-colored silhouette showed up. That was Priest Mu, who pressed his hand on Miao Xiang's head and spread a clear light on him. The redness instantly faded in Miao Xiang's eyes, so did the faint blood mist rising from his head.

"Miao Xiang, it's not your fault. I was too careless this time." Priest Mu seemed to be quite embarrassed. His extra bitter face looked sallow, and his lips were slightly pasty. Obviously, he saved himself from the ambush of Great Happiness, but paid a price.

Miao Xiang sighed slightly. He solemnly bowed to Priest Mu, then carried the pearl tower with both hands and stood behind him.

Priest Mu turned around and looked at Ji Hao gloomily.

The heaven and earth great formation was fully activated. All surviving disciples brought by the four were trapped in the formation, kneeling on the ground, without being able to move. With sadness, Priest Mu glanced at all the corpses lying on the ground, then looked at the kneeling ones.

"Emperor Ji Hao, greetings." Priest Mu bowed to Ji Hao and said with a deep voice, "This is a misunderstanding. I will leave with my disciples right now. Please, deactivate the heaven and earth great formation."

Ji Hao was holding the Pan Gu sword. The longsword had been shaking slightly, letting out a shrill buzzing noise.

Beams of sword light had been shining from the sword tip, weaving into glowing dragons that hovered around Ji Hao. Each dragon was about a foot long, but their scales were clearly visible. Every single scale of these dragons were condensed from countless sharp sword spell symbols. By merely looking at these glowing dragons, an ordinary man would feel thousands of sharp swords slicing across him, clearly sensing the sharpness with both his body and soul.

Priest Mu glanced at the Pan Gu sword, then his face twitched intensely.

Without a doubt, he realized that the Pan Gu sword was a great work of Yu Yu at first glance. In the sword, the clinking sword

intent turned it into a terrifying weapon from a supreme treasure. The Pan Gu sword was unimaginably powerful, but with Ji Hao's current power, he could release about one to two percent of its power at most. Nevertheless, Yu Yu gave the sword a true spirit by using a special sword spell symbol, and with the true spirit, even an infant could now release over ninety percent of the sword's power, not to mention the fact that Ji Hao was a disciple under Yu Yu's guidance.

"No!" Sensing the strong will of fighting from the Pan Gu sword, Ji Hao responded straightforwardly.

Chapter 1521: Pure Sun Sword Formation for Extermination

Ji Hao responded with a loud and clear voice, hearing which, Priest Mu's face dropped.

Priest Mu's never-changing bitter face now looked like the face of a horse covered in a dense green mist, which looked like bile. That face of his was unspeakably hideous.

"Emperor Ji Hao!" Holding his wooden staff, Priest Mu's left hand had been shaking slightly. Clearly, the flame of fury had already burned to an extreme point in his heart, because even with his power and cultivation, the shake still happened. "To obey the world, I am not willing to start a war. Emperor Ji Hao, please deactivate the heaven and earth great formation and release my disciples, so that the world can be at peace." He said.

"No!" Again, Ji Hao refused straightforwardly and determinedly. "I said no. Priest Mu, are your ears damaged? Do you mean that the world can never be at peace if I do not release your disciples?"

Priest Mu raised the wooden staff and stomped heavily against the ground.

Buzz! The entire heaven quaked slightly. Along with a sizzling noise, bright light beams burst from around Priest Mu, and countless divine spell symbols emerged from the air, then exploded. With such a simple move, Priest Mu tore down all divine seals in the area a thousand miles in radius around him.

Ji Hao sneered. By pointing out his finger, he sent out a series of light streams. Next, a dazzling light erupted from the heaven and earth divine tower. The heaven and earth great formation operated at full speed, causing an overwhelming pressure to descend, striking on Priest Mu.

Priest Mu trembled. His green face showed a seriousness as he

said in his deep voice, "Priest Dachi, my friend, impressive! This tower, hehe, does it allow Ji Hao to control the entire heaven and earth formation? Not only that, it also allows Ji Hao to fully release the power of the formation."

Priest Mu praised while nodding, "Impressive, impressive! Priest Dachi, my friend, you are indeed the most unfathomable one among us. Like a burst of thunder that happens in a silent zone, you have taken an absolute advantage."

Slowly breathing out, Priest Mu looked at Ji Hao seriously and continued in a cold voice, "It's just that even with Priest Dachi's great power, Emperor Ji Hao, you haven't lived your first century yet. You are still at the stage of embryo of Dao. Your foundation of Dao is unsteady, and you are weak. You cannot stop me."

Ji Hao raised the Pan Gu sword and released more glowing dragons from it to hover slowly around him while saying, "Priest Mu, you can try."

Giving a shrill howl, Ji Hao glanced at the boundless Gold Crow army high up in the air.

Centered on Mr. Crow, tens of Gold Crow elders cawed resonantly. Hearing the ear-piercing caws, countless Gold Crows quickly composed a giant scale pure sun sword formation for extermination, according to Yu Yu's guidance. Countless tiny golden wooden swords swished into the sky and merged into a long streak of golden light, swirling int he air. All of a sudden, the second sun emerged in the air, releasing an infinite light and heat.

"Sword formation? This is..." Priest Mu's pupils shrank to the size the needlepoints. "Did my friend Yu Yu give you this sword formation? A sword formation with a pure poise power, composed from the Gold Crow bloodline and the sun flying swords made from my friend Fuso's branches... Generous, how generous!"

Mr. Crow cawed loudly. Held in his hand, the Fuso staff was dazzling and scorching hot. A thin beam of golden light burst from

the staff, immediately connecting all Gold Crows on the scene. The powers of a billion Gold Crows were combined. Controlled by the formation, their powers slowly condensed into nine enormous golden swords, spinning swiftly like windmills.

In the heaven, all dragons and phoenixes were stunned.

They never even dreamed that Ji Hao could bring back so many fierce and noisy Gold Crows with one short trip. What was even more shocking was that these annoying cawing Gold Crows had actually composed a scary sword formation.

Among all dragons and phoenixes in the heaven, even the ancient dragon kings and phoenix gods who lived since the ancient era were deeply frightened by the sharp, unstoppable aura of killing created by the sword formation. Their hearts twitched. The sword formation had been releasing a bright light and a great heat, but at the moment, everyone on the scene was soaked in cold sweat.

Without a doubt, as Ji Hao's die-hard supporters guarding the Divine Sun Palace, this Gold Crow army would be strong enough to help Ji Hao seize the throne.

Individually, Gold Crow warriors might not be as strong as dragons or phoenixes, but their number was way too huge, that the Gold Crow army even covered the sky. The current number of Gold Crow warriors was over a hundred times greater than the total number of members of the dragon-kind and phoenix-kind!

If Ji Hao allowed these Gold Crow warriors to give birth to as many babies as they wanted...Gold Crows had a way better fertility than dragons and phoenixes.

Dragons and phoenixes were not the only ones shocked by Gold Crow army and their sword formation. Priest Mu was also extra serious and cautious when looking at these Gold Crows. He couldn't measure Priest Dachi's power, while Yu Yu was the one he feared the most. Priest Mu never fought against Priest Dachi, but since the world was created, he had fought Yu Yu openly or

secretly more than a hundred times.

It wasn't a happy thing to be mentioned though, because Priest Mu never won a single fight against Yu Yu. On the contrary, every time, he fell in great disadvantages.

Yu Yu's formations, sword spells... everything about Yu Yu frustrated Priest Mu. And Yu Yu's sword formation, that could make any living creature in the world despair.

"I don't believe that you can stop me merely with a formation given by Yu Yu!" Observing the sword formation composed from Gold Crow warriors, Priest Mu abruptly gave a sneer and said, "Emperor Ji Hao, don't blame me for my impoliteness!"

"Don't be too humble, you are never polite!" Ji Hao looked at him coldly and said, "In the heaven and earth great formation, if you can still break this pure sun sword formation given by my Shifu, I will release your disciples immediately!"

"Deal?" Priest Mu took a deep breath.

Ji Hao let out the Pan Gu bell, letting streams of Chaos power cover the whole area. Afterward, he flew to the core of the sword formation, pointing the Pan Gu sword at Priest Mu as he said, "Deal!"

"Formation, rise!" Shouted Ji Hao.

Following his strong voice, the nine enormous golden light swords created by the formation quickly merged into the Pan Gu bell. Ji Hao's arms began shaking. Uncontrollably, he launched a sword move. Beautifully and smoothly, he swung the sword down towards Priest Mu along a flawless track.

Priest Mu breathed deeply again. Raising his wooden staff, he defended himself against the Pan Gu sword in Ji Hao's hands.

The sword power swept across the sky, while shreds of dragon-shaped, sharp sword lights descended to Priest Mu. The moment his wooden staff touched the Pan Gu sword, Priest Mu's expression

changed.

"Damn it! This sword formation is derived from that one! It's the 'killing' and the 'extermination'!" With a twisted face, Priest Mu wielded his broad sleeve, and sent himself tens of thousands of miles away in an instant.

Along with a cloth-tearing noise, a hazy sword flashed across the air behind Priest Mu, then disappeared. Suddenly, the coarse long robe worn by Priest Mu fell apart into thousands of pieces, drifting in the air like butterflies.

Chapter 1522: Hesitating

Holding the Pan Gu sword, Ji Hao expressionlessly looked at Priest Mu.

In fact, he was stunned too. The great surprise even made him speechless. Just now, when he turned himself into the core of the sword formation and attacked Priest Mu with its power, he had the same feeling as he got back then when using Yu Yu's sword formation against the non-humankind in Chi Ban Mountain.

He controlled everything, he was faster than everything, and he was unimaginably powerful, even seemingly capable of cutting the world.

The moment he merged himself with the sword formation, he clearly sensed all the fluctuation of Priest Mu's power, sensing the smallest move of every bundle of Priest Mu's muscles, and the strong power of great Dao stirred up by his wooden staff. He also sensed the dreadful quietus from the head of the wooden staff.

If Ji Hao were alone, he might have been killed by Priest Mu with the wooden staff already.

But, having merged with the sword formation, Ji Hao forced Priest Mu backward with one sword move. When Priest Mu fled, that panic on his face was real.

Ji Hao looked at Priest Mu calmly and blandly, but in fact, he was thrilled on the inside. The power of the pure sun sword formation was way beyond his imagination. Certainly, this sword formation would serve as his greatest help, for him to rule the heaven and safeguard his power. Facing this sword formation, even Priest Mu fled, not to mention anyone else.

Priest Mu stared at Ji Hao with an extremely bitter look while trembling in anger.

Since the world was created, a few powerful beings emerged from

Pan Gu world. Among those people, Priest Dachi, Priest Qingwei, and Priest Yu Yu were created after the creation of the world. According to the legend, they were generated from Saint Pan Gu's original soul and the immeasurable natural rewards power that descended because of the creation of the world. As the noblest descendants of Pan Gu, they each inherited a part of the great Dao, of Saint Pan Gu.

Among the three of them, Yu Yu was richly endowed by the world, inheriting Saint Pan Gu's great Dao of killing. Therefore, his temper was just like the axe of Saint Pan Gu, strong, fierce, and straightforward. In addition to that, as the inheritor of Saint Pan Gu's Dao of killing, the one with the strongest intent of killing, best instincts of fighting, and the highest fighting capacity among all the powerful beings in Pan Gu world, he attained a sword formation and four swords, which were known as the most powerful, fiercest pre-world supreme treasures in the world.

Once his sword formation was activated, it would create a sky-shattering aura of killing. The sword formation had no rival in the world. Together, only four powerful beings at Yu Yu's level might be able to survive his sword formation.

Yu Yu's sword formation was ridiculously powerful. When he attained his sword formation, Priest Mu once provoked him on purpose, in order to feel out its power. As a result, Yu Yu launched a mad series of sword attacks, making Priest Mu vomit blood and sending him flying backward. He nearly cut his linden tree, which was his original body, into two.

Since then, Priest Mu understood that no one should fight frontally against Yu Yu's sword formation.

Today, the pure sun sword formation for extermination built by Ji Hao's Gold Crow army was derived from the parts of 'killing and extermination' of Yu Yu's sword formation. Yu Yu's sword formation had four main parts in total, and the Gold Crow army's pure sun sword formation of extermination included the fiercest

two parts, which could deliver the strongest intent of killing.

As the pure sun sword formation merely included two parts of Yu Yu's sword formation, it was only twenty-percent as powerful as the original. Which meant, with eighty percent of his power, Priest Mu was able to fight against this formation. Nevertheless, this formation also included the power of Fuso tree, which was also a pre-world creature from the Chaos. Not to mention the fact that Fuso Tree could naturally suppress Priest Mu. All the flying swords composing the formation was made from Fuso tree's branches. These swords highly suppressed Priest Mu's power, weakening him by ten percent.

The Fuso tree served as the fore of the formation, controlling the entire formation. The Ffuso tree didn't join the fight himself, but under his control, the formation could at least weaken Priest Mu by thirty percent. Thus, Priest Mu only had about sixty percent of his power left to face the formation, which was twenty percent as powerful as Yu Yu's sword formation. Apparently, he was at a disadvantage.

Just now, Ji Hao turned himself into the core of the formation, gathered all its power, and triggered it with the Pan Gu sword, which was a work of Yu Yu himself. Yu Yu had left all his understandings about the Dao of sword in the Pan Gu sword. Yu Yu's Dao of sword included the highest Dao of killing from Saint Pan Gu.

When Ji Hao controlled the formation with the Pan Gu sword, he was almost as powerful as half a Yu Yu. The Pan Gu sword was unimaginably power. Added with all the other factors, as a cunning, calculative being, how would Priest Mu ever dare to fight directly against Ji Hao with that sword, or against the sharp sword light that shone from the pure sun sword formation?

Priest Mu's long robe was shredded, exposing his scrawny body and wrinkled skin.

Even as a master of emotion-control, Priest Mu's face turned pure black in anger. After all, in front of so many people, Ji Hao, a little kid, tore off his clothes and made him naked. His mouth corners curved down deeply like a pair of short swords sunk in his face.

"Indeed an unpredictably great power." After a long while, Priest Mu looked at Ji Hao holding the Pan Gu sword, and said slowly, "My powerful friend Yu Yu made me fall in such a disadvantage with a sword formation."

Ji Hao looked at the naked Priest Mu and responded blandly, "Priest Mu, your disciples violated the divine rules and neglected the power of the world. They broke into the heaven, caused severe damages, and killed countless divine warriors. They are unforgivable."

Ji Hao sneered and continued, "Therefore, they will all become slaves, forever and ever. They will serve the heaven to atone for their crime. You seem to know nothing about this. Therefore, I will not give you more troubles. You...shall leave."

Priest Mu's expression changed constantly. Ji Hao actually dared to talk to him in the tone of a divine emperor!

Back then, in the prehistorical era, did any of the five original divine emperors ever dare to act so haughtily in front of Priest Mu?

The rage surged straight to his head from his heart. Priest Mu slowly raised his wooden staff and said, "I think, Emperor Hao, you would be too arrogant if you actually believe that you can talk like that. This sword formation is indeed powerful, but if I do not try to break it and kill your people and damage your things all over the heaven, would you be able to stop me?"

Ji Hao's expression changed slightly. Lowering his head, he glanced at the large number of disciples of Priest Mu and Priest Hua, who were still trapped in the heaven and earth great formation without being able to move, then pointed out his finger. A series of bone cracking noise could immediately be heard, as all

the bones of these disciples were crushed inch by inch by an invisible, tremendous force.

"Priest Mu, if you decide to make you move, I will too." Ji Hao gave a frosty smile and said, "The number of your disciples on the scene seems to be many times higher than the number of my warriors. The heaven and earth great formation may not be able to harm you, but with a single thought of mine, I can kill all your disciples here!"

Before Priest Mu responded, Ji Hao continued harshly, "I will let the world know the fact about your crime. The world will cease your sect and destroy your Dao!"

Priest Mu's expression changed again. Hearing Ji Hao, the intent of killing faded from his heart.

Ji Hao remained silent for a long while.

Chapter 1523: Harmonization

Ji Hao truly didn't want to spare these disciples of Priest Mu.

Ever since Ji Hao rose among human beings, the higher the position he reached, the greater the power he seized, the heavier the pressure would Priest Hua and Priest Mu lay on him. Obviously, Priest Hua and Priest Mu didn't want to see any disciple of Yu Yu stand at a high position in the human society.

For quite a few times, Ji Hao nearly died at the hands of Priest Hua and Priest Mu's disciples.

The stronger Priest Hua and Priest Mu' disciples were, the more powerful their sect was, the greater pressure Ji Hao would have to take in the future from them. Among the ones trapped by Ji Hao in the heaven and earth great formation, human warriors were all human slaves saved by the four from the mines in Yu Dynasty. They fervently believed in Priest Hua and Priest Mu. After all, it was they who sent people to save them from the dark place where they struggled to live.

These reverent and passionate human warriors as of now formed no more than a strong army, but when they started to give birth to their children, grow and develop, based on their cohesion, they would certainly become a fairly important human force!

They were human beings, a great number of human beings! With the thriving fertility of human beings, the total population of these people would reach to the level of a human super clan in less than a century!

More importantly, they passionately and piously believed in Priest Hua and Priest Mu, and their passion and piousness would pass on to their descendants. Generation after generation, their children, and the children of their children, would all inherit the passion and the piousness. Under Priest Mu and Priest Hua' careful cultivation, this human force would even be able to affect the

human emperor.

Therefore, Ji Hao didn't want to release these people. No to mention the fact that among all disciples trapped in the heaven and earth great formation, millions were non-humankind nobles who were fooled by the four and followed them here from Liang Zhu City. Those Yu Clan nobles, who knew nothing but enjoying their lives, weren't important, neither were those Jia Clan warriors, who could do nothing more than violently beating their enemies, worth mentioning. What worried Ji Hao were those Xiu Clan craftsmen, who were full of wisdom and imagination, and were highly creative.

Ji Hao had already found out that the base of Priest Hua and Priest Mu was located in Western Wasteland. People believed that Western Wasteland was poor, but in fact, its infertility was caused by the strong metal power. Because of the extra strong metal power, crops could barely grow from the soil, and with the poor soil, people could barely afford to live. However, buried under the areas with an extra strong metal power were usually giant amounts of precious mineral resources. For this exact reason, a large number of special alloys were produced in Western Wasteland. The weapons produced in Western Wasteland weren't in large quantities, but the qualities were always especially high.

If these Xiu Clan craftsmen went to the Western Wasteland, God knew how they would use the nearly inexhaustible mineral resources there. If that happened, perhaps, the next time Priest Hua and Priest Mu raised an army to attack the heaven, the warriors with fleshy bodies would be replaced by countless pure metal puppets.

Ji Hao believed that there was a chance for them to even make an artificial star to hit against the heaven. After all, these Xiu Clan craftsmen were actually able to transform flying mountains in Pan Gu world into forts. If one gave these shorts enough time, they might truly do something like that.

Ji Hao was hesitating. In a complicated way, he looked at those trapped disciples, with the intent of killing sparkling in his eyes. He could not make the decision.

Holding his wooden staff, Priest Mu was also lost in his thoughts.

If Ji Hao truly dared to take so many of his disciples captive, or simply killed them. Priest Mu would certainly make Ji Hao fall for good, exactly like he made divine emperors fall back then. Didn't he do that for many times?

But at the moment, the heaven and earth great formation was under Ji Hao's sole control. As a matter of fact, this gave Priest Mu a deeper fear.

In the ancient heaven, five divine emperors controlled the heaven and earth formation together. Therefore, there was a crack to squeeze through. But now, Ji Hao controlled the whole heaven, which meant that an opportunity wouldn't be so easy to find.

After all, the heaven and earth formation was composed from ten nature-designed supreme divine formations. It was tremendously powerful, and in operation, it would always be supported by the will of the world. Not even Priest Mu dared to guarantee a free walk in it. The lethality of the heaven and earth great formation wasn't as high as that of Yu Yu's sword formation, but it was absolutely as difficult to deal with as the latter.

Together with the pure sun sword formation built by the Gold Crow army, the less lethal heaven and earth great formation became destructive. Imagining himself being trapped by the heaven and earth great formation, then suffering a sword strike right on the head, even Priest Mu bared his teeth because of the imaginary pain.

No, no, if he truly started a fight against Ji Hao today, he might not be able to save his disciples. On the contrary, he could even throw himself into trouble.

He hated Ji Hao so much. Even as a free, fearless immortal being, he still couldn't do whatever he wanted, without being able to control the great Dao of nature.

But controlling the great Dao of nature was a way too big and difficult a goal. The safest, most appropriate way to achieve this goal was through human beings, the owners of the natural fortune. The one who controlled the humankind could control the great Dao of nature, and in order to control the humankind, one had to make all...at least a big half of all human beings follow his or her doctrine, and commit themselves desperately and irredeemably to him or her.

If Priest Mu wanted more human beings to accept his doctrine and follow him, these human disciples trapped in the heaven and earth great formation were necessary.

Remaining silent for a long while, Priest Mu came up with an idea. He was willing to make a small compromise with Ji Hao by compensating him with all the non-humankind beings among his trapped disciples. Ji Hao could do whatever he wanted to these non-humankind beings, and in return, those human disciples would be released safely.

He even...Looking at the large empty area behind the front gate of heaven, Priest Hua immediately recognized the results of his linden seed magic bombs and Priest Hua's magic thunder bombs, and sighed helplessly in his heart. What was the worst that could happen if he rebuilt all the damaged buildings in this area? Or maybe, he would have to lose two to three spirit treasures to make up for the loss that the heaven suffered this time.

Priest Mu was doing the calculations silently. He wasn't willing to talk the first, because once he did that, he would fall into a disadvantage, into a passive state.

Neither did Ji Hao want to start the conversation. Silently, he waited for Priest Mu to break the silence. For such a thing, the one

who talked the first would certainly fall into a disadvantage. Ji Hao didn't want to give all these disciples back to Priest Mu, but he clearly understood that unless Yu Yu showed up to help, he couldn't take the pressure from Priest Mu...He truly didn't want any of his people to be harmed or be killed.

Therefore, he had no choice but to compromise, but as for how would he do that and to what extent...Ji Hao wanted to bite a large piece of meat off Priest Mu's body. After all, his people flattened so many buildings, and killed so many water-kind and flying warriors belonging to the heaven. How could he not get a compensation?

From a distance away, a white cloud drifted over. Ao Bai stood on the cloud, looking at this area with a pair of deeply sunken eyes.

Priest Mu sensed Ao Bai's gaze. He turned around and looked at Ao Bai. He raised his eyebrows while a sharp light flashed across his eyes. With a bland tone, he started talking, "Ah, I didn't think it would be you, Bixi, my old friend. I remember that your physical body died a natural death many years ago. How come you look so energetic and healthy today?"

Ao Bai gave a faint smile. Seriously and cautiously, he cupped his hands towards Priest Mu from the distance and said, "People, let's talk in peace, shall we? Saint Mu, Emperor Ji Hao is a divine emperor. Even as a powerful being beyond the noisy world, Saint Mu, we still should respect him."

"Please, listen to me. Let's talk in peace, without fighting anymore, can we?"

Chapter 1524: Priest Mu's Promise

Saint Pan Gu created the world and then fell, generating all living creatures. Among all, the dragon ancestor was the inheritor of Pan Gu's strangeness.

At first, the ancestor dragon had nine sons, all in different shapes, but not one looked similar to the current dragons.

Among the dragon ancestor's nine sons, one was named Bixi. Bixi was shaped like a giant turtle, with an incomparable strength, and liked to carry heavy things. At present, many monuments carved by human beings each had a giant turtle underneath with its head raised; that was Bixi.

A very few living creatures in the world knew that other than carrying heavy things, Bixi also liked quietness, and was good at thinking. Bixi was the most strengthful one among the ancestor dragon's nine sons, but it rarely fought. Back in the prehistorical era, the other sons of the ancestor dragon swept across the world and made troubles everywhere, while Bixi cautiously and conscientiously managed the dragon-kind. As a matter of fact, Bixi was the actual ruler of the prehistorical dragon-kind.

Ao Bai was Bixi, the first generation of rulers of the dragon-kind, a son of the ancestor dragon, a pure-blood descendant of Saint Pan Gu. His nobleness was indescribable.

More or less, Ji Hao understood the reason why Ao Bai concealed his identity. But facing Priest Mu, a distinguished identity was required if one wanted to be the peacemaker. Therefore, Ao Bai had no other choice but to show his face, letting Priest Mu reveal his true identity.

"Shall we?" Ao Bai gave a faint smile, holding his hands in his sleeves as he glanced at Ji Hao, then at Priest Mu, and said, "We have no reason to fight each other and harm ourselves. Pan Gu world is facing a strong enemy. If we can avoid fighting each other,

we should."

Ji Hao chuckled coldly. Pointing at the thousands of miles radius flattened area behind the front gate of heaven, he responded with a frosty voice, "Mr. Ao Bai, I didn't start this. This is the heaven, the realm of rule in Pan Gu world. Some people attacked this place and wiped out countless palaces, mansions. If we wrap this up simply like this, I'm afraid that the heaven wouldn't be necessary for Pan Gu world anymore."

Throwing a sideways glance at Ao Bai, Ji Hao said blandly, "If people can break the heaven without paying the price, Mr. Ao Bai, you wouldn't be happy about that if you were a divine emperor, would you?"

Ao Bai chuckled, looking at Priest Mu as he asked with a relaxed tone, "Saint Mu, what do you say? To be honest, this time, it is your disciples' fault. The fault is even your own, or your brother's. If we make a mistake, we need to correct it!"

Priest Mu remained silent for a long while, then solemnly bowed to Ao Bai and said, "Bixi, my friend, you are absolutely right. We have made a mistake, and we need to fix it. I will rebuild all damaged buildings in this area within one day. How about that?"

Ji Hao said coldly, "What about all the divine warriors injured or killed? And these dead warriors from the dragon-kind and phoenix kind, how will you fix that?"

Priest Mu frowned. Looking at the corpses lying on the ground, he opened his mouth, seeming to say something, but didn't for a long while. The best way to fix this was to bring the dead back to life.

Priest Mu had the power to do that. Currently, no one was in the Netherworld to rule the great Dao of life, death, and reincarnation. Therefore, for the ones powerful enough, stealing the souls of the dead from hell and rebuilding their bodies wasn't difficult. Not to mention Priest Mu himself, even the disciples who had cultivated

themselves for more than a million years under his guidance could do it easily.

The problem was, the magic bombs made by Priest Hua and Priest Mu were way too powerful, that many of these dead warriors' souls were torn apart. With efforts, by consuming some of his power, Priest Mu could patch their souls back together, but would it be worth?

The souls of some poorer ones had even perished. Their souls were entirely gone, instead of missing parts. Priest Mu was indeed powerful, but not even he could regrow their souls.

Among all the powerful beings in Pan Gu world, one owned a 'Pan Gu soul cauldron'. The cauldron had an immeasurable power of creation. For things like regrowing souls, only the souls could do that. The owner of this cauldron was the only one in the world who had the ability to do things to souls without being punished by the great Dao of nature for violating the natural law.

But, Priest Mu didn't want to offend that powerful being, neither did he dare to.

Therefore, things like bringing the dead back to life should better be avoided. Regarding the loss of heaven warriors, especially the death of those dragons and phoenixes, perhaps, compensating the heaven with a satisfying number of warriors was the second best way to fix the mistake, right?

Glancing at his disciples trapped in the heaven and earth great formation, Priest Mu felt his heart bleeding.

Western Wasteland was poor. The poor soil in Western Wasteland could only support a small number of human beings. Human beings in Western Wasteland were mostly possessors of the bloodlines of Zhuwu, Chaos, White Tiger, Dijiang, and other ancient fierce beasts. Those people had nothing but muscles in their heads, with no other ability except shouting and killing. None of them had a slight talent for Dao cultivation.

Priest Mu started his sect in the Western Wasteland. During the past countless years, with all the efforts, how many disciples did he manage to develop? Not many.

He looked at these determined, unswerving, and talented disciples, who were the future of his sect, the hope for the sect to rise. He couldn't bear to give away these disciples as compensation, he truly couldn't.

Taking a deep breath, Priest Mu remained silent for a while, then took out a tiny nine-storey palace from his sleeve. It was built corresponding with the locations of stars, the five basic natural elements, and the earth meridians. The foot squared palace emitted a beautiful light, while a faintly sensible spirit power spread from it.

"This treasure..." Priest Mu pondered for long. At last, he decided to compensate Ji Hao with treasures.

Western Wasteland was poor indeed, but as one of the most powerful beings in the current Pan Gu world, and one of the strongest who existed since the prehistorical era, Priest Mu did have some spare treasures. These were the gifts he prepared for his future disciples. But now, he could only use them to solve problems.

"I don't need more treasures." Ji Hao interrupted Priest Mu. Wielding his Pan Gu sword, he continued blandly, "I don't have a large number of treasures, but every piece I have is a top-grade, supreme one. I can defend, and I can attack. I don't need more treasures. So, Priest Mu, don't try to wrap this up with these things."

Priest Mu seemed to be a bit angry. Looking at Ji Hao, he shouted, "Emperor Ji Hao, what should I do to satisfy you so you can release my disciples?"

Ji Hao frowned. How should this be solved? Since Ao Bai had shown his face to mediate this, Ji Hao had to release these disciples

of Priest Mu, unless he wanted to fight priest Mu, till one of them died.

By now, the real concern was how much he could harvest from Priest Mu.

But, Priest Mu was stingy. He was the one telling every treasure owner 'this treasure is destined to be mine'. How many great treasures could one expect him to give?

Even if he were willing to give two to three spirit treasure to finish this, Ji Hao could tell for sure that those would be the worst kind of spirit treasures, the beautiful but useless ones. One might be able to use those treasures to bully weak people, but facing real powerful beings, those would be much less useful.

Pondered for a long white, Ji Hao gave a long sigh. There was one undeniable fact, that Priest Mu was valuable as an individual.

"Elder Mu, Pan Gu world is facing a strong enemy. How about this, before the enemy arrives, I will point at one person, and you will attack that person with all your power. Are you willing to give a full strike without saving your power at all?"

Ji Hao looked at Priest Mu seriously and continued, "Use your full power to give a strike. Kill him if you can, injure him severely if you can't... definitely no cheating. What do you say?"

Priest Mu remained silent for a long while. At last, with an extremely bitter face, he nodded and gave a long sigh.

Chapter 1525: Ji Hao’s confusion

The heaven was created under the will of the world itself. All the buildings in the heaven, including all palaces, mansions, pavilions, every brick and tile was condensed from the purest natural power.

Theoretically, as long as the great Dao of Pan Gu world remained existing, the heaven would be able to heal itself slowly, even if it were shattered into pieces. The ancient divine emperors and gods had all fallen, but the Divine Origin Pool had been creating new divine gods to take over the heaven.

This time, Miao Xiang caused a truly severe damage. With priest Hua's thunder bombs and Priest Mu's linden seed bombs, he destroyed all the buildings within thousands of miles radius.

Ji Hao stood aside and observed for a short while. He saw pure natural powers roll over from all directions, and sensed a strong Dao of nature. Compressed by the Dao of nature, the pure natural powers condensed into differently colored bricks and tiles, brightly shining pillars and columns.

All bricks, tiles, pillars, and columns were covered thickly with divine marks and spell symbols. Those were parts of the natural defensive seals in the heaven.

According to Ji Hao's estimation, the heaven needed around five years to fix itself. Five years, that would be the best the heaven could do. After all, all the bricks, the tiles, the pillar and the columns and the spell symbols, divine marks on them, were too complicated. Besides, a giant amount of pure natural powers was needed for fixing all these buildings. A great energy would be consumed to condense the invisible natural powers into tangible pieces. Inside Pan Gu Motherland, how many centuries did it cost for the natural powers to form magic crystals? Not to mention the bricks and tiles, pillars and columns contained countless complicated spell symbols.

At this very moment, Ji Hao witnessed Priest Mu's dreadful power.

He stood in the center of the ruined area and rooted his brightly sparkling wooden staff deep into the ground. A suffocating spirit power wave spread in all directions, immediately covering the entire area, then enveloped the area a thousand times larger than the heaven, suffusing the entire starry void.

Priest Mu released a wave of spirit power with a thought and covered the entire starry void

'Old monster, exactly how powerful is he?' Ji Hao couldn't help but wonder silently. The starry void was vast and boundless, and yet, it was covered by Priest Mu with a single thought?

Ao Bai's mouth corners twitched intensely. Ji Hao didn't turn around, but clearly, he sensed Ao Bai's tightly clenched fists inside his sleeves. Priest Mu's power didn't only shock Ji Hao, it also startled Ao Bai.

Priest Mu controlled all the starlight. Streams of starlight were compressed into torrents, roaring down from the sky. Instantly, the gathering rate of natural powers raised by tens, even hundreds of thousands of times.

Under the control of Priest Mu's mighty spirit, the star powers and the natural powers had all been drawn forcibly into the heaven. Countless bricks, tiles, pillars, and columns emerged, piling up under the will of nature. They all merged perfectly, without leaving even the thinnest crack.

A splendid glow illuminated the sky. The heaven quaked slightly under the pressure given by Priest Mu's terrifying spirit power.

Priest Mu promised to rebuild all the damaged buildings within a day, but as he started his magic with his full power, the whole rebuilding process only cost about five minutes, until the dust settled down.

All damaged buildings were rebuilt, beautiful, clean, glowing brightly, and without a flaw. The broken platform behind the front gate was repaired as well, with no crack left on it. From every tall building, strands of warm glow rose into the sky, while strong natural power streams surged out and formed a sticky mist that coiled around people on the scene.

Priest Mu didn't say much. He simply nodded to Ji Hao and repeated his promise, then left with his disciples. The moment he left the heaven, his bitter face turned even bitterer. A thick sense of quietus had been releasing from every pore of his. The sense of quietus was so strong that Ji Hao didn't even dare to look at Priest Mu's back, in case the Dao of quietus shook his own heart of Dao.

Witnessing Priest Mu repair the damaged part of the heaven in five minutes, and sensing the fearful, soul-shaking power of Dao naturally released from his body, Ji Hao abruptly turned around and looked at Ao Bai seriously.

"Emperor, is there a doubt?" Ao Bai looked at Ji Hao with his sunken eyes and asked, "Is it because Saint Mu's power goes beyond your imagination? Emperor, you are a disciple of Saint Yu Yu. Don't you know about his real power?"

"I'm not stupid enough to fight my Shifu, so how would I know Shifu's real power?" Ji Hao looked at Ao Bai in a complicated way and said, "Just now, Feng Xing told me that the powers of the four disciples under Priest Mu's guidance, Dragon, Lion, Tiger, Mammoth, suddenly rose to a despairing degree after they broke a certain seal inside them..."

Ji Hao pointed at Liang Zhu City and continued, "I am curious, very curious. The ancestors of those non-humankind monsters in Liang Zhu City, when they invaded Pan Gu world, they were a group of poor lowly nobles from Pan Yu world. But, were they actually powerful enough to win a landslide victory against the humankind?"

Ao Bai remained silent for a long while, then smiled and responded, "As you said, the non-humankind won a landslide victory merely against the humankind. I'm afraid, even among ancient human beings, only a handful of former emperors know about the truth about that great war...The humankind suffered the only loss."

Spreading his hands, Ao Bai looked at Ji Hao honestly and continued, "As you guessed, Saint Mu and his people barely fought. They did no more than killing some non-humankind beings that they wanted to kill to earn some natural reward power that they needed. The humankind had always been the main force against the non-humankind. Back then, the human civilization had justly started sprouting, and human beings weren't able to rival the non-humankind beings. Indeed, they paid a great price to stop the non-humankind."

"Saint Dachi, Saint Qingwei, Saint Mu, Saint Hua, Saint Netherworld...They all did the same. Saint Yu Yu was staunch, upright, and straightforward. He and a few human clan leaders were good friends. He pulled out his sword and fought as hard as he could...But Saint Yu Yu was all alone, so what could he possibly change?"

"If my Shifu fought with all his power, could any non-humankind being ever survive?" Ji Hao looked at Ao Bai in confusion.

"Saint Yu Yu had a stunning power. Perhaps, no one in Pan Gu world can win a fight against him. But regarding calculation... hehe!" Ao Bai laughed hollowly and continued with a bland tone, "There is always a way to keep him from fighting with his full power. It is much similar to the fact that twelve former human emperors became Supreme Magi, but not a single one of them could stay to guard the humankind. There is always a way to keep them busy."

Ji Hao wanted a clearer answer, but Ao Bai had already started shaking his head confirmedly.

"Emperor Ji Hao, I am only one of the nine sons of the dragon ancestor, but not the dragon ancestor himself. Therefore, there are some things that I dare not to tell."

"Don't ask, as I wouldn't give you the answer even if you do. All in all, in have to say this... Emperor, this time, you forced Saint Mu to help you once with all his power..."

Ao Bai spread both hands and seriously bowed to Ji Hao, then continued, "Well done!"

Chapter 1526: A Lot of Work

After Priest Mu left, Ji Hao's divine emperor career officially started.

Fuso tree leisurely took root and stretched his branches in the large backyard of the Divine Sun Palace. Mr. Crow and a large group of Gold Crow elders stayed on his branches, napping all day. Following their breaths, wisps of essence sun power had been merging with their bodies, constantly improving their powers.

Because of the Fuso tree, the power of the great Dao of sun in the Divine Sun Palace had grown especially strong and pure. A splendid beam of golden sunlight poured down from the Pan Gu sun, shining on the entire palace and making it a perfect cultivation ground for Gold Crows.

Each day, one could see countless Gold Crows squatted on eaves, tiles, branches, and tall towers in ordered lines, taking turns to cultivate themselves according to Ji Hao's orders.

Other than the ones in cultivation, a greater number of Gold Crow warriors had been darting all over the heaven in their human shapes, wearing golden armors. They flashed across the sky like tiny suns, maintaining vigilance towards everything in the surroundings. While flying, these Gold Crow warriors would caw from time to time, and their shrill voices could be heard from every corner of the heaven.

In the Divine Sun Palace, Ji Hao sat on the throne in the middle of the main hall. With slightly unfocused eyes, he was looking at all the divine gods and officials who had been running all over the hall. They were carrying different colored scrolls of official documents and yelling at each other for greetings.

Before Ji Hao's throne were three large cauldrons, placed in a straight line. Dense clouds had been rising from the three cauldrons. Abruptly, along with a loud 'tinkle', a cauldron spat out

a stream of mist, which quickly condensed into a purple scroll.

Swish! The scroll 'smartly' flew to Yu Mu, who stood by the right side of Ji Hao.

"Again? So soon?" Sweating profusely, Yu Mu popped up his eyes as he glanced at the scroll and shouted in a hoarse voice.

The scroll spread itself slowly and released a cloud, which transformed into a round mirror before Yu Mu's face. In the mirror, an old man wearing a wolf skull helmet and colorful leopard hide, holding a bone staff, had been performing a strange dance in front of a ragingly burning altar, screaming towards the altar.

"Heaven, you wouldn't stop the rain in previous years. You almost drowned all our people...Now, you haven't given us a drop of rain for months. Western Wasteland is poor... Even the most drought-tolerant crops in the farmlands of our White Wolf Clan are dying. Please, gift us a rain. Otherwise, the hundreds of thousands of people in our White Wolf Clan will have nothing to survive on during the coming winter!"

Yu Mu gave a growl, grabbed the scroll, and stamped his divine seal on it while yelling, "Western Wasteland, White Wolf Clan; location, the eastern side of Wolf Head Mountain, thirty-thousand miles in radius. This noon, a heavy rain, one foot and two inches, go now!"

A few flood dragons, who were sent to be under Yu Mu's command by a temporary redeployment, hurriedly took over the scroll and rushed out of the hall. While running, they complained, "We just returned less than two hours ago, and now we're going to the Western Wasteland? My, why do divine gods have to work so hard?"

Tinkle! Another cloud of mist rose from a cauldron, condensed into a scroll, and flew to Ji Xia.

A cloud was released, transforming into another round mirror. In the mirror was an extra tall and muscular man, who had been growling in rage.

"Heaven! I am Bear Mountain, I swear with the souls of all ancestors of my Flying Bear Clan, that this time, I will slaughter every single scum from the Flying Leopard Clan with my people! Gods in the heaven, if you are there, please, bless us to win every battle!"

The man picked up a jade dagger for blood offerings and hacked violently on his own face for three times, shedding his blood on the burning altar in front of him, then continued, "Gods in the heaven, once I flatten the Flying Leopard Clan, I will offer you the heads of thirty-thousand virgins!"

Sitting on his throne, Ji Hao immediately buried his face in his hands. What was this? Did the heaven have to deal with this kind of vengeful conflict between clans too? And, the scroll flew directly to Ji Xia, the God of war. What did that mean? Should Ji Xia lead his army to wipe out the Flying Bear Clan? Or should he help Flying Bear Clan to sweep across the Flying Leopard Clan?

Ji Hao now understood that as long as any intelligent creature in Pan Gu world mention the words like 'heaven', 'gods in the heaven' while swearing, or build an altar and offer some blood, the heaven would receive their faith and turn their demands into official letters, sending directly to divine gods from related departments.

No wonder the ancient heaven had five divine emperors. So many living creatures existed in Pan Gu world, and all kinds of conflict never ended. Without a group of divine emperors, all these could never be handled well!

Ji Hao's fingers were slightly numb. He was a new divine emperor who wasn't so clear about all the rules and the operation of the heaven. He didn't know how to deal with all this. Not only him, neither did any new divine god he appointed have a clue. As a

relatively experienced one, Ji Xia had only managed one city and one army before. How should he handle these complicated and weird things?

As for Feng Xing, Yu Mu, and the others, their administrative capacities weren't even as good as Ji Xia's. In this couple of days, they were driven crazy by all kinds of works.

"Shi-Shifu!" Standing aside, Shermie burst into shouts, "A devil flood dragon from the Southern Wasteland said that the heaven is too blind to promote him as a divine god, so he is prepared to capture three-hundred human beings to be his snacks...Should we appoint him as a divine god, or..."

"Send a troop and kill him!" Ji Hao's eyes grew wider as he yelled in a harsh tone, "These kinds of fools should all be killed. Eh...?"

Before Ji Hao channeled his anger, another 'tinkle' could be heard. Following the silvery tinkle, a brightly shining golden scroll wrapped in coiling purple mist was sent out from the middle cauldron, slowly drifting to Ji Hao along with a strong natural power.

Ji Hao paused and caught the scroll. The scroll released a golden beam of light, within which, a blood-red line of character emerged.

"An official letter from the human emperor, Shun? This, what is this?" Ji Hao was confused. He carefully read those characters, then continued shouting, "Emperor Shun could simply send his people to the heaven if he wanted to see me. Why did he...?"

But all of a sudden, Ji Hao figured it out. Emperor Shun was in Liang Zhu City at the moment, and the distance between the heaven and Liang Zhu City would cost an ordinary Divine Magus a couple of months. How could sending people to the heaven to find Ji Hao be more convenient than sending an official letter directly to him?

Ji Hao had stayed out for more than a month. Emperor Shun and

the other human leaders had important things to talk to him, but sending people to find him would be time-wasting. Therefore, Emperor Shun chose this convenient, but strange way to contact Ji Hao.

"Alright, alright... Abba, and...everyone, the works in the heaven are important. You need to be diligent. Be careful, be cautious, don't muddle through your works." Wielding his broad sleeves, Ji Hao hurriedly dashed out of the heaven while shouting, "You keep doing your jobs. I'm heading to Liang Zhu City, also for important matters!"

Irresponsibly, Ji Hao escaped from the heaven with Mr. Crow, Fuso tree, and countless Gold Crow warriors.

Chapter 1527: The Power of 'Blood Crown

The fire blazed ragingly, illuminating the sky as the power of the nine dragons chariot was released. The fire flashed swiftly across the sky, extending for tens of thousands of miles. Occasionally, a clear light would shine from the chariot, after which, the chariot and countless Gold Crow warriors would break the space and reach ten-million miles away instantaneously.

The nine dragons chariot had a lightning speed, while the golden bridge could move through space. These two treasures were combined. As a divine emperor, Ji Hao activated these two treasures with the power of the sun. Hurrying on with his journey, with a giant troop of Gold Crow warriors, Ji Hao's didn't consume even a slight little bit of his own power.

Even a peak-level Divine Magus would have to spend a couple of months to cover the distance between the heaven and the Liang Zhu City, but Ji Hao made it within six hours.

In ordered lines, Gold Crow warriors descended slowly from the sky. These Gold Crow warriors weren't used to maintaining their human shapes. Therefore, they showed their real faces, covered in golden feathers as they landed orderly on the city wall of Liang Zhu City, on the roofs and trees...

Soon, looking down from the sky, one would see a big half of Liang Zhu City glowing with a golden light. Gold Crow warriors squatted on high places, curiously looking around. In every corner of the city, one could see Gold Crows wrapped in raging fires.

The shrill caws never stopped, echoing from the east to the west like a tsunami, then spreading to the north from the south. Quite a number of Yu Clan nobles, who had been fixing their mansions and rebuilding their homes, were nearly driven crazy by this suddenly rising wave of noise. They angrily rushed out of their house, pointed at these Gold Crow warriors, and began cursing.

But soon, the guards sent out by the twelve emperors dispersed these non-humankind nobles, who didn't know what was happening. Next, the twelve non-humankind emperors, a group of power elders from Yu Dynasty, Emperor Shun, Si Wen Ming, and the human leaders walked out to welcome Ji Hao.

Ji Hao didn't dare to put on airs. Hurriedly, he walked to Emperor Shun, Si Wen Ming, and the other few human leaders, then politely bowed to them. Emperor Shun and Si Wen Ming were quite relaxed. They grinned to Ji Hao and greeted him, as same as before.

However, facing Piji Nu and the other non-humankind emperors, Ji Hao dropped his face. He held his hands behind his body, and raised his chin to a forty-five-degree angle as Yu Clan nobles always did. Before he said a word, he snorted frostily.

"It's been so long, emperors. Have you attained any useful information from Red Lei, Dim Cloud, and the other Sun and Moon knights?" Ji Hao's voice turned strange. He secretly merged a trace of the great Dao of sun that he learned during these days with his voice. As a result, the sunlight in the air condensed into invisible music wires, vibrating synchronously with Ji Hao's voice.

By now, his voice sounded mysterious, imperatorial, immeasurable, and powerful, like the voice of the world itself, coming from all directions.

More or less, ancient divine gods would use little tricks like this when talking to ordinary living creatures, simply to maintain their sacred status in the hearts of mortal beings. Those were just purely tricks.

Sensing the pressure coming from all directions, the twelve emperors instantly had a fear towards Ji Hao growing in their hearts. Coughing slightly, Piji Nu walked up and responded with a deep voice, "We tortured them. They did give something useful, but when we asked about the real core secrets...The situation was

twisted, severely."

Ji Hao remembered the emergency described by Emperor Shun in the official document he sent to the heaven. "That 'Blood Crown' you mentioned before, did he give you a strike through space?" He asked in a deep voice.

Piji Nu's face twitched. He nodded heavily and said, "Emperor Ji Hao, if you have an interest, you can come and have a look. Then, you'll know how unimaginable and terrifying the Holy Blood Crown's power is!"

"Be careful." Si Wen Ming's voice echoed in Ji Hao's ears. "These non-humankind beings are up to no good. I witnessed that scene, incredibly powerful indeed. It was a terror. You must be careful. Don't let that Blood Crown hurt you. Do not allow these Liang Zhu People have any undesirable thoughts."

Ji Hao slowly nodded. With a proud smile, his rumbling voice resounded from all directions, "Good, interesting! I do have an interest in taking a look. In this case, let's go together!"

Giving his word to the twelve emperors in such a haughty manner, Ji Hao then turned back normal. He then said to Emperor Shun and Si Wen Ming while smiling, "Emperor Shun, Uncle Wen Ming, let's go have a look as well. I want to see what exactly this powerful Pan Yu world being can do. I heard that his social status is equal to divine emperors in Pan Gu world."

In the official letter sent to the heaven, Emperor Shun had clearly told Ji Hao that Liang Zhu City people finally mentioned something about the true power structure in Pan Yu world. For example, the Holy Realm in Pan Gu world was much similar to the heaven in Pan Gu world. The Holy Realm was the highest organization with the greatest power in the world, and it ruled the entire world, while the 'holy beings' in the Holy Realm were the supreme beings in Pan Yu world. Holy beings were admitted by the world; they had the strongest strength, and held the greatest

power over the life and property of any living being in Pan Yu world.

Every holy being was the chief commander of an invading Pan Yu world army. They led their armies to sweep across the universe. All worlds discovered by them would become their targets, suffering their crazy attacks and invasions.

The holy being named 'Blood Crown', who was going to arrive in Pan Gu world, earned this regnal name of his with his crudeness and mercilessness by slaughtering millions and millions of living creatures.

Ji Hao walked into the hall of the Department of Supervision in Liang Zhu City, then went down into the hell underground.

In an isolated cell, which was thickly covered in countless powerful seals, Ji Hao saw Red Lei. Red Lei was the first one who failed to endure all the torture and decided to give some core secrets about Blood Crown.

However, once he opened his mouth, he became like this — His entire body had become a blood-red, transparent crystal, without any sense of life. The thick crystal wrapped his vividly red, translucent bones, making him look like a crystal statue.

A blood-red flame had been blazing in his heart. Inside his heart, a faint figure had been screaming and struggling. That was Red Lei's soul, sealed in his lifeless heart, suffering from the blood-red fire moment after moment. Red Lei's crystallized body was the fuel of this blood-red fire. The fire would never die before his body was burned completely out.

Through his transparent body, Ji Hao saw the cruel seal inside his heart. The moment his body was burned out, he soul would be gone.

Red Lei floated in the air. An invisible force locked him in the air, allowing everyone else to easily see him suffering the endless

torment.

Under Red Lei's feet, over ten crystalline non-humankind beings lied on the ground. These were the non-humankind warriors who were interrogating Red Lei. They were all affected by the weird power that erupted from Red Lei's body, and all ended up in the same miserable state.

Hearing Red Lei's hoarse, despairing screams, even Ji Hao sensed a sharp coldness from his entire body.

This was too cruel, too ruthless.

Chapter 1528: Fight Through Space

Red Lei had fallen into a scary and hopeless situation. Ji Hao and the others quietly observed him for a while, then came to the cell next door.

The inner space of this cell was expanded. Thirty-six small scale divine towers stood in the prison, with dazzling light beams flowing on their surfaces. Occasionally, a beam of light would explode, and a giant number of defensive spell symbol would emerge in the air.

These were the preparations done by the non-humankind, added with the altars built by tens of elderly human Maguspriests in every corner of this cell. A barely sensible power had been accumulating in each altar, like some devil gods who used to hide in darkness, patiently waiting for a chance to give their targets a deadly strike.

The powers gathering on the surrounding altars were vague and dark, but from them, Ji Hao sensed an even greater threat than what he sensed from the thirty-six divine towers.

Apart from the divine towers and altars, the floor and the walls of the cell were all covered in golden and jade slips, which were thickly carved with spell symbols. Some of these spell symbols were carved by human Maguspriests, while others were works of Xiu Clan magic formation artists. All kinds of defensive spell symbols were connected, firmly sealing the space of this cell, layer by layer.

Ji Hao was surprised by the strong defense of this cell. Without using supreme treasures like the golden bridge, which could move through the space and break all kinds of seals, Ji Hao wouldn't be able to free himself from this cell, not even with his current power and the nine dragons chariot.

Obviously, both the humankind and the non-humankind had

tried their best. Based on all current conditions, the defense of this cell had already reached the highest standard of both the humankind and the non-humankind.

Dim Cloud was tied on a cast bronze pillar, covered in wounds. In a panic, he popped up his eyes as he stared at the people walking in. He desperately writhed his body and screamed hoarsely, "What happened to Red Lei? I heard his soul screaming. What happened to him? What did you do to him?"

Dim Cloud had been trembling intensely. His eyes were filled with an indescribable despair, like the eyes of an awfully frightened baby deer.

The twelve Sun and Moon knights were friends. They fought side by side all year round. A mysterious connection existed between their souls, and this connection was also the foundation for them to compose the Sun and Moon Samsara great formation and summon Pan Yu to fight.

Red Lei must have been in a severe trouble now, as Dim Cloud sensed his soul, which was suffering an endless pain. Dim Cloud also heard the despairing growls from his soul. But, Dim Cloud didn't know what happened to him, and that puzzle made him fear the most, dragging him down to the deepest despair.

Ji Hao and the others stood in the outer circle of the defense of the cell, preparing themselves for anything that might happen later.

The twelve non-humankind emperors had serious looks, so did Emperor Shun and the other human leaders. Whatever would happen later, it would provide both the humankind and non-humankind a chance to measure Blood Crown's power and demonstrate their own. The both sides were fully prepared, but upon all the preparations, if anyone still got injured by Blood Crown through the space, the problem wouldn't be just about shame.

"We are really." Piji Nu glanced at the other Yu Dynasty emperors and said with a deep voice.

"Good, let's do it!" Emperor Shun held his hands in his sleeves and said expressionlessly.

About ten non-humankind slaves walked into the cell with all strange kinds of instruments of torture humbly. These non-humankind slaves had extra wide mouths, hence looked like giant human-shaped frogs. Their skins were sticky, covered in large, differently colored speckles. They kowtowed ceaselessly to Ji Hao and the others, until Dishi Yanluo gave an impatient shout. Afterward, these non-humankind slaves walked to Dim Cloud while giggling evilly.

Dim Cloud screamed in pain, as a few non-humankind slaves smoothly inserted ten long black needles into his fingernails. The long needles were covered in a strange liquid drug that raised the sensitivity of Dim Cloud's fingers by a thousand times, and brought him way greater pain.

Some non-humankind slaves burned the ends of the long needles with fire. Soon, the needles were burned glowing red, and Dim Cloud shrieked even louder.

"Say it! How many people will Blood Crown bring to here? How many warriors does he have? How many powerful beings are amongst his warriors? What is his attitude towards Pan Gu world? What will he do to Pan Yu world people here, who have occupied this world?" Yemo Luoye took a step forward, looked at Dim Cloud, and yelled, at him, "Say it, say it now! We will relieve you from the pain the moment you talk."

While Yemo Luoye was shouting, those non-humankind slaves didn't stop.

They applied an especially concocted liquid drug on Dim Cloud's one lower leg. This was also a drug to expand all pains, concocted only for interrogation. With hideous, cruel smiles, non-

humankind slaves took out tiny knives and saws and began dismembering Dim Cloud's leg.

Dim Cloud burst into a series of shrill howl, that one could never hear from a normal living being.

"I'll talk! I'll tell you everything! This time, Holy Blood Crown..." He cried in a hoarse voice.

Once he said 'Holy Blood Crown', and prepared to tell all secrets about that powerful being, a deeply buried seal was triggered.

An overwhelming power, which was as vast as a sea, heavy and terrifying, descended on this cell through Dim Cloud's soul. Behind Dim Cloud, a cloud of blood-red mist silently rose. Within the mist, a pair of expressionless eye opened slowly. Those eyes were filled with a desire of destruction.

A deep and strong voice could be heard, giggling. The pair of eyes in the blood-red mist glanced at everyone in the cell, one by one.

Ji Hao and the other remained motionless in the cell, but as the pair of eyes turned to Yemo Luoye, she trembled intensely. Instinctively, she took a few steps backward while shaking like a falling leaf.

"Nice little woman." Said the voice from the blood-red mist, "Perhaps, you can be my entertainment in this world. With your beauty, you can live for, maybe three to five months longer than the others, before I get tired of you. But should it be three months, or five months?"

Yemo Luoye's face paled immediately. She forcibly calmed herself down, gave a cold smile, and responded, "That, is not for you to decide."

"I said so, so it's already decided. The others will all die, but you, little woman, will linger on for a while on my bed. Once I break you, you will join the others." The voice chuckled.

Along with the chuckling, a finger reached extremely slowly out

of the blood-red mist.

The glistening finger belonged to a hand with a perfect shape. The moment it was pointed out, all defensive seals around Dim Cloud began shattering like porcelain hit by heavy hammers. Eye-piercing fiery light burst from the air without an end, shaking the entire cell.

As this finger slowly, steadily pointed out, everyone on the scene saw layers of curved space before the fingertip. Clearly, crossing the immeasurable Chaos space to launch such a strike wasn't easy for the Blood Crown.

Along with a fearful sense of power, this finger quietly pointed at Fan Hai, who stood behind Yemo Luoye.

Chapter 1529: Netherworld Priest Made a Move

Based on the first target chosen by Blood Crown, Ji Hao had a preliminary judgment of his personality.

This Blood Crown must be a completist with OCD. Everyone in the cell could be his first target, but he chose Fan Hai. Fan Hai wasn't the nearest one, neither was he the strongest among all the people in the cell. He wasn't even the most important-looking one. Emperor Shun was surrounded by a group of earls and marquises, that made him look way more important than Fan Hai, a Yu Dynasty emperor.

However, among all targets in the cell, Fan Hai was definitely the ugliest one; he was from the Nether Moon. Nether Moon people worked with zombies, ghosts, and dark souls every day. As a Yu Clan emperor, Fan Hai was skinny, with a dark-look and a strong sense of death releasing from his body. He was absolutely the ugliest one in the cell, the one who was the most unpleasant to look at.

Blood Crown's finger pointed straight at Fan Hai's erect eye.

To a Yu Clan man, the erect eye between his eyebrows was the source of his power, the origin of his life. The erect eye was much more important than the heart of a Yu Clan being. One couldn't kill a Yu Clan man immediately by smashing his heart, but if one broke his erect eye, one would annihilate his soul right away.

Fan Hai shrieked. The layers of defensive seals before his face was broken by the finger, as a great pressure sealed the space around him. He attempted to break the space and escape, but he couldn't even move his finger.

Standing around Fan Hai, Piji Nu, Dishi Yanluo and the other few Yu Dynasty emperors changed expressions. None of them rushed

up to try saving Fan Hai. Instead, they instinctively ran away from Fan Hai at their highest speeds.

Standing right under Fan Hao's nose, Yemo Luoye burst into a deafening scream. Next, she swished away at a strange high speed, that even shocked Ji Hao. In an instant, she dashed to the door of the cell and hid behind Yemo Xiu and another Dark Sun power elder.

Even the two Nether Moon power elders didn't try to save Fan Hai. In reverence, they watched Blood Crown's finger point at Fan Hai, then resolutely and determinedly abandoned him without any hesitation. They transformed into two gusts of wind and whooshed to the door of the cell.

Fan Hai was the Nether Moon Emperor, and was facing such a frightful strike, but no one from his family, or the group trusted by him, lent him a helping hand!

Watching these non-humankind beings, Ji Hao and the other human leaders sensed a sharp coldness from their teeth. They now gained a deeper understanding of the moral integrity of these Yu Clan nobles. These three-eyed people were definitely unreliable, and the humankind could never trust them on battlefields.

"Damn it, damn it, damn it!" Fan Hai screamed desperately. Layers of grey mist coiled before his erect eye. With both hands, he gripped an oddly shaped staff which was made from the spine of an unknown creature, then a strong death power surged out of his erect eye and flooded into it.

Carved on the staff was a crystalline, glistening but strange skull with six horns. From its deeply sunken eye sockets, a green colored fire emerged. Following a shrill series of scream, tens of fist-sized green burning skulls drifted out from the eye sockets of the skull, flying towards Blood Crown's finger while causing a bright swishing noise.

Popping noise could be heard without an end. Fan Hai created

those green skull with all his powers, but before the skull approached the finger, they were all crushed by the invisible pressure.

Poor Fan Hai. He wasn't even a Sun and Moon stage being. He was merely as strong as a peak-level Divine Magus, a half-step Supreme Magus at most. Just like a mayfly could never shake a towering tree, with his own power, Fan Hai couldn't possibly stop the Blood Crown's finger, which was pointing at him through space!

"Save me, I promise you a half of my savings!" Fan Hai turned around with difficulty and looked at the human beings.

The eyes of the two Nether Moon power elders shone with a cold light, 'Damn you, Fan Hai! You're dying, but why did you choose to give it to the humankind instead of leaving your wealth to your people?'

Emperor Shun remained silent, so did Si Wen Ming. A half of Fan Hai's saving, a half of a Yu Dynasty emperor's saving, it was indeed tempting. But, these human leaders would never risk their own people for it.

They would rather sacrifice Fan Hai to carefully see how terrifying Blood Crown was, than letting their people risk their lives to fight against Blood Crown through the space. When Red Lei was killed by Blood Crown through the space with one strike, everyone on the scene was shocked, and didn't manage to clearly see Blood Crown's moves. This time, everyone was well-prepared. Fan Hai wasn't weak, but wasn't especially powerful either. Therefore, he was a perfect experimental subject to measure Blood Crown's power.

Seeing no on human leader responding at this essential moment, Fan Hai's face was instantly covered in a thick layer of death power. He now understood that everyone wanted to watch Blood Crown kill him, then analyze this process to measure Blood

Crown's power!

These damnable people!

Fan Hai gave a twisted grin. From his skinny face, a dense cloud of black mist was suddenly released, merging into his staff.

Following a shrill buzzing noise, the staff quaked intensely. In front of Fan Hai, before Blood Crown's finger, which was less than thirty meters away from him, nine layers of bone walls rose from the air, dazzling with an eye-piercing light. But, Blood Crown's finger shattered all nine bone walls one after another.

"All my savings!" Fan Hai turned away from his own people and shouted out loud to human leaders, "All my savings...Or, do you want anything else from me?"

"All your savings will belong to me. All the zombies, puppets of the Nether Moon, and the bodies and souls of your warriors who will die in battles in the future, will belong to someone else!" Ji Hao's erect eyes shone with a sharp light. By using his spirit power, he sent his voice into everyone's head.

Blood Crown's finger was only tens of meters away from Fan Hai. At any moment, that finger could land on his erect eye. It was difficult to deliver any clear point with language within a short span of time. Instead, under the current situation, using spirit power was the most appropriate and time-saving method of communication.

"Great!" Fan Hai gave a growl. He didn't hesitate to agree.

"My Netherworld friend!" Ji Hao shouted aloud while wielding a short triangular flag, which suddenly appeared in his hand. "Listen to me. All of Nether Moon's zombies and puppets, and the bodies and souls of their warriors who will die in battles in the future, will belong to you! If you have an interest, save him for once!"

A bronze gate wrapped in the Netherworld power quietly opened behind Fan Hai. From the gate, a pasty hand reached out,

momentarily broke the space, and slapped against Blood Crown's finger. The hand had been releasing a strong coldness, as if it were carved out of ice.

Blood Crown's finger pointed heavily in the middle of Netherworld Priest's palm and generated a clear popping noise.

Along with a sizzling noise, wisps of dense mist rolled up from where the finger and the palm touched. The cell quaked slightly, then all thirty-six divine towers and four altars were turned into ashes simultaneously.

"Interesting! This Pan Gu world is not as weak as you said! Stupid things, you didn't even figure out the true power of this world... You should die!"

Along with Blood Crown's deep growls, that finger disappeared without a trace.

"Fan Hai? Your life belongs to me now!" Netherworld Priest took his hand back into the bronze gate while laughing with a cold and hoarse voice.

Chapter 1530: Change Directions

In the Chaos, Chaos tide waves roared like mad and drunken boas, interweaving and generating soul-shaking bombs and Chaos thunderbolts, brutal enough to destroy everything.

Amidst the endless Chaos tide waves, a magnificent golden city silently crushed Chaos whirlpools one after another. The Chaos thunderbolts that erupted right around the city wall was absorbed by the wall, converting into the power of the city to support its high flying speed.

Towering up on the golden, mountain-like base, a palace emitted an inexhaustible golden light, looking splendid and blinding. Troops of heavily armored Jia Clan warriors were on patrol. They showered under the splendent golden light and moved through the thickly interwoven, spider-web-like paths, with rumbling steps. Under the strong golden light, their bodies looked translucent. Through their skins and muscles, one could see their bones and internal organs.

In the glorious palace, the void divine mirror had still been spinning slowly, locked on Pan Gu world. Hundreds of Xiu Clan masters surrounded the mirror, cautiously and carefully recording every information it gave.

Blood Crown sat straight on a tall throne, lowering his hand as he looked at his right hand.

He moved his right forefinger flexibly. He crooked his finger, then straightened it, then crooked it again. Around him, his trusted subordinates all clearly saw the eighteen gray streams reaching in from his fingernail like sharp steel needles, almost covering half of his forefinger.

Different powers could be sensed from the eighteen gray streams, cold as ice, scorching as fire, sharp as blade, or with a sticky, pure scent of blood. Blood Crown curiously observed the eighteen gray

streams in his finger. From time to time, he raised his hand and carefully sniffed the grayness.

"A very powerful being." After a long while, Blood Crown flicked his finger. A golden light erupted from his finger. The eighteen gray streams vibrated intensely within the golden light, letting out shrill buzzing noises.

Hearing the strange buzzing noises, thousands of Blood Crown's trusted subordinates slightly frowned. In shock, they looked at the eighteen gray streams vibrating and struggling inside Blood Crown's finger. Those were just thin wisps of lingering power, yet, Holy Blood Crown spent such an effort to dispel them.

It took Blood Crown seven to eight minutes to completely purity the eighteen gray streams in his finger. As he flicked his right forefinger, a complicated pattern flashed across it.

Narrowing his eyes, Blood Crown carefully looked at the nail of this slightly abraded right forefinger, he shook his head in dissatisfaction. He took out a tiny golden blade from his sleeve and began cutting and polishing his fingernail with extra care.

Until the fingernail was perfectly clean and flawless again, and its curve radian finally satisfied him, Blood Crown nodded, then put the golden blade back into his sleeve and said, "A truly powerful being."

Pondering for a while, Blood Crown continued in a bland tone, "Just now, I reached out my finger through the soul of that traitor Dim Cloud, with less than one percent of my power...But, the one who stopped me only used less than one percent of his power as well. Which means, he is as powerful as me, or slightly weaker than me. He is a fearful being."

The group of his trusted subordinates exclaimed out loud. A Yu Clan man kneeled down on one knee and said loudly with a shocked face, "But supreme Holy Master, that is a barbaric great world. How can someone as powerful as you possibly exist there?"

Blood Crown gently lifted his forefinger and generated a strong force, holding the Yu Clan man up from the ground. While frowning, he pondered for another while, then nodded and said, "According to the information you collected from those lowly families, that great world was nearly conquered by the allied army of those lowly families. In this case, powerful beings at my level shouldn't be existing in that world indeed."

"Therefore, even with my wisdom, I cannot understand this." Frowning again, Blood Crown asked himself, "The one who stopped me just now, even if he was much weaker than I estimated, even if he were merely thirty percent as powerful as me, he would be able to wipe out the allied force of those lowly families all by himself, right?"

Snorting coldly, he continued murmuring to himself, "Based on all the information we have collected in the recent century, after a comprehensive analysis, we now know that those lowly families had grown about a hundred times more powerful than before, in the recent few decades...And at present, that living being is able to wipe out all those lowly families."

Shaking his head, he carried on with doubt, "Which means, back then, before those lowly families attained the resources from that great world, when they were still the lowest poor beings, facing this powerful one, their allied force should have collapsed after the first blow!"

Gently patting his knees, Blood Crown looked at his trusted subordinates in confusion and said, "What puzzles me is that since such a powerful being existed in Pan Gu world, why were those lowly families able to put down roots in Pan Gu world back then? This is definitely... unreasonable."

No other sound could be heard from the hall for quite a long while, until a white-haired Xiu Clan man, who seemed to be extremely old, tremblingly walked out, politely bowed to Blood Crown, and said, "Supreme Holy Master!"

Looking at this Xiu Clan old man, Blood Crown slightly lifted his body from the throne, and smilingly reached out his hands towards this Xiu Clan old man. A gentle yet strong power supported the Xiu Clan old man and stopped him from bowing to him. "Ah, our elder of wisdom, how many times I've told you that you are my elder. Facing you, even I have to show enough respect. You don't need to bow to me. This is your special right..." Said Blood Crowl.

Smiling warmly, Blood Crown asked the Xiu Clan old man with a gentle tone, "Dear elder of wisdom, what do you have in mind?"

The elder of wisdom raised his head. His five eyes sparkled with the light of wisdom, which was too bright to look at directly. "Such cases did happen in the processes of conquering the other worlds. During the conquering of one-hundred and ninety-seven worlds, the armies under the leadership of three holy masters encountered similar situations. The results were the death of the three holy masters."

Blood Crown's expression turned especially serious as he asked, "Is this a trap? Did Pan Gu world people set a trap for us many years ago?"

The elder of wisdom slowly nodded and said, "It may not be a trap. It may be because of some conflicts among themselves. But anyhow, a powerful being in Pan Gu world is able to survive a strike from you, and can cause harm to a supreme being like you. Therefore, our operational plan has to be changed modestly."

Turning around, the elder of wisdom pointed at the void divine mirror and said in a deep voice, "Pan Heng world is the nearest world to Pan Gu world. Those lowly families spent years of efforts, but still failed to conquer Pan Heng world. To be on the safe side, we should conquer Pan Heng word first, use it as our bridgehead, then try to launch an all-out offensive on Pan Gu world!"

Blood Crown raised his eyebrows, gave a bright smile, and

responded, "Great! That's what we will do then."

Chapter 1531: Powerful Human Beings

Busy, busy, very busy...

Having escaped from all the trivial but complicated tasks in the heaven, Ji Hao dove into the alliance of humankind and non-humankind, and started all kinds of important tasks regarding the joint operation in the future. Entrusted by Emperor Shun, Ji How now served as the special envoy of the humankind, and was responsible for building the allied force of the humankind and the non-humankind.

Even Emperor Xuanyuan and Emperor Shennong praised Emperor Shun for using Human Resources smartly.

After all, most of human leaders were simple and honest, and the few less honest clan leaders and elders were obsessed with seeking benefits for their own clans and families. No one dared to put these people together with the non-humankind.

Ji Hao was special. He had nothing to do with 'honesty'. On the contrary, he was even greedier, sneakier, more calculative, and shameless than non-humankind beings. He was so different from ordinary human beings, and he was a pure dark-minded badass.

Nevertheless, this dark-minded boy had the entire humankind in his heart. Everything he had done, he didn't do it for himself, but for the future of the whole humankind. Not to mention how many contributions he had made for the humankind, judging merely by the worlds' edict he attained, one would know how much he had given to the humankind.

Only by appointing such a selfless but extremely dark-minded and shameless human being as the special envoy of humankind, and letting him build the allied force of the humankind and non-humankind, could the non-humankind from Yu Clan be drained by the humankind. Ji Hao would force them to give whatever they had, and try their best to strengthen the humankind!

Indeed, in Ji Hao and Si Wen Ming's plan for building the allied force, those emotional non-humankind beings who were mortally afraid of death and could betray the alliance at any moment were not included.

Without a doubt, human warriors would be the main force fighting against Blood Crown's army in the future. The only thing Yu Dynasty nobles could do was dedicating all resources, wealth, and knowledge they had to arm every human warrior to the teeth, and to improve the human civilization as much as possible, to face the powerful enemies.

Therefore, every single day, Ji Hao would lead a giant group of beast-like subordinates, violently breaking into the castles and mansions of Yu Dynasty nobles, and mercilessly registering everything they had, squeezing out their last penny.

Ji Hao took away all strong armors and high-quality weapons passed down from their ancestors, then rewarded this top-grade equipment, which were made with peak-level techniques, to brave and skillful human warriors.

Flying forts and flying mountains with amazing defensive powers, and divine towers of all size, were all registered by Ji Hao as well, becoming the armaments of the allied force, strictly guarded by Ji Hao's warriors.

The twelve families in power, their treasuries, factories, workshops, mines, all valuable resources they had, had been taken over by Ji Hao.

All dark-kind slave warriors and non-humankind slaves were turned into miners, replacing all the human slaves in the dark mine tunnels. They mined day and night for all kinds of valuable resources. Dense clouds of smoke had been rising from every factory and workshop in Liang Zhu City. All vacations of all Xiu Clan craftsmen were canceled; supervised by heavily armed human warriors, they worked as hard as they could to produce

armaments.

Armors, spears, blades, bows, large-scale weapons, all kinds of armaments had been flowing down from Xiu Clan craftsmen' workbenches like water streams. These armaments,, which were of way higher quality than the ones produced by human beings, had been distributed to human warriors, arming more and more elite troops.

Bit by bit, Ji Hao was draining the non-humankind, turning everything they had into nourishment for the humankind.

Facing Ji Hao's almost shameless working style, at first, the twelve emperors in power were careless. But soon, they were nervous; next, they were angry, and at last, they were deeply confused. Why did Ji Hao seem to take away all they had?

However, all the questions, the anger, and protests from the non-humankind were gone under Ji Hao's fists.

Ji Hao had shown his attitude clearly, 'You begged us to help, and we will risk our lives for you. So, shut up and give all you can give!'

'Give us everything you have, and we can still be allies, even brothers and sisters; everyone will be fine.'

'But, if you don't, I will go to your homes and take all you have myself. Of course, the process might be a little rude, violent, bloody, but that would be because of your unwillingness to cooperate, right?'

Ji Hao had set the tone, that anyone who dared to break the harmony between the humankind and the non-humankind, and hinder this perfect situation of everyone facing the powerful enemy together, was a mole from Blood Crown's side. Reasonably, a mole's families would all be executed or enslaved, and a mole's properties would be handed over to the alliance.

Ji Hao had been extremely rude and peremptory to the non-humankind. Added with Fan Hai's selfless cooperation, people

from the twelve families in power cried almost every day. Under the leadership of the twelve families in power, people from all large or small families were even about to sell their pants for money.

Speaking of Fan Hai, this non-humankind being who worked with corpses, souls, and all the other negative energies all year round, had nearly become a 'traitor' of Yu Dynasty. On his own initiative, he sold many secrets of Yu Dynasty to Ji Hao, including a great number of their backup plans.

He had already made up his mind, that he wanted all the others to be as miserable as he was. Therefore, he sold Ji Hao everything he knew about the twelve families in power. He gave Ji Hao all the valuable information. As a consequence, not a single non-humankind family managed to keep anything valuable for themselves when facing Ji Hao.

The other emperors in power and power elders were the ones to blame for this. Back in Dim Cloud's cell, Ji Hao asked Netherworld Priest to save Fan Hai, while all the other non-humankind beings chose to watch him die!

Fan Hai was infuriated. Plus, he had already given all he had to Netherworld Priest, just for survival. He had no reason to stop. Therefore, he became Ji Hao's most determined ally from Yu Clan, and without hesitation, he shared everything he knew with Ji Hao.

With Fan Hai's help, Ji Hao efficiently emptied all non-humankind beings' pockets, and built an unprecedentedly strong army.

The advanced productivity and nearly inexhaustible resources for production played important roles. Ji Hao even started to forge giant armors for Kuafu Family warriors and Longbo Country warriors, who were enormous in shape.

The resources in Ji Hao's hands were rich enough for him to waste luxuriously. One could easily imagine how much he had

gained from the non-humankind.

Time flew, as Ji Hao tried his utmost to strengthen the entire humankind.

This day, someone told Ji Hao that strangely, the twelve navigation marks which used to be portal-base formations, seemed to have changed.

Chapter 1532: Yawing

High up in the air, a group of Gold Crow warriors with gorgeous golden feathers flew across the sky while cawing brightly.

Flying side by side with those Gold Crow warriors were hundreds of metal plates which belonged to Jia Clan warriors. Dim blue electric light sizzled on the metal plates, while thousands of shrimp and crab warriors trod on them, followed Gold Crow warriors on patrol.

On the ground, Gold Crows in their scrawny human shapes were wearing long golden robes, carrying long spears and strong bows while walking on the streets and alleys in Liang Zhu City. Their heads were held high, and chests puffed out. They had learned to follow the military rules, that when walking on the ground, they wouldn't caw like the ones flying in the sky anymore.

They moved in perfectly ordered lines and were armed to the teeth, looking exactly like an elite force.

Following behind every Gold Crow patrol troop was a large number of secondary warriors. Some of them were elite water-kind warriors from the dragon-kind, some were flying warriors from the phoenix-kind, while some were stone men, treemen, jungle spirits, and other spirit creatures. Every day and night, elite warriors from all species would be on patrol in every corner of Liang Zhu City, making this non-humankind capital city 'their own'.

All important areas in Liang Zhu City were guarded by Longbo Country people and Kuafu Family people, who were enormous and fierce-looking.

These giants tried their best to shrink their bodies, but still, they were miles tall. By merely standing on the ground, these giants could make all non-humankind beings hold their breath, without daring to make any undesirable moves.

A slight movement of Longbo Country people would quake the earth, startle all non-humankind families in the surroundings, and make countless non-humankind children scream and run.

In the city, next to a bright beam of light which reached straight into the sky, the eleven emperors other than Fan Hai stood on a tall tower, coldly looking at the city. A long while later, Yemo Luoye started a conversation with a low voice, in anger, "Is this still our Liang Zhu City? All warriors, all guards are theirs! Is this still the city built by our ancestors with generations of severe efforts?"

No one said a word. After another long while, Piji Nu responded with a dry voice, "It's good though. They have taken so much away from us, so once that great being descends, they should rush up... and fight!"

Laughing hollowly, Piji Nu pointed at a group of Gold Crow warriors flying across the sky and continued, "Look, if we see them as our warriors, think about it... We have so many elite warriors. Actually...It's not bad if you think this way, right?"

Yemo Luoye threw a sideway scornful glance at Piji Nu and said, "Piji Nu, are you still a man?"

Piji Nu raised his eyebrows smilingly, then deeply bowed to Yemo Luoye and said, "Beautiful Emperor Yemo Luoye, witnessed by the supreme, great Red Sun, of course, I am a pure Yu Clan man! If you don't believe me, I can offer you a chance to prove it yourself!"

Yemo Luoye dropped her face and opened her erect eye, seeming ready to give Piji Nu a beating.

"Enough!" Polo Jia snorted blandly, "Fan Hai is here. Be careful about what you say and what you do."

Yemo Luoye immediately closed her erect eye, turned around, and glanced at Fan Hai, who walked over with a large group of people. Disgustedly, she sneered and said, "What a damnable man.

He has, actually, willingly become a dog of Ji Hao!"

"He is such a humiliation to the Yu Clan." Piji Nu crossed his arms before his chest and said proudly, "He should kill himself to wash off the shame he brought to the entire Nether Moon with his blood."

"But, it's a good thing for him to be here." Polo Jia said mildly, "He can be our representative to cooperate with the humankind on behalf of us. When human beings are about to fail...when human beings need help...according to the agreement, one of us would have to do something. To be honest, I don't want to go against a great, a fearful holy being."

Hearing him, the expressions of all the others changed simultaneously. Soon, with warmly grinning faces, they leaped down from the top of the tower and ebulliently walked to Ji Hao, who followed behind Fan Hai.

Yemo Luoye rushed up to Ji Hao ahead of everyone else, bringing up a nice scented, warm gust of wind. Charmingly, she leered at Ji Hao and said, "Dear Emperor Ji Hao, you see, we know that you've been extra busy these days. If not for an important matter, we wouldn't dare to interrupt you! But for what's happening now, we can only talk to you."

As a female, Yemo Luoye was good at using her 'natural weapon'. She looked at Ji Hao with her gently sparkling eyes, and her three beautiful eyes were filled with a strong warmth. Without knowing all the background stories, one might think that she was a huge fan of Ji Hao, and eagerly wanted to send herself into his bedroom.

Since he had been looting Yu Clan families and making all Yu Clan people cry in the past few months, Ji Hao was clearly aware of the awful impression that these non-humankind emperors had about him. He cawed to laugh, but when he heard himself, he hurriedly cleared his throat, grouchily glanced at Mr. Crow, who stood beside him, then laughed again with a normal voice.

Innocently, Mr. Crow popped out his eyes towards Ji Hao. Indeed, Ji Hao always cawed to laugh lately, but that had nothing to do with Mr. Crow. Mr. Crow raised his head and looked at the Gold Crow warriors flying all over the sky. That was all these kids' fault!

"Emperors, since you all know that I am busy, let's not waste time. What change happened to those portal-base formations which are being used by our enemies as navigation marks now? Can we destroy them now?"

Ji Hao asked urgently, "If we can break the formations now, will Blood Crown get lost in the boundless Chaos?"

The group of emperor looked at Ji Hao in confusion. Clearly, they couldn't answer Ji Hao's question.

A white-haired Xiu Clan old man split the crowd and walked over. He glanced at Ji Hao from head to toe, showing a faint anger, then said blandly, "According to our analysis, if we didn't miscalculate, the twelve formations are affected by an outside force. Instead of guiding the enemies to Pan Gu world, they are now pointing at Pan Heng world, the nearest world from Pan Gu world."

"Eh? Pan Heng world?" Ji Hao looked at the Xiu Clan old man with curiosity.

"To us, it 's not a strange world. We Flow Moon people are even... quite familiar with it." Polo Jia rubbed his nose embarrassedly, smiled to Ji Hao, and said, "Pan Heng world, hmm, how should we say this? My family discovered it twenty-thousand years ago, but we didn't conquer it successfully. We took losses, but failed to earn the profits we deserved."

Helplessly spreading his hands, Polo Jia continued with a smile of self-mockery, "After all, we Flow Moon people aren't good at fighting, and our family elders weren't willing to hire strong fighting force. According to our law, the mercenary fighting force

will take away a large portion of profit from us, so of course, we couldn't afford that."

Polo Jia shrugged and took out a three-feet-squared jade turtle shell, then said, "But, we've already found out the approximate location of Pan Heng world. We have a deep, deep understanding of this world."

Chapter 1533: The Negotiation Between Worlds

The straight beam of light reached into the sky from the portal-base foundation, creating a giant swirl in the clouds.

Occasionally, the light beam would quake slightly, causing a muffled, thunder-like noise, while space spell symbols would sparkle inside the light beam. This happened because an outside force had been adjusting the formation, allowing it to point at Pan Heng world.

Ji Hao reached out his hand to touch the light beam.

Standing behind him, Piji Nu, Yemo Luoye and the other non-humankind emperors all smiled evilly and gloatingly, while Fan Hai exclaimed out loud, "Your Majesty, please, do not touch these space navigation arks. They are connected with the whole..."

Hearing Fan Hai's scream, Ji Hao slowly reached his hands into the light beam. Deafening popping noise could be heard without an end, while hair like space cracks emerged around his palm. The entire formation began shaking slightly, and so did the ground.

"Ah...Ah!" Piji Nu and the others stared at Ji Hao in shock, "His body is made from what?"

Polo fixed his dazzling eyes on Ji Hao and said, "Such a strong body. Is this because of the natural will of Pan Gu world? No, not just that. It's because he is way too strong. I remember, when he was still a Divine Magus, he defeated Yemo Shayi...His physical body is so very strong, but he is a human being, not a dragon!"

Lowering his eyes and fiddling with the turtle shell, which recorded the location of Pan Heng world, Polo Jia murmured to himself with a low voice, "I truly want to study his muscles, his blood... So amazing! Is he a mix-blood descendant of a dragon and a human being? Did some mutations happen to him that made him

even stronger than pure-blood dragons? But based on the information we have..."

Shaking his head, Polo Jia wasn't trying to hide his curiosity to Ji Hao at all.

Yemo Luoye looked at Ji Hao. Her face blushed as her eyes grew wider, and lips opened subconsciously. Ji Hao had such a strong body, which allowed him to withstand the power of a space navigation mark generated from a portal-base formation. Great Dark Sun! What a strong body! And, he was so handsome, much better than those girly Yu Clan nobles!

Especially the erect eye of Dao between his eyebrows...He had three eyes, perfectly fitting Yemo Luoye's aesthetic requirements. A drop of drool glistened from Yemo Luoye's mouth corner as she glanced at Ji Hao in a complicated way. No one knew what she was thinking.

"Pan Gu Motherland is formed, and the circulation of natural powers has changed." Ji Hao took back his hand, which had turned slightly red under the effect of the light beam, and blandly, "These twelve portal-base formations were under the protection of the water power from the twelve water worlds, and were unbreakable. But now, there is a glimmer of possibility for them to be destroyed."

Raising his head, Ji Hao looked at the twelve giant cracks in the sky. Through the twelve giant cracks, Pan Gu world was devouring the twelve water worlds. Before Pan Gu world finished its banquet, the twelve cracks wouldn't disappear.

Because of the twelve water worlds, these portal-base formations were especially sturdy, and were indestructible. However, Si Wen Ming completed the All Streams to the Final Land great formation, and forcibly drew the four wastelands to meet Midland and form Pan Gu Motherland. This did not only bring Si Wen Ming and Ji Hao an immeasurable amount of natural rewards power, but also,

thoroughly changed the circulation of the natural powers in Pan Gu world.

Because of the massive change, the twelve space navigation mark formation, which was under the protection of the twelve worlds, was shaken, and was no longer unbreakable.

"Breaking them will cause no change." Said Polo Jia, "Since they are able to adjust the space navigation mark and chose to land in Pan Heng world the first, they must have approached Pan Gu world and the surrounding great worlds already."

Spreading his hands, Polo Jia continued with a dry voice, "Pan Yu world people are experienced in conquering worlds. As long as they have approached, they will find their target. Therefore, it's meaningless for us to break these space marks now."

Ji Hao slowly nodded. Frowning, he tried to figure out the reason why Blood Crown decided to go to Pan Heng world the first.

Was it because of Netherworld Priest? Earlier, Netherworld Priest stopped him from killing Fan Hai, which allowed Blood Crown to reestimate the 'true power' of Pan Gu world. Perhaps, because the power Netherworld Priest had shown, Blood Crown dared not to directly invade Pan Gu world, and instead, planned to use Pan Heng world as a springboard, and invade Pan Gu world with his full power once he figured out exactly how powerful Pan Gu world was.

It seemed that unintentionally, Ji Hao had done a good job. As long as Blood Crown did not come to Pan Gu world directly, things would be a lot easier.

"Give the alliance all the information you collected about Pan Heng world. I will discuss with Emperor Shun and the others about how should we use this new change." Taking over the turtle shell from Polo Jia, Ji Hao said in a deep voice.

Glancing at Polo Jia's sulky face, Ji Hao laughed, "Is Pan Heng

world strong?"

Polo Jia grinned, rubbed his fingers, and responded, "Perhaps, it's because we Flow Moon people are really not good at fighting. But of course, local people in that world should not be underestimated. Hm, that is a beautiful world, rich in magical herbs and plants. All the powerful beings in that world are..."

While speaking, Polo Jia glanced at an old tree man, who had a group of Gold Crow warriors squatting on his branches, and had been slowly walking across a street.

"I understand, a world with powerful, thriving plants?" Ji Hao nodded slowly and said, "Hmm...Will every world tend to explore the universe once it's strong enough?"

Polo Jia remained silent for a while, then nodded heavily, and said, "According to the records kept in our Flow Moon, yes. After all, the total amount of resources of a world is limited. Even though a growing great world can absorb the Chaos power to constantly strengthen itself, it won't be able to accommodate too many powerful beings."

"The resources of a world will eventually be consumed up, because as more and more powerful beings emerge in this world, the more resources they would need, and the longer they would live. At last, they would become immortal. The more immortal beings existed in a world, the more deficient would the life-force of this world be. Therefore, in order to replenish its own life-force, this world would have to seek for resources from other worlds."

Looking at Ji Hao with his deeply sunken eyes, Polo Jia continued, "Pan Gu world is so lucky. Near this world, so close from it, there are so many worlds for it to conquer, to devour. You can never imagine the war started by the top-grade beings in Pan Yu world, back in our 'prehistorical era', for resources. That war nearly destroyed the world."

"I think I understand." Ji Hao nodded, pointed at Polo Jia, and

said, "Give the alliance all the information you have about Pan Heng world...I think, that world will be the main battleground for us against Blood Crown."

Remaining silent for a while, Ji Hao smiled to Polo Jia, and said, "Of course, if Polo Family is willing to contribute, as you should, from what we may gain from Pan Heng world, you will have a share. I always like to keep things fair."

Shermie's shouts could be heard from a distance away, telling Ji Hao that Si Wen Ming was looking for him.

Chapter 1534: I Want Nine Cauldrons

The Highest Conference Hall in Liang Zhu City...

This place used to belong to the highest, most powerful organization in Yu Dynasty. But at present, in this magnificent building, Gold Crow warriors had been running and flying everywhere.

In a smaller hall located next to the main hall, Ji Hao and Si Wen Ming sat comfortably on exquisitely carved pure golden chairs, tasting the top-grade tea of Yu Dynasty. The tea was from Pan Yu world, grown with a secret magic created by Xiu Clan masters.

A nice aroma spread in the air. A dense white mist slowly rose from the tea and filled the entire hall with the refreshing aroma. This was a great tea from Pan Yu world. The natural power contained in one tea leaf was as much as the amount contained in ten pieces of top-grade crystals. Only powerful beings like Ji Hao and Si Wen Ming could bear to drink a whole cup of tea made with a handful of tea leaves.

Normally, a Yu Clan noble would use one tea leaf each time, and take a few days to slowly absorb the natural powers contained in it. If they gulped this tea the same way as Ji Hao and Si Wen Ming did, their body would explode because of the excessive natural powers.

"Uncle, what did you want to tell me? Did...those people refuse to follow your orders again?" Ji Hao narrowed his eyes. A dangerous cold light flashed across those eyes as he continued, "If they are still playing tricks at this point of time, I can make them serve in the heaven with the orders of a divine emperor. Then, they will be thrown into the most dangerous places."

"It's not about them." Si Wen Ming blew away the white mist drifting upon his tea, then smilingly took a large sip. The pure natural powers exploded inside his body and brought a pleasant

sensation. "Nice tea." He grinned and said.

"Hmm, let's check the storeroom later. I think they still have thousands of kilograms of this tea. You should take half of it. It belonged to Yu Clan families anyway. If you can't drink that much, you can feed those to the horses!" Ji Hao laughed,like a prodigal son squandering the family fortune, "You haven't told me what did you come for."

It seemed that Si Wen Ming didn't come for anything urgent. Therefore, Ji Hao relaxed, pleasantly tasting this top-grade tea from another world. Nice, it was truly nice. Every time he took a sip of the tea, he could sense a slight improvement in his power. Even a pig would become a 'spirit creature king' if it drank this tea all year round.

Tasting the tea, Ji Hao began wondering that if these 'low-grade nobles' from Yu Dynasty were able to get such a good tea from Pan Yu world, what about Blood Crown?

Ceaselessly plundering resources from other worlds, nourishing themselves with the best resources, how many powerful beings like this, like Blood Crown, existed in Pan Yu world? And how powerful were they exactly? How many warriors did they have? How strong were those warriors?

Not to mention anyone else, a group of twelve Sun and Moon knights like Red Lei and Dim Cloud were able to summon Pan Yu and give Ji Hao a certain threat. How many groups of Sun and Moon knights existed in total? Ten? A hundred? Or even more?

Ji Hao seemed to be lost in his thought, and neither did Si Wen Ming talk. Holding his teacup, he stood up and walked to the large window, looking at the Gold Crow warriors flying in the sky through the giant crystal window.

After a long while, Ji Hao smiled and cleared his mind. Why should he think so much? There would always be a solution to a problem. No matter how powerful Blood Crown was, Pan Gu world

wasn't weak either, was it? Plus, Ji Hao already had prepared Netherworld Priest to fight against Blood Crown with his full power.

Also, Priest Mu had promised Ji Hao a full-power strike as well.

"Uncle, what is it?" Ji Hao walked to Si Wen Ming, also holding a teacup as he looked at the scenery outside. Other than Gold Crow warriors, Ji Hao also saw a large number of well-dressed non-humankind beings leisurely walking on streets, chatting and chuckling. This was also a 'strong' species, that no matter how many difficulties or dangers they had been through, their pursuits of 'romance' and coziness would never fade. Ji Hao suspected that even if one put blades against their necks, they would continue enjoying their lives while they still could.

"I want to forge a set of supreme treasure to guard our kind." Remaining silent for long, Si Wen Ming nodded seriously, and said, "I want to forge a set of after-world supreme treasures with natural reward, with my own hands, to pass on, and to guard the natural fortune of our humankind."

"The nine cauldrons?" The moment Ji Hao said this, he wanted to slap himself on the face.

"Hmm, we happen to hold the same view. Indeed, I plan to collect essence metals from all over the world, gather the powers of the world, and to forge nine cauldrons." Said Si Wen Ming with a slightly blushed face. An indescribable glow was emitting from his face.

"I plan to build a base with the nine cauldrons to replace Buzhou Mountain, which has already fallen apart. With the nine cauldrons, the world will be divided into nine provinces, and the earth meridians will meet in the nine cauldrons. We will build an unprecedented great formation to guard our kind. It won't be a work of nature. Instead, it will belong to the humankind — 'the Nine Provinces Ward'!" Si Wen Ming turned around, looked at Ji

Hao with his brightly shining eyes, and continued, "In the future, no powerful beings from other worlds or sky devils will be able to set one foot in the Nine Provinces Ward!"

Ji Hao looked at Si Wen Ming. With plain language, he could not describe his feeling about Si Wen Ming.

His All Streams to the Final Land great formation conquered the disastrous flood, and after that, it managed to pull the five continents in Pan Gu world together, making them merge into Pan Gu Mother Land. Now, he planned to build the nine cauldrons to replaced Buzhou Mountain, which had already collapsed. He planned to divide the world into nine provinces with the nine cauldrons, and gather the earth meridian power to create the Nine Province Ward, to allow human beings to live a safe life without a worry in the future.

Ji Hao had to admit that Si Wen Ming always had grandiose plans, that not even Ji Hao could easily follow.

"More importantly," holding the teacup, Si Wen Ming continued with his deep and strong voice, "many people have already begun cultivating themselves based on your soul cultivation method. I've been thinking about it shortly. I think the Magi Palace's current grading system can be more specific and accurate. In the future, the nine cauldrons can also serve as a measure to the powers of Magi."

"With spirit power..." Ji Hao looked at Si Wen Ming as his eyes sparkled.

"Let them lift the nine cauldrons with spirit power, then grade them according to the numbers of cauldrons that they managed to raise." Si Wen Ming said excitedly, "Nine is a number of extreme... As the cores of the nine provinces, the nine cauldrons will be connected with the earth meridians. Lifting one cauldron may not require a great power, but after that, to lift the second cauldron, one would be needing a ten times greater power, and the third

cauldron might cost a hundred times stronger power to be lifted... If a Magus can lift the nine cauldrons at one time with pure spirit power..."

Si Wen Ming raised his head, looked at the sky, and said, "His or her soul would be strong enough to absorb a natural star, and he or she would be able to become a Supreme Magus!"

"The one who can lift the nine cauldrons with his or her spirit power can be a Supreme Magus!" Si Wen Ming wielded his fist and asked, "Ji Hao, what do you think about this idea?"

Remaining silent for quite a while, Ji Hao also responded with a deep voice, "So, what do you want me to do? Help you forge the cauldrons?"

Si Wen Ming grinningly punched on Ji Hao's chest and said, "I need the pure positive power from the sun world to melt the metal essences from all over the world. I need the nine cauldrons to be forged by the strongest power in the world."

Shaking his head, Si Wen Ming smiled and continued, "But I am a mortal being, and cannot access the sun world. So, I came to ask you, a divine emperor, for help!"

Ji Hao pondered for another while, then laughed, "Perhaps, apart from the sun world, I can help you with even more."

Ji Hao triggered the five-colored cauldron in his lower abdomen with his mind. This time, the cauldron obediently drifted out of his palm.

Si Wen Ming stared at the cauldron, stunned, as if he had just seen a ghost in broad daylight.

Chapter 1535: All Souls Creation Cauldron

"This..." With difficulty, Si Wen Ming squeezed a word out of his gritted teeth. He sounded like a sleep talking man.

Abruptly, Si Wen Ming widely popped out his eyes and moved his arms. His arms left shreds of afterimages in the air, but without making even the slightest noise. As he swiftly changed his hand motions, dark-yellow light spots sparkled in the air while countless spell symbols flew out of his palms. Storm-like magic seals descended from all directions and sealed off the entire hall firmly.

"Uncle Wen Ming?" Ji Hao was startled by Si Wen Ming's crazy behavior.

Did this five-colored cauldron have a story? Why was Si Wen Ming so nervous?

Ji Hao had this cauldron inside his body for many years. This cauldron was able to automatically make high-grade magic treasures, devour sky devils, digest everything in the world, transform the Chaos power for Ji Hao to absorb. But apart from all these...

Ji Hao was shocked by his own thoughts. How amazing! Every single function of this cauldron could probably shake the world. Maybe because Ji Hao had been with it too long, and was already used to its existence, its unimaginable functions hardly ever shocked Ji Hao. However, in the eyes of the others, this cauldron was obviously a supreme treasure, especially the fact that it could trap and devour sky devils, turn them into the purest original soul power, then use the original soul power to improve the cultivation potential of a living being at a fundamental level.

With this cauldron, anyone with an ambition to start a sect would be able to turn his or her every trusted disciple into super talented ones like Po, Gui Ling and the other prehistorical creatures.

This cauldron could even decide the fate of a sect! It was a genuine supreme treasure!

Not to mention the fact that it could even digest holy-level sky devils. Holy-level sky devil was a nightmare, such that not even Priest Hua managed to free himself from a miserable situation caused by a holy-level sky devil. If Priest Mu and Priest Hua knew that Ji Hao had such a treasure, they would definitely rush to Ji Hao and shout 'this treasure is destined to be ours', even if they had to start a great war against Yu Yu for it.

"Uncle Wen Ming, do you recognize this treasure?" Ji Hao opened his mouth and asked with extra carefulness.

"Put it back, put it back, then we'll talk." Si Wen Ming's eye corners had been twitching intensely. Even though he had already built over a thousand layers of magic seals within a second with all of his powers, he was still cautiously looking around like a thief, in case anyone suddenly broke in and see the three-legged, round-shaped cauldron on Ji Hao's hand, which was glowing with a faint five-colored light.

Ji Hao immediately sent the cauldron back into his body. He cauldron transformed into a colorful stream of light, merged into his body, and floated in the middle of his lower belly.

"'All souls creation cauldron', this is the 'all souls creation cauldron'. Some people also call it 'Pan Gu all souls cauldron'." Si Wen Ming's eyes grew even wider as he stared at Ji Hao right in the eyes and growled, "Where did you get it? How can it be in your hands? Do you know where it was from?"

Ji Hao spread his hands. He truly didn't know the story about this cauldron.

But, it must be a big deal, as Si Wen Ming turned so serious the moment he saw it, right? Ji Hao had heard about Yu Yu's sword formation, and the seal made by Priest Guang Cheng, with the other half of Buzhou Mountain. He also knew about some other

famous top-grade supreme treasures in Pan Gu world. But 'all souls creation cauldron', or 'Pan Gu all souls cauldron', he had never ever heard of it in his current and previous life.

His strong spirit power was fully activated, with which, Ji Hao checked through all his current life and previous memories. He could tell for sure that he never heard of this treasure, because nothing about it was left in his memories.

Si Wen Ming took a deep breath. He pointed at Ji Hao's nose and abruptly laughed. Next, he raised both arms and released two streams of mist from his sleeves, in the colors of black and white. The mist streams rolled out from his sleeves and wove into a large Taiji diagram, which sealed off the hall.

"I was truly dumbfounded by that treasure you took out just now. No matter how powerful my magic seals are, they stay at the level of Divine Magi, but this He Tu and Luo Shu great formation is different. Not even five Supreme Magi with combined powers can hear us through this formation."

He slowly let out a long breath he took just now, then looked at Ji Hao, shaking his head and giving a bitter smile. "I was shocked so badly, which is reasonable though. Nothing about this treasure can be found from the records keeping by the humankind. Its story has only been passed down from generations of human emperors and leaders of super families with especially long histories, from mouth to mouth."

While cupping his hands into the shape of a small cauldron, Si Wen Ming was shaking his head and continuing, "No other treasure in the world has its colorful glow, and it's a three-legged cauldron. Therefore, anyone knows about it will be able to recognize it at the first glance."

"Is it important?" Ji Hao looked at Si Wen Ming curiously.

"It's the lifeblood of Pan Gu world!" Si Wen Ming looked at Ji Hao from head to toe, eyes wide open without blinking. "This treasure

shouldn't...show up...It shouldn't be in your hands either. But, it is in your hands. This, this, this is all wrong, isn't this...?"

Shaking his head again, Si Wen Ming glanced at the sky through the crystal window in awe and veneration, then subconsciously lowered his voice and continued, "Do you know how many living beings exist in Pan Gu world?"

Ji Hao blinked and shook his head quickly.

"Then, do you think more living beings existed in the ancient time than nowadays, or more living beings exist nowadays than the ancient time?" Si Wen Ming asked another question.

"Of course...more living beings now...right?" Ji Hao pondered shortly, then seriously answered Si Wen Ming's question. Back in the ancient time, the environment was harsh, and ancient creatures never stopped killing and eating each other. Imaginably, ancient creatures had lived difficult lives, and naturally, the total number of living beings back then should way smaller than now.

"You're right. The number of contemporary living beings is more than hundred-million times larger than the ancient number." Said Si Wen Ming urgently, "So, do you know that all living beings have souls? Human beings, dragons, phoenixes, and those little animals, like bugs, fishes, ants, even trees, flowers, grasses, every living being has a soul. Do you know this?"

"Even plants have souls?" Ji Hao exclaimed out loud, but then, he slapped on his forehead and murmured, "I get it, if plants don't have souls, how could Treeman and his brothers even exist? Hehe, I didn't think of that."

"Every living being has a soul. But much more living beings exist nowadays than in the ancient time. Till now, the total number of Pan Gu world living beings have soared, then where did all those new souls come from?"

"Do you mean...?" Ji Hao widely opened his mouth. Hearing Si

Wen Ming, he was shocked too.

If the Pan Gu all souls cauldron created the souls of all Pan Gu world living beings, indeed, it could be counted as the lifeblood of Pan Gu world.

Souls, souls, no one knew how precious souls were than Ji Hao did. After all, he was a cultivator with a strong embryo of Dao!

All souls creation cauldron, it was the origin of every soul in Pan Gu world!

Ji Hao suddenly wanted to cry. How on earth did he get such a hot-potato-like treasure, and why would he carry it inside himself for so many years?

Chapter 1536: Formulate A Plan

For some things, when people who knew them felt that no more people should know, these things would become secrets. Over time, fewer and fewer people would know about these secrets. When memories faded with the flying time, secrets would become rumors.

One day, with the time moving on, rumors would become stories, and eventually legends.

Fortunately, quite a few experienced ones still existed among human beings, and neither was the emperor ever absent from the history of the humankind. Si Wen Ming patiently and detailedly told Ji Hao about the story of the all souls creation cauldron.

After that, Ji Hao understood the reason why the cauldron was a secret that only a very few people knew about. It was way too important, related to too many things and people. Ancient powerful human beings turned the cauldron into a secret, and Ji Hao couldn't agree more to that. Some secrets should remain secrets forever.

Saint Pan Gu created the world, but fell under the attacks from hundreds of millions of Chaos monsters. The dragon ancestor was generated from Saint Pan Gu's body, the phoenix ancestor flew out of Saint Pan Gu's powerful soul, and from Saint Pan Gu's blood, which was shed all over the world, human beings were created.

As the core of Saint Pan Gu's soul, his original soul, which recorded all his understanding about the great Dao, split up into three, it merged with the tremendous natural rewards power for creating the world and formed three living beings. Speaking of this, Si Wen Ming gave Ji Hao a meaningful glance. Instantly, Ji Hao figured out that the three living beings generated from Saint Pan Gu's original souls were his Shifu, Yu Yu, and Yu Yu's two brothers.

All the other living beings in Pan Gu world were generated from the remaining parts of Saint Pan Gu's body. His skull absorbed his natural rewards power and became a three-legged, round-shaped cauldron. Even more magically, after the phoenix ancestor was generated from Saint Pan Gu's soul and his original soul split into three, an extremely pure trace of his essence soul didn't fade.

Maybe because of an unfinished wish of Saint Pan Gu, or some other reasons, the slight trace of essence soul merged with the cauldron, which used to be Saint Pan Gu's soul. The essence soul became a flame, burning in the all souls creation cauldron like a pre-world seed of souls.

Since then, the cauldron was able to absorb the Chaos power and transform it into pure soul power, then condense the soul power into actual souls. During the past countless centuries, the cauldron had been producing pure new souls, sending the new souls into the Netherworld for reincarnation. With all these new souls, the living beings in Pan Gu world had been developing thrivingly, growing stronger and stronger.

Astonishingly, a shadow of Saint Pan Gu's original soul existed in the slight trace of essence soul. It was merely a shadow, hazy and blur, like a flower's reflection in the mirror or the moon's shadow on the water. However, it gave the cauldron a mark of Saint Pan Gu's great Dao, not the entire great Dao, but five to six percent. Earlier, the cauldron absorbed Saint Pan Gu's natural rewards power for creating the world, and added with the mark of Saint Pan Gu's great Dao, the cauldron developed an unimaginably magical function — With enough materials, it could automatically copy all treasures from Pan Gu world.

Every treasure that existed in Pan Gu world was undoubtedly a piece of the great Dao of Pan Gu world, or a mark of it. All in all, all treasures in this world were created based on Saint Pan Gu's understanding about the great Dao. Therefore, apart from 'all souls', this cauldron also had 'creation' as a part of its name.

More importantly, as the origin of all new souls in Pan Gu world, this cauldron had a tight connection with the operation of the great Dao of Pan Gu world. In an easy-to-understand way, the owner of this cauldron would be able largely affect the operation of Pan Gu world's great Dao, and would always be supported by the great Dao of nature. Whatever he did, he would get twice the result with half the effort.

"Its first owner was..." Ji Hao looked at Si Wen Ming curiously.

"He, hehe," Si Wen Ming quickly blinked his eyes and said, "I can't say, and dare not to. That is a bad-tempered one...Hm, I never heard about the change of the all souls creation cauldron's owner, but now you have it, which means, you are chosen by its original owner, and the original owner wants to borrow your power to achieve a purpose."

Si Wen Ming abruptly slapped his own forehead and stared at Ji Hao, eyes and mouth wide open, as if he was suddenly enlightened.

No wonder Ji Hao had been improving so fast, no wonder he was promoted to divine emperor by his natural rewards power, with a world's edict!

No wonder, no wonder! With the all souls creation cauldron, any unbelievable thing happened to Ji Hao now seemed completely reasonable. With the support of the cauldron's original owner, and Yu Yu as his Shifu, who would Ji Hao ever be afraid of?

"Fortunately, three months ago, Emperor Shun and I talked all night. He told me everything that I should know in the future. Otherwise, I wouldn't have been able to recognize this treasure... My You Chong Clan is indeed a branch of You Xiong Clan, but still, we are not qualified to know these secrets."

Rubbing his hands, Si Wen Ming looked at Ji Hao with a bitter face and said, "Now, here is a thing. The sun world won't be a problem, neither will the essence metals from all over the world. The only problem is, if I forge the nine cauldrons with this all souls

creation cauldron, without a doubt, the nine cauldrons would come out with an incredible quality, and might even be comparable to those legendary supreme treasures...But, the all souls creation cauldron is way too eye-catching." Si Wen Ming looked at Ji Hao with that bitter face and continued, "But if we don't use it, you have already shown it to me..."

It was the all souls creation cauldron, which had Saint Pan Gu's natural rewards power for creating the world, and contained all Saint Pan Gu's understanding about the great Dao. Si Wen Ming couldn't even imagine how powerful would the nine cauldrons be if they were forged by this treasure."

However, after talking with Emperor Shun through one whole night, Si Wen Ming learned a lot of secrets that he could not reach, and gained a deeper understanding of Pan Gu world.

Si Wen Ming dared not to use the all souls cauldron.

No one in the world dared to offend the cauldron's original owner. Facing her power, and the power of the cauldron, not a single living being in Pan Gu world ever had the courage to even think about forcibly taking it from her.

But, if the cauldron were in Si Wen Ming's hands...

Si Wen Ming even worried that once anyone heard a word about it, his You Chong Clan would be wiped out entirely in a night, without leaving any slight trace.

Si Wen Ming had no fear, but he had to be responsible for his clansmen. He could not put his clansmen in danger for his own success, especially now. He was a special human being now, and could affect the entire humankind.

"I really, really, really want to use it to forge the nine cauldrons." Si Wen Ming gave a long sigh, "But, it's hard, so, so hard...You have no idea that, in this world, some people, some things, are too terrifying."

"We may figure out a way, no?" Ji Hao frowned and pondered for a while, then abruptly clapped his hands and burst into laughter.

Putting his mouth near Si Wen Ming's ear, Ji Hao whispered a few words.

He told Si Wen Ming something about 'Pan Heng'...

Chapter 1537: In A Big Way

'Dong'!

The deep, strong ring of Pan Gu bell broke the quietness of Pu Ban City in the morning, sounding from the core of everyone's soul.

In the east, the sky started to be illuminated. The golden sunlight covered the entire city, while countless Gold Crow warriors transformed into their human shapes, wearing sun crystal golden armors, holding sun crystal long spears, and their bodies burning in raging golden fires. Heads raised high, chests puffed out, these Gold Crow warriors trod on golden fiery clouds while cawing thunderously.

For the very first time, the 'crow caw concerto', which had become the worst nightmare of countless Fire Crow Clan children, now echoed through the Pu Ban City.

The Pu Ban City was stirred. People walked out of their houses, stunned, looking at all the Gold Crow warriors standing in the sky in perfect lines.

A giant number of Gold Crow warriors arrayed in the sky. Their goldenness filled everyone's line of sight. The golden Gold Crow fire burned the entire sky gold, its great heat dispelling the thin mist coiling on branches or in bushes.

"Under Emperor Shun's order, all marquises and earls should now head to the Town Hall to attend an important meeting." Cawing for a while, Gold Crow warriors shouted out what Ji Hao told him to shout in chorus.

Their sharp yet hoarse voices quaked the earth and the mountains. All people who had access to the Town Hall heard them. Many of them angrily rolled up their sleeves, rushing to the Town Hall with large groups of subordinates, while complaining.

It was so early in the morning that many people hadn't even wake up from their sweet dreams yet. Who could tolerate such a sudden earth-shaking noise?

But soon, some people realized that according to the news that came from their scouts in Liang Zhu City, these golden, shining 'spirit crows' weren't wild creatures. Instead, they were the new divine emperor, Ji Hao's reliable warriors, and they used to be the flying battle beasts of Gold Crow Clan, which was once known as Fire Crow Clan, a small Southern Wasteland clan where Ji Hao was born in.

According to the stories, which were told secretly by some knowledgeable elders, these Gold Crows used to be weak fire crows which could barely reach the level of Senior Magi. But, some people had activated their Gold Crow bloodline, and turned them into incredibly strong three-legged Gold Crows.

Some elders from the clans or families which existed since the prehistorical era, such as Candle Dragon Clan, Tao Tie Clan, and White Tiger Clan, knew pretty much everything about Gold Crows. In surprise, they told their people that these Gold Crows under Ji Hao's command were pure-blood, and totally different from those mix-blood crows which luckily attained a thin Gold Crow bloodline.

Indeed, these Gold Crows under Ji Hao's command weren't strong enough yet, but their bloodline was pure. With enough time to grow, they would bring the frightful power of the ancient Gold Crows back to this world!

More importantly, the family of ancient Gold Crow had a small population, but how many Gold Crows, which were transformed from fire crows, were under Ji Hao's command now? When Ji Hao's Gold Crow army grew mature, perhaps, not a single human clan or family would be able to have a force to rival it! Not to mention the fact that Ji Hao was a divine emperor now. The heaven owned countless powerful treasures, which meant Ji Hao

could arm his Gold Crow army with any divine treasure, such as an ancient divine formation, to crush an army from the mortal world.

Thinking of all these, those complaining marquises and earls suddenly woke up. Heads covered in cold sweat, they looked at those Gold Crow warriors that stood motionlessly in the sky, frowning as they slowed down on their way to the Town Hall.

Soon, quite a number of messengers secretly left Pu Ban City with urgent letters in all directions like phantoms. These messengers who showed up in public were just distractions, as the real important messages had been delivered through the small-scale teleporting formations or special communicating formations built by large human families and clans.

They had to know Ji Hao again, to redeclare the relationship between Ji Hao and their families, and to discuss their attitudes towards Ji Hao.

A divine emperor...As a title, 'divine emperor' could not scare people. But, if this divine emperor also had a reliable army, people would see him as a genuine divine emperor, and his words would be inviolable.

In the Town Hall, Emperor Shun sat in the middle, on a tall throne. An especially strong star power had already begun spreading from his body. Waves of natural star power surged out of his body like a tsunami, while the splendid starlight swirled the space about fifty-meters in radius around him. Because of the energy waves releasing from Emperor Shun's body, the entire Town Hall was slowly shaking.

Anyone who knew about Supreme Magi would know at first glance that Emperor Shun had already started absorbing his chosen natural star.

Once he completely absorbed the star, he would become an immortal Supreme Magus. According to the rule which had been followed for countless years by human beings, an immortal

Supreme Magus couldn't be the human emperor.

Therefore, before long, Emperor Shun would have to abdicate, and with a ninety-nine percent chance, Si Wen Ming, who now sat by the left side of Emperor Shun, would succeed to the throne.

Si Wen Ming sat on his heels on Emperor Shun's left side solemnly. He carefully kept a distance away from Emperor Shun, to not let himself touch the scary star power releasing from Emperor Shun's body. Sitting behind Si Wen Ming were the leaders, elders, and princes from tens of large clans and families, and a large group of greatly influential marquises and earls.

More importantly, Ji Hao sat by the right side of Si Wen Ming.

Ji Hao was wearing a robe which he found from a storeroom in the heaven, and belonged to East Emperor Taiyi. He sat straight next to Si Wen Ming, with his entire body glowing like a small sun.

People who walked into the Town Hall understood Ji Hao's attitude the moment they saw him. As the only reigning divine emperor in Pan Gu world, Ji Hao was Si Wen Ming's unshaken supporter. On behalf of the heaven, Ji Hao supported Si Wen Ming, and was willing to help him ascend to the throne.

People walked into the Town Hall. Some of them were Ji Hao's friends, some didn't know much about him, and others hated Ji Hao's guts. No one said a word, but instead, people all quietly sat down with their clansmen and friends.

Soon, sixty-percent of all people on the scene sat behind Si Wen Ming and Ji Hao.

Si Wen Ming's breath was long and steady. Ji Hao and everyone behind Si Wen Ming maintained the same breathing rate with him. Tens of thousands of human leaders, powerful human beings, breathed at the same rate and started strong, invisible waves of energy in the Town hall, pressing on the ones in front of them and suffocating them.

Emperor Shun rested his hands on his knees and said blandly, "Emperor Ji Hao called you all together for one important thing."

Finishing this, Emperor Shun never said another word. In not long, he would abdicate and hand over the crown to another person. Therefore, he had already started to transfer his power, step by step.

"Emperor Ji Hao intends to start an expedition to Pan Heng world, to seek advantages for our humankind...People, we should unite in a concerted effort and cooperate fully." While smiling, Si Wen Ming said to the leaders of You Xiong Family, Cloud Sun Family, High Sun Family, Ghost Chariot Family, and Chu Wu Clan, who all sat in front of him.

"The ones who refuse to follow orders will be punished by the heaven and the earth!" In a dark tone, Ji Hao added.

Chapter 1538: Intense Preparation

Without giving a chance to those human leaders who didn't like or hated Ji Hao, Si Wen Ming started deploying forces.

No large troop was needed. This time, only well-equipped elites with strong individual powers would be sent to Pan Heng world. Naturally, the leaders and elders from all large human clans and families were the most powerful individuals, with the best resources and most powerful inherited treasures in their families.

Holding a turtle shell, Si Wen Ming read out a series of names in a steady tone.

Large family leaders and elders who tried to get Ji Hao into troubles back in the nine water gates area, and the ones who didn't agree on Si Wen Ming succeeding to the throne, and needed Emperor Shennong and Emperor Xuanyuan to show up themselves to silence them, were all on the list.

Nearly ten-thousand people from tens of super clans and families composed the expeditionary force to Pan Heng world. Among all human beings, these people disliked Ji Hao and Si Wen Ming the most, and attempted to go against them on nearly all occasions. They were the leaders of all who didn't support Si Wen Ming. Therefore, once anything happened to them, no opposing force would be left among human beings for Si Wen Ming.

"How ridiculous! Starting an expedition to an unheard world? With less than ten-thousand people? To do what? Yet, you claim it's for the humankind, you two young..." A bad-tempered Ghost Chariot Family elder leaped up from the ground and shouted out loud.

Clang! Ji Hao gripped the Xuanyuan sword, which leaned against Si Wen Ming's body. The sword buzzed shrilly as Ji Hao swept it across the Ghost Chariot elder's neck. A stream of blood squirted to the air, while the elder's head thudded on the ground and rolled to

the door from the central area of the hall, leaving a long trace of blood on the floor.

"Like I said, the ones who refuse to follow orders will be punished by the heaven and earth." Ji Hao smiled, carefully putting the sword back to its sheath as he praised with sincerity, "This is indeed a supreme sword. With this sword, beheading a human being is as easy as chopping a chicken, neat and clean."

The sword buzzed sharply to respond to Ji Hao, after which, Si Wen Ming coldly wielded his sleeve and said, "Remove the body, and hang up the head to show to the world. We human beings are facing a major challenge. Anyone who refuses to tide over the difficulties with everyone else will be executed."

Straightening his body and pressing his hands against his kneels, Si Wen Ming looked like a towering mountain, giving an especially heavy pressure to every human leader who didn't support him.

A man in a dark cloak slowly walked out from the behind. A faintly sensible star power had been releasing from his body in all directions. His star power wasn't as strong as Emperor Shun's, but clearly, this man had already drawn the power of a natural star into his own body, and was absorbing the natural star with his soul and spirit. Once he replaced the spirit of the star with his soul power...

A new Supreme Magus would emerge!

The limbs of this man in a black cloak moved flexibly, without stiffness at all. His expression was natural, and his eyes were clear. Apparently, his soul and spirit power were strong enough to fight against the spirit of the natural star, and he had a large chance of becoming a Supreme Magus.

Another man in a black cloak walked out. As same as the first one, he silently stood behind Si We Ming.

Then the third man in a black cloak, the fourth, fifth, sixth... At

last, twelve men in black cloaks quietly stood behind Si Wen Ming, with strong star power energy waves releasing from their bodies. Thunder, wind, darkness, lightness, the energy waves with different natures were connected, pressing down on everyone's heart.

These were twelve powerful human beings who had a large chance of becoming Supreme Magi! These were also twelve trusted subordinates of Si Wen Ming who were expected to reach the Supreme Magus level!

They hadn't fully controlled the power of their chosen natural star, but without a doubt, they were now half-step Supreme Magi.

"Hehe!" Ji Hao sat steadily beside Si Wen Ming and laughed, "Like I said, be punished by the heaven and the earth...Under the current circumstances, I am present on behalf of the heaven, while my uncle Si Wen Ming is on behalf of the earth. Presumably, you will not disagree, will you?"

With a pair of dagger-sharp eyes, Ji Hao scanned across the frozen faces of some human leaders sitting in the hall and continued, "This time, Uncle Wen Ming will also depart with the expeditionary force. But, with Emperor Shun staying in Pu Ban City, I believe that the city will remain in peace like a mountain."

Emperor Shun smiled and slowly raised his head, delightfully looking at the twelve men in black cloaks behind Si Wen Ming.

Once Ji Hao gave Si Wen Ming the Mantra Dan with Nine Secret Words, Si Wen Ming dedicated it to the humankind. Afterward, Emperor Shun, Emperor Xuanyuan, and the other former emperors selected a batch of loyal and reliable people to learn them. Within a couple of months, a large number of hopefuls had already emerged among the selected ones.

If a million Supreme Magi existed among human beings...

Thinking of this, Emperor Shun's heart beat like a drum. If a

million Supreme Magi existed among human beings, the plan of Emperor Fuxi, who magically created the cultivation system of Magi back then, would be carried out perfectly, wouldn't it?

Coughing loudly to conceal the excitement in his heart, Emperor Shun started talking in a serious tone, "I will stay to guard the Pu Ban City, while Si Wen Ming and Ji Hao lead the expeditionary force to Pan Heng world, to dedicate themselves to the humankind. Things are all settled then. The expeditionary force will depart in three days. Whoever hesitates or refuses to go, or deserts in the face of the trip, will be executed!"

Emperor Shun straightened his right hand like a blade and gently swung down, while smiling and continuing, "The other thing, you all know that we are facing an unprecedented strong enemy. Therefore, the production of armaments needs extra attention. I have ordered Hao Tao to select a hundred-million craftsmen and collect essence metals from all over the world. We have also borrowed the sun world from Emperor Ji Hao. In there, we will forge our armors and weapons with the essence sun fire. Every human clan and family should spare no efforts to mine and extract essence metals to help with this mission."

The second thing was nothing but forging armors and weapons, so no one took it seriously. But in three days, the expeditionary force would depart. Ji Hao and Si Wen Ming were two heartless and brutal men. They didn't seem to give the others a chance to survive at all!

The faces of quite a number of clan leaders and elders turned very dark. They gritted their teeth and stared at Ji Hao. No one knew what they were thinking.

Ji Hao gave a faint smile and said blandly, "Of course, although we said that we only want elites in the expeditionary force, leaders and elders, it will be reasonable for you to bring some subordinates with you. But please, carefully select your subordinates, and do not bring those weak kids to die."

So, were subordinates allowed to be brought?

With dazzling eyes, some people lowered their heads and whispered to each other.

The departure would happen in three days. The time was way too limited. But, with the powers of these large families and clans, the human resources, and all abilities of these leaders and elders, they could still do a lot within this span of time.

Ji Hao absented the rest of the meeting. Instead, he left the Town Hall with large steps, and went straight to Wuzhi Qi.

"Finish this, and your old crimes will all be forgiven. But to satisfy everyone else, you cannot call yourself Wuzhi Qi anymore... You also need to sacrifice a clone, to be imprisoned forever symbolically!"

"Deal?" Ji Hao looked at Wuzhi Qi with his sunken eyes.

Wuzhi Qi looked at Ji Hao and slowly nodded.

Chapter 1539: Leave For Pan Heng World

In Liang Zhu City, Polo Jia sat before a ten miles wide teleporting formation.

A group of Flow Moon scholars had been carefully checking the formation, inserting magic crystal into every core. Occasionally, one of them would cast a spell at the formation to check if every part of the formation was functional.

Pan Heng world was a pain in the heart of every Flow Moon being.

They had aimed at that world tens of thousands of years ago, and started hundreds of expeditions to this world. Sadly, Flow Moon people were truly not created for war. All their expeditions failed, and each time, they suffered severe losses.

Fortunately, Pan Heng world was a magical world dominated by plants. A handful of moss from that world could be as effective as ten-thousand years old top-grade herbs in Pan Gu world. The Flow Moon's expeditions failed indeed, but they plundered Pan Heng world before they fled back to Pan Gu world, and managed to make ends meet, without breaking.

Surrounded by a group of trustworthy subordinates, Ji Hao walked over and stood by Polo Jia, looking at the formation as he sighed, "Didn't you win even once?"

Hearing Ji Hao's harmful greeting, Polo Jia gave Ji Hao a sulky glance, snorted coldly, and said, "You will know how hard are those things to deal with once you see them...But of course, don't think that we Flow Moon people don't know how to conquer that world only because of our hundreds of times of failure, which weren't worth mentioning."

With the special Yu Clan pride, Polo Jia slightly raised his head and continued blandly, "We just didn't want to disturb our families

in Pan Yu world...And, don't you think that that world can serve as a perfect cultivation ground for our young family members?"

Ji Hao remained silent. The first explanation, as they didn't want their family people from Yu Clan world to know about Pan Heng world, so they wouldn't have to share the profits with them, that was believable. As for using Pan Heng world as a cultivation ground, that was just bragging.

Smiling faintly, Ji Hao looked at the teleporting formation and said, "So, cultivation ground, what a smart idea! Emperor Polo Jia, you and all elders from your family have to go to Pan Heng world with us."

Polo Jia's expression changed suddenly. Before he said a word, Ji Hao continued coldly, "I don't trust you. I don't want you to destroy the portal after we go into Pan Heng world and trap us there. Even though we are capable of building another portal...but, who knows how dangerous that world can be? So, we better do not take the risk."

From a distance away, a few Chu Wu elders who heard Ji Hao gave Polo Jia a twisted, frosty smile.

These Chu Wu clan elders were forced to join the expeditionary force and follow Ji Hao to Pan Heng. To them, this was a disaster. Who did they ever offend? Why would they be sent to a strange world with Ji Hao, who was a heartless and brutal boy? If Ji Hao tended to murder them in that world, who could they complain to?

However, the most powerful one was allowed to make the call. Currently, Ji Hao and Si Wen Ming together made the strongest force among human beings. Therefore, even though these Chu Wu Clan elder wanted to do something to stop them, they dared not to.

With a high-pitched voice, a Chu Wu Clan elder laughed, "Marquis Yao Ji Hao, you shall have no worries. All clans and families will send elite forces here to guard this formation...if anyone dares to play any trick here, hehe!"

Polo Jia's face turned even darker. Ji Hao forced him and his elders to follow him to Pan Heng world as hostages, that was fine. But, allowing these insane Chu Wu people to guard the base of Flow Moon? Not acceptable at all! What if these people went out of their wits and start a massacre in here? The Flow Moon couldn't bear to suffer any more losses.

Thinking of this, Polo Jia abruptly dragged Ji Hao's sleeve and said, "Emperor Ji Hao, about one thing, please bring us a clear answer. Days ago, Liang Zhu City was in chaos. A large number of members of the twelve families in powers and all smaller families under our leadership have gone missing. Based on our investigation, back then, except for people from Yemo Tian's Glorious Domination and the four lotus altars, more people were in the city..."

Ji Hao knew what he tried to say.

These non-humankind beings were quite capable, as they had actually found out that back then, apart from Glorious Domination people and disciples of Priest Mu and Priest Hua, people from the third party also swept across the city!

Laughing out loud, Ji Hao patted heavily on Polo Jia's shoulder and said, "Did such things really happen? Hmm, I will get it cleared up for you, Emperor Polo Jia. But, regarding our alliance against Blood Crown, Emperor Polo Jia, please let the other families in power know that no one should play tricks behind me, because... People will die if you do!"

Ji Hao put his face closer to Polo Jia, shortening the distance between their faces to less than half an inch, then stared at Polo Jia right in the eyes and continued word by word, "This time, we will combine our powers to face the crisis brought by your holy being, Blood Crown. In the future, many things will be negotiable...But, if some people are still thinking about hurting the humankind at this point in time, I swear, I won't be the one to regret!"

Wisps of power of Pan Gu world drilled deep into Polo Jia's eyes from Ji Hao's eye sockets. Polo Jia wasn't a good fighter, and he couldn't withstand such a strong pressure. Sensing the ache from his eyes, he instinctively took two steps backward, then gasped loudly for air, with cold sweat streaming down his back, which even soaked his clothes.

"Of course, we will try our best to get through this together with you." Gasping for a while, Polo Jia gave Ji Hao a serious smile. But his smile was slightly bitter — He surely had guessed that this Emperor Ji Hao might well be the third party which looted the burning Liang Zhu city back then!

Buzz! A beam of light reached straight into the sky. The portal, which belonged to the Flow Moon and led to Pan Heng world, was activated.

A City of Great Calamity slowly drifted to the portal-base formation. This time, Ji Hao prepared to bring a City of Great Calamity into Pan Heng world. As members of the expeditionary force, the group of large family leaders and elders brought nearly two-hundred-million elite clansmen. Currently, this giant force was arrayed in the middle the city of great calamity; everyone in the array was looking at Ji Hao with sharp eyes.

Ji Hao chuckled. With his subordinates, he flew into the city of great calamity, not forgetting to drag Polo Jia into the city as well.

Inside the City of Great Calamity, in a tastefully decorated small room, Priest Hua and Priest Mu sat on two tender green grass hassock with their legs crossed. Smilingly, they looked at the white clouds drifting away outside the window.

"Pan Heng world? A world dominated by powerful plants? Brother, what a surprise!" Priest Mu nodded delightfully and said to Priest Hua, who looked much better than before. "This journey to Pan Heng world is an opportunity for us."

Priest Hua grinned even warmer and responded, "Brother, that

world is destined to be ours!"

They looked at each other and grinned. But obvious carefulness, vigilance, and suspicion could be found in their warmly grinning faces.

Chapter 1540: In the Sun World

Pan Gu world... In the sun world...

A straight golden path led deep to the core of the sun world. Golden flames looking like melting glass surrounded the path. Occasionally, along with shrill caws, enormous Golden Crows would dart out of the flames, chasing each other as they started a storm of fire, spreading in all directions terrifyingly.

In the fire, the glistening honeycomb-like, thin and golden magic shields and the glowing divine spell symbols on it were telling the outsiders that this peaceful-looking sun world wasn't so easy to break in.

Hao Tao stood by the entrance of the path with a dark face, wearing a dark cloak and holding a dark club. A dark dragon skin longsword and a dazzling golden divine talisman were tied around his waist. Ji Hao had stamped the talisman with his divine seal. This divine seal was the access to the sun world. With this, mortal beings could come in without being incinerated by the essence sun fire.

Beside Hao Tao, Xie Zhi held a same divine talisman in his mouth, and was slowly looking around.

Surrounding them, countless strong human beings who wore coarse shirts and bared their arms and legs had been roaring while pulling fully loaded large carriages slowly down from flying forts, sending these especially heavy essence metals into the sun world through the golden path.

Back in Pan Gu Motherland, these essence metals had already gone through hundreds of processes, and were made into blocks with the most advanced smelting techniques of the humankind. But, with the essence sun fire, the finest impurities in these metal blocks could be removed, and these blocks could be turned into perfect essence metals.

Perfect, flawless essence metals could forge the sharpest weapons and the strongest armors and shields. But of course, they could also be used for building some treasures with unimaginable powers, such as...the nine cauldrons!

All of a sudden, Xie Zhi Gave a shrill scream. Violently, he bumped against a strong man with his horns and left a deep hole on his body. Blood squirted out immediately.

The strong man was sent flying backward for a long distance, howling in pain. A large group of secret guards in black cloaks, whose faces were as dark as Hao Tao, rushed up and tied this man up. This man growled in rage and wouldn't stop struggling, until a few clubs were swung down, broke his bones, and shut his mouth.

Xie Zhi was a mind reader. He was best at discovering the evil intentions in people' hearts. No one with malicious thoughts could ever sneak into the sun world in front of Xie Zhi.

Dragon, Tiger, Lion, and Mammoth, the four of them, and hundreds of disciples under the guidance of Priest Mu and Priest Hua stood in a distance away, hiding by twisting the lights and shadows with the powers of a few natural stars. They gazed into the sun world while shaking their heads.

They couldn't enter into the sun world under Xie Zhi's watch, unless they violently broke in. But looking at the hazy Gold Crows in the golden flame blazing behind Hao Tao, and the golden flying swords floating above the head of every Gold Crow, the four tasted bitterness from their mouths.

That was a pure sun sword formation composed from the inexhaustible sun power from the sun world. Unless Priest Hua and Priest Mu showed up and made their own moves, who could take a strike from this formation? Facing this fierce sword formation, only a handful of living beings in Pan Gu world were qualified to even think about entering the sun world by now.

"So many essence metals, only for forging weapons and armors?

To arm how many people?" Dragon shook his head in confusion and said, "Are human beings seizing the opportunity to rise again? Human beings, are they planning to rule the world through this war? Human beings, will they make use of this chance to wipe out all non-humankind beings after that Pan Yu powerful being is defeated?"

The weapons forged by the essence sun fire, from the essence metals from all over Pan Gu Motherland, perhaps with some other valuable natural materials, would be incredibly sharp and lethal, even without spell symbols.

Human beings had attained the essence of the non-humankind civilization. When the human civilization and the non-humankind civilization were combined, only God would know what kind of terrifyingly strange thing would these essence metals turn into in the sun world.

Under orders, the four needed to find out what exactly would be forged in the sun world. But, it seemed to be impossible for them to enter the sun world.

"Damnit!" Tiger cursed. This strong defense built by Hao Tao left them no choice. Did they have to use violence to break in?

But, they truly didn't have the courage!

Standing by the entrance of the path, Hao Tao looked like a rock, but in fact, he had incredibly sensitive sensations. Same as Xie Zhi, he was also best at discovering the evils in hearts. Raised his eyebrows, Hao Tao sensed that someone was looking at him. Just now, Xie Zhi attacked a strong man who clearly had bad intentions, and somehow, that man made Hao Tao start worrying.

Snorting slightly, Hao Tao raised his right hand and said, "Tell people down there to speed up. The total amount of essence metal sent here every day needs to be ten times the normal!"

"Difficult? Of course it's difficult. But, this is about the future of

the humankind, about the survival of human beings. No matter how difficult it is, even if they might break their waists, they have to try their best!"

In the sun world, on the broad square before East Emperor Taiyi's sun palace, a golden melting pot stood on the ground, with the essence sun fire burning ragingly underneath it. Mountain-large piles of essence metals had been pouring into the pot. Meanwhile, all kinds of armors and weapons were flying out from a spout on one side of the pot. A large number of human craftsmen had been carving spell symbols on these newly forged weapons and armors. They worked crazy fast.

If one could walk into the melting pot and take a close look, one would find that these armors and weapons had actually cost less than ten percent of all essence metals in the pot. The rest ninety percent of purified essence metal was melted into a five-colored liquid, quietly flowing into the sun palace through a special teleporting formation inside the pot in torrents.

The five-colored cauldron stood amidst a sky-devouring raging fire.

In Ji Hao's body, the all souls creation cauldron was tiny, as small as Ji Hao's fist. But now, it looked like a towering mountain, ten of thousands of miles tall, and tens of thousands of miles in diameter.

The cauldron was thickly covered in mysterious, complicated patterns, as a colorful mist spread in all directions from it. A slight amount of this colorful mist could immediately, largely raise one's original soul power and boost up one's spirit.

At the moment, tens of thousands of elite human beings in dark cloaks sat under the cauldron, their eyes closed tight and sensations shut down, but focusing on inhaling the colorful mist released from the cauldron. Their souls and spirit power had been improving at an amazing rate, allowing them to replace the spirits of their chosen natural stars and successfully make the

breakthrough from Divine Magi to Supreme Magi in a safe, perfect way.

Si Wen Ming stood beside the all souls creation cauldron, looking at Spirit Wa with reverence. Spirit Wa floated upon a five-colored cloud, holding a purple jade ruyi as she smilingly nodded to Si Wen Ming.

"With me helping you forging the nine cauldrons myself, they will come out much better than the works done by you alone. As long as you make a deal with the kid Ji Hao, I will help you forge the nine cauldrons. In return, a throne in the heaven will belong to Donggong."

Spirit Wa smilingly pointed at Donggong and Ximu standing by her side.

"Yes." Si Wen Ming cupped his hands, bowed solemnly, and responded.

Chapter 1541: ‘Welcoming’ Pan Heng

"Stingy" Standing on the wall of the city of great calamity, Ji Hao looked at the thin metal petals unfolding in the surroundings, shaking his head.

He was talking about the portal built by the Flow Moon. The largest bearing capacity of this portal was a standard flying fort of the non-humankind, no larger than ten miles squared in area. But this time, Ji Hao forcibly squeezed a city of great calamity in the portal. As a consequence, the operation speed of the portal turned extremely slow. It was like forcibly squeezing a watermelon into a finger-thick tube, so one could easily imagine how difficult it would get.

Ji Hao turned around and glanced at the golden bridge, which floated above the city of great calamity. From a beam of golden light, the golden bridge had transformed into a magnificent, actual bridge, rumblingly flashing across the space while pulling the city of great calamity forward speedily. Because of the golden bridge, the operation rate of the portal was raised by tens of times.

Polo Jia stood beside Ji Hao, shaking with a pasty face. He seemed ready to throw up at any moment.

The golden bridge had been pulling the city of great calamity forward at an abnormally high speed, because of which, a great pressure had been coming from the Chaos in all directions. The space inside the city of great calamity twisted weirdly, largely affecting Polo Jia's body.

While trying very hard to keep himself from throwing up, Polo Jia smiled to Ji Hao and said, "Emperor Ji Hao, it's not because we Polo Family people are stingy...Pan Heng world didn't bring us enough profits. Therefore, we had to maintain the pressure we laid on them at the lowest level. Investing a large sum of money in building a larger portal for that world would be irrational."

Shaking his head, Polo Jia gave a bitter grin and continued, "The council of elders in our family wouldn't allow us to waste resources like that."

"Is the council of elder in your family powerful?" Ji Hao looked at him and asked.

Because of the badly twisted space, Polo Jia's mind wasn't so clear. Hearing Ji Hao's question, he gave the answer without thinking much, "In Pan Yu world, we have seven-hundred and forty-five family power elders. As for deputy elders..."

Abruptly, he raised his head and stared at Ji Hao in both embarrassment and anger, then cried, "Emperor Ji Hao, that was very rude."

Ji Hao chuckled, then pointed at the Chaos tide waves outside, which had been violently striking on the city of great calamity, and said blandly, "If I grip your neck and throw you out, then tell your families that you accidentally fell into the Chaos...that would be truly rude."

Picturing the horrible ending Ji Hao described, Polo Jia's expression changed. Instinctively, he took a few steps away from Ji Hao, then snorted and turned around, without saying another world to Ji Hao. Flow Moon people were the knowers, the wise ones. They weren't the same as people like Ji Hao, who always preferred to use violence as their first choice.

"Did your family raise so many powerful beings with the resources you stole from Pan Gu world?" Ji Hao sighed and said, "If you gathered all those elders in Pan Gu world, you might have broken the humankind already, right? Why didn't you do that?"

Maybe because he had already revealed the number of family elders to Ji Hao, which was supposed to be a secret, Polo Jia remained silent for a while, then slowly shook his head and said, "The other eleven families in power are stronger than Polo Family, and their members all have greater individual powers. But after

all, our roots are back in Pan Yu world."

Polo Jia frowned and continued while thinking, "Why would mid and low-grade families like ours take great risks to explore the Chaos? Didn't we do this for resources? Didn't we do this to strengthen our families? It goes without saying that we keep the main forces of our families back in Pan Yu world. Besides, we roughly know how things are going in Pan Gu world, so why would we break the humankind?"

Hearing him, Ji Hao looked back the recent period of time, during which, small-scale wars never stopped happening between the humankind and the non-humankind, but major wars were barely started. It seemed that Yu Dynasty truly wasn't planning to swallow the humankind, and instead, they mentioned that occasionally just to bluff.

He believed Polo Jia and asked another question, "How are things going in Pan Gu world?"

Polo Jia gave a weird smile, shaking his head as he said, "Aren't you aware of your own situation?"

Ji Hao closed his mouth and coldly looked at him.

Polo Jia grinned. Spreading his hands, he shrugged and said, "We Yu Clan people are the owners of Pan Yu world, while you, human beings, are the chosen main characters in Pan Gu world, but not the world owners."

The golden bridge released a golden beam of light as it bumped against a seven-colored layer of screen. Following a muffled boom, a hundreds of miles wide swirl was created on the screen by the golden bridge. A colorful light stream reached out from the screen, leading the city of great calamity into to the screen to land.

In the surroundings, Chaos tide waves disappeared. Instead, dense green clouds emerged from all directions, while bolts of pure and powerful pre-world green thunder struck on the city of great

calamity like violent evil dragons.

The city of great calamity unfolded its thin metal pales. In the air, layers of honeycomb-shaped shields glistened, defending the city against the green thunderbolts. The thunderbolts twisted in the air and caused deafening sizzling noises, which quaked the city slightly.

In a quarter of an hour, the city of great calamity forcibly penetrated the green clouds, descended with clouds of smoke puffing up from it.

Ji Hao's eyes sensed a clear and warm green light. He looked around and suddenly felt relaxed and happy. Was this the Pan Heng world? A world dominated by plants?

The air in this place was rich in green power, extremely pure and fresh. Nine light green suns were glowing in the sky, illuminating the world with a green light. The entire world looked like a top-grade piece of jade, green and pure to an extreme degree.

Down below, tens of thousands of miles lower than the city of great calamity was a boundless continent with multiple ranges of hills. The thriving greenery filled up Ji Hao's line of sight. Countless towering trees stood on tops of mountains, thousands of miles tall, surrounded by dense green mists. The mist was an incredibly pure and highly compressed natural green power, which had nearly liquefied.

Above these mountains, dandelion-like, over ten-miles long strange plants floated in the air. When these plants 'saw' the city of great calamity, their downy flower heads shrank intensely, causing a series of muffled popping noise. Following the noise, puffs of light green seeds flew swiftly out of the flower heads, striking at the city of great calamity at lightning speed.

The shuttled-shaped, tens of meters long seeds swished shrilly to the city of great calamity, occupying the view of everyone in the city.

Light golden honeycomb shields emerged. The seeds bumped against the shields and generated waves of thunderous bangs. A raging fire surrounded the city of great calamity, and next, the enormous flying city began shaking slightly.

Wave and wave of seeds were sent to bomb the city of great calamity.

Ji Hao and his people had just arrived, but Pan Heng world dwellers embraced them with passionate 'hospitality' already.

Chapter 1542: The Outpost Fort

In the secret room which was inside the city of great calamity, Priest Mu and Priest Hua opened their eyes simultaneously, standing up together.

"Indeed a wonderful place." Sensing the extremely pure green power in the surroundings, a thin trace of relaxedness and comfort emerged on Priest Mu's bitter face. "Surprisingly, non-humankind beings are actually capable enough to find such a marvellous green place."

"This place is destined to be a part of our sect." Priest Mu grinned delightfully, even squeezing his eyes into a pair of curved lines. "Pre-world powerful plants must exist in here. If we can find them and guide them into our sect, without a doubt, we will rise; not to mention merging the natural fortune of Pan Heng world into our sect. This...If this can happen, we will soar!"

Priest Hua's eyes shone in excitement, while Priest Mu nodded quickly.

By finding a certain number of powerful pre-world plants in this world and guiding them into their sect, naturally, Priest Hua and Priest Mu would attain a great natural fortune from Pan Heng world. If the sect gained all the natural fortune from a world, not even Priest Mu could imagine how thriving his sect might become.

"Dachi, Qingwei, Yu Yu..." Priest Mu gripped his wooden staff with his left hand, slightly clenched his fingers, then wielded his broad sleeve.

As a gust of wind rose from the floor, Priest Hua and Priest Mu disappeared without a trace. From the beginning to the end, they didn't take even a glance at Ji Hao's expeditionary force or Ji Hao.

In their eyes, the result Ji Hao's expeditionary force would gain had completely nothing to do with them. The fact that they clearly

knew Ji Hao started an expedition to Pan Heng world, proved that they had ears and eyes hiding among his people. No matter what Ji Hao did, they would know immediately. Therefore, he wasn't worthy of their extra attention.

Priest Mu didn't even realize that, as a matter of fact, he wasn't willing to meet Ji Hao face to face. He owed Ji Hao a full strike, he had promised that. Therefore, he should better avoid meeting Ji Hao as much as he could.

Crazy seeds had still been bumping against the city of great calamity, causing endless thunderous booms. Tens of layers of fire and thunderbolts wrapped up the entire city. Welcomed by this 'passionate' world, the giant flying city was shaking slightly.

"Prepare to attack!" Ji Hao raised his right hand.

A shrill caw echoed through the sky while Yi Di trod on a fire-eyed golden eagle and rose into the sky, starting a gale. Held in his hands, the Thunder Running bow buzzed sharply and released the arrows of the twenty-four solar terms, leaving shreds of afterimages in the air. Instantly, a strong coldness could be sensed from the air.

Yi Di released the arrows of 'Great Cold', 'Slight Cold', and 'Frost's Descent'. The arrows flashed all over the sky. Under Yu Yu's guidance, Yi Di's archery skill had been improving rapidly. Through the space between countless swiftly moving seeds, Yi Di's arrows pierced deeply into those giant dandelion-like plants.

Cold and fierce, seeming to destroy the world, the arrows drilled straight into the giant plants and shattered them. From the sky, the pieces of the plants fell into the mountain area down below, breaking the branches of countless trees as they left streams of dark-green smoke in the air.

Startled by the falling pieces, large groups of birds rose from the forest. These birds had light green feathers, which glistened under the sunlight like emeralds. These birds looked largely different

from the birds in Pan Gu world, because they were as small as human palms, but had especially long and fluffy, stunning feathers. The group of beautiful birds flew into the sky like a tidal wave, screaming restlessly.

In the following moment, countless burning arrows flew out of the city of great calamity, as tens of thousands of elite Eastern Wasteland archers under Yi Di's command released their bowstrings simultaneously. The secretly produced fire explosive arrows penetrated those giant plants floating in the air and set them all on fire.

Yi Di and his archers wiped out tens of thousands of giant flying plants, after which, the number of seed bombs started decreasing, until all seeds were gone.

The giant flying city began landing slowly. From the forest down below, a dim stream of light reached to the sky. Through this light stream, the city of great calamity landed towards a thousand-mile-diameter basin in the mountain area.

Ji Hao looked down at the basin from the city wall. The basin was all barren, without even grass. Heatwaves had been rising from the ground, stirring the air and making it slightly twist and shake. On the ground, all sands and stones were slightly red, as if a fire was burning underground.

In the middle of the basin, where the dim light stream came from, was a standard non-humankind battlefront, less than five miles squared in area, mottled, and broken. Apparently, it had been through countless cruel battles and was nearly damaged.

Surrounding the fort were tens of smaller forts built from stones, carved with red spell symbols. From time to time, flames would burst from the spell symbols and reach hundreds of miles away like fire dragons, brutally burning everything they touched.

In each small fort, non-humankind slaves with missing limbs leaned against walls, excitedly wielding their weapons and yelling

at the city of great calamity which had been slowly landing from the sky.

On the wall of the battle fort in the middle, troops of non-humankind warriors walked over. Those were nearly ten-thousand Yu Clan warriors, fifty-thousand Jia Clan warriors, and nearly a thousand Xiu Clan craftsman. Seeing the splendidly shining, enormous city of great calamity in the sky, these sallow and expressionless non-humankind beings all grinned joyfully.

Ji Hao looked around. Apparently, this basin was scorched artificially. Boa-like strong vines reached out from the surrounding towering mountains and wove into a tall green wall, encircling the entire basin.

On the ten-miles-tall green wall, a large number of muscular, light green, leopard-like beasts had been resting, or nimbly leaping around. From a tastefully built wooden house on the wall, some beautiful humanoid creatures with longbows, who were tall and slim, walked out. They looked at the city of great calamity seriously, which was closer and closer to the ground. They seemed to be slightly surprised.

"These bloody green people." Polo Jia angrily looked at those tall, slim and beautiful humanoid creatures, and said, "I said that once we conquered this world, they will all become the lowest slaves... Bloody green people, they..."

"First of all, you have to be strong enough to conquer this world." Ji Hao interrupted him. Curiously, Ji Hao pointed at the metal fort in the middle of the barren basin, and said, "Are those your people? Seems so incredible that they survived in an encirclement like this."

Polo Jia smiled proudly and responded, "Even though most of our Polo Family people are scholars and brain workers. But occasionally, commanders with amazing abilities would emerge among us. The one in charge of this outpost base is my younger

brother, Polo Yan. Even those violent lunatics from the Red Sun were amazed by his power."

From the fort, a Yu Clan young man flew up to the city of great calamity. He was wearing a broken golden armor, with half of his face covered in scars.

Chapter 1543: Brotherhood

The city of great Calamity floated in the sky, tens of miles higher than the ground. On the city wall, hundreds of meters tall golden statues were covered in a faint golden light. At any moment, these statues could launch destructive offensives from their eyes.

Polo Yan flew to the city of great calamity. Before his face, the honeycomb shields split up. A thin crack appeared on layers of magic sheds, allowing him into the city.

"My dear brother, I am thrilled to see you again. Polo Yan, I'm gonna tell you about the things that happened these years. Do you have any idea?" Polo Jia spread his arms and walked to his brother. He had so much to say to his younger brother.

Non-humankind beings hadn't been living a good life in Pan Gu world these years. At first, they failed to conquer the twelve water worlds, then the portals that led to the twelve worlds were turned into bloody space navigation marks. Before they realized what actually happened, the destructive flood was raised, trapping them in Liang Zhu City for years and making them live like mice.

Later on, the flood ebbed away, but a bad news came — Holy Blood Crown and his army were approaching Pan Gu world.

With violence, the twelve families in power attempted to force human beings to fight for them against Blood Crown, but failed. The humankind launched counterstrikes. Soon after that, Liang Zhu City fell in chaos. A great number of important people died, were betrayed, or went missing...

Suddenly seeing his younger brother again, Polo Jia really had so much to say to him.

Polo Yan rushed to Polo Jia with large steps, having a sulky face. Without saying a word, he threw a heavy kick on Polo Jia's lower abdomen. Polo Jia howled in pain while he was sent flying into the

sky, nearly a hundred meters high. Covering his belly with his hands, he thudded on the floor, twitching like a pig which was struck by lightning, foaming at the mouth.

"I don't have an elder brother like you. Damn you, Polo Jia! Where is the annual reinforcement?" Polo Yan darted to Polo Jia, scaring back the few guards who rushed up in an attempt to protect Polo Jia with a raging growl. Polo Yan squatted on the ground, dragged an ear of Polo Jia, and pulled his head up from the ground.

"Dear Lord Polo Jia, dear Family leader, where is the annual reinforcement we agreed on? You haven't sent us a warrior, an arrow, or a single bag of food for nearly ten years!" Polo Yan's eyes were filled with blood streaks as he screamed at Polo Jia hysterically, "Do you know that in the hardest time, I just wanted to taste meat, so I..."

Polo Yan slightly opened his mouth with his throat squirming quickly, seeming to throw up.

Polo Jia wiped the foam on his mouth corners, raised his head in surprise, and yelled, "Oh my, did you eat our own kind? Can you describe the taste for me? In our history, no Yu Clan being had ever tasted our own kind, so I am truly curious about our taste. If I can add your description in the Universe Cookbook, my name will be in the history!"

Standing aside, Ji Hao's mouth corners twitched slightly. What a Flow Moon nerd! Under such a situation, what concerned Polo Jia was actually the taste of Yu Clan people!

"Shut up! I don't want to talk about that anymore..." Polo Yan looked at Polo Jia gloomily and said coldly, "I am seriously telling you that even during the most difficult time, I didn't feed on our own kind...What I ate were non-humankind slaves that died in battles...Everyone ate a lot!"

"Er..." This time, the group of Flow Moon elders who were forced

to come along by Ji Hao covered their mouths with their hands while staring at Polo Yan with a weird look.

They weren't surprised by the fact that Polo Yan ate non-humankind slaves. After all, from any aspect, those non-humankind salves were nothing different from battle beasts raised in the pits. During wartime, when facing a food shortage, it was totally reasonable for Yu Clan people to eat some non-humankind slaves.

What made them so uncomfortable was that Polo Yan had actually eaten non-humankind slaves, those hideous, creepy non-humankind slaves, which weren't pretty at all! They were way too filthy! How on earth did Polo Yan manage to chew them?

Polo Jia immediately pressed his hands on Polo Yan's mouth and shouted in disgust, "Stay away from me! You ate those nasty lowly slaves? I'd rather chew tree barks! Damn it! Stay away from me. I can even smell the stink of those slaves from your month!"

Polo Yan didn't say a word. He grabbed Polo Jia's head and smashed it against the floor.

Polo Jia gave a muffled snort when his head was banged against the floor. He nearly fainted.

"Dam-damn it! Polo Yan, I am your elder brother, your dearest elder brother! It has only been a few years since we saw each other the last time. How come you became so violent? Are you still an elegant Yu Clan noble? You let yourself fall! Oh my, how am I gonna explain this to dear mother and father?" With tears flowing on his face, Polo Jia cried and accused Polo Yan hysterically.

Polo Yan snorted coldly. He dropped Polo Jia and said, "Regarding the fact that you haven't given us any reinforcement in nearly ten years, we'll discuss it later. How many warriors you brought this time...Damn, human beings?"

Polo Yan was stuck in Pan Heng world for years, out of touch

with his family. Therefore, he didn't know about the current situation in Pan Gu world. Abruptly, he saw Ji Hao and Wuzhi Qi, who stood by Ji Hao's side, then his gaze shifted to Si Wen Ming's figure, and all the large family leaders and elders who followed Ji Hao to Pan Heng world...

Polo Yan turned around, stomped his foot on Polo Jia's stomach, as he popped out his three eyes and growled, "I need reinforcement! Elite warriors! Why did you bring me a group of human slaves? Except for mining, what can they do?"

"Kid!" Wuzhi Qi snorted frostily. He flashed across the air, came up to Polo Yan, and squeezed his throat.

Polo Yan didn't see this coming. The golden machete tied around his waist lunged out of its heath and magically sent itself into Polo Yan's hand. Polo Yan then swung the blade fiercely to Wuzhi Qi's waist, leaving an arc-shaped beam of golden light in the air.

Wuzhi Qi laughed wildly. He put forth his strength through his arms and pressed Polo Yan down to the ground.

Thud! Polo Yan's face landed on the ground. Half of his face that was covered in scars was almost flattened. He couldn't hold the machete anymore, which flew out of his hand, clanging and rolling to a long distance away on the ground.

"This...Polo Jia, where the hell did you find these strong human slaves? They're even much stronger than your guards!" Polo Yan's face was still pressed heavily against the ground, but he shouted out loud in surprise, "Hah? Did you buy a powerful barbaric tribe from Pan Gu world? I've told you that with money, we can buy a batch of cannon fodder to conquer Pan Heng world for us. Finally, you understand what I meant!"

Polo Yan slapped Wuzhi Qi's palm and yelled, "Oi, barbarian, take your hand off me. I am the only younger brother of Polo Jia! Take your hands off me. Otherwise, I will keep your final payment. You won't even get one jade coin!"

Wuzhi Qi blinked, not knowing what to say for a long while.

Ji Hao slightly shook his head. 'These two brothers have a good relationship, don't they?' He thought.

Chapter 1544: The Power of Gold Crows

Deep voices could be heard from the basin, incanting a spell.

A force, which was never found in Pan Heng world before, now rolled in the basin. The ground was shaking slightly. The world didn't like this force, but it could not control it. Pushed by the force, giant rocks rose rumblingly from the ground.

Together, tens of thousands of Maguspriests strenuously yet successfully raised faint rocks from underground, knocking them perfectly together to build a hundred-miles squared, ten-miles tall city.

Warriors left the city of great calamity and got stationed in the city. Flow Moon magic formation artists began buildings formations. With the help of Maguspriests, they quickly drew spell symbols and put divine towers at important spots on the city wall. These divine towers were from Pan Gu world, and were filled with top-grade crystals. Above each tower, an erect eye slowly opened, as it coldly and emotionlessly scanned across the surrounding mountains and forests like sharp blades.

Surrounding the thousand-miles wide basin, on the tall wall of green vines, a large number of light green leopard-like beasts growled with deep voices. Following shrill whistles, wearing the armors made from barks, troops of Pan Heng world green spirits mounted on these leopards-like beasts darted down the wall.

"Bloody barbarians, their heads are made of wood!" Standing on the city wall and looking at these Pan Heng world people, Polo Yan stroked his face, which used to be covered in scars, but was now fixed, turned flawlessly smooth by a special ointment. Baring his teeth, he said, "These are shadow leopards, fierce beasts. We must be careful of the wind bombs from their mouths; those green spirits' bows are dangerous as well. Their arrowheads are poisonous, so do not touch those."

Rubbing his healed face, Polo Yan continued seriously, "These green spirits keep a kind of dead leaf snake, mind those snakes especially. From my point of view, dead leaf snakes are generated from the powers of all the withered things in this world, and are very harmful. One dead leaf snake attacked me with its poisonous gas and nearly corroded a half of my head."

While speaking, Polo Yan had been looking at Ji Hao from head to toe.

He couldn't even dream that such severe changes would happen in Pan Gu world within a couple of years!

Did Yu Dynasty and the alliance of human clan really ally? Did everyone have to fight against Blood Crown from Pan Yu world together? And Yemo Tian, who was a friend of Polo Yan, was he truly an illegitimate child of Blood Crown? And Yemo Tian even started the Glorious Domination and attempted to overturn Yu Dynasty? Did all this seriously happen?

It had only been a few years, but why was the power difference between the humankind and Yu Dynasty reversed?

Polo Yan looked at Ji Hao in confusion. He now knew that Ji Hao played a fairly important role in the whole process of the rise of the humankind.

Meanwhile, he had also been observing Wuzhi Qi, who stood by Ji Hao's side. In the shape of Si Wen Ming, Wuzhi Qi wore a proud face as he held his hands behind his body and did not say a word. Polo Yan had heard about Si Wen Ming. He was so confused now, because based on what he knew, Si Wen Ming, as an influential human being, shouldn't be like this!

Along with long and resounding horns, countless green spirits mounted on shadow leopards darted out of the wall of vines while raising their longbows and howling with high-pitched voices as they marched towards the city in the middle of the basin, leaving shreds of afterimages in the air.

The scorching sandy ground burned the palms of shadow leopards. The ground was too hot, even having flames rising from time to time. Soon, the ground was stained by shadow leopards' blood. From time to time, these shadow leopards howled shrilly in pain.

Gradually, the leopards which rushed in the front had their limbs roasted. With every step forward, large pieces of meat would fall off from their bodies. Mounted on these shadow leopards, green spirits expressionlessly incanted a spell, sending dark green airstreams into the bodies of these shadow leopards to forcibly support them and allow them to keep running.

Finally, a shadow leopard fell to the ground. Even its internal organs were cooked.

More and more shadow leopards fell. Not long after that, their bodies were set on fire by the flame puffing out from the ground. The smell of burnt food began spreading in the air.

Nimbly, green spirits leaped up from these fallen shadow leopards and landed on the backs of the other shadow leopards which were still alive. Sitting behind the other green spirits, they kept moving forward.

On the city wall, Polo Yan proudly laughed out loud and said, "Fools...But of course, Polo Jia, you're a fool too, and all family elders, you're all fools. Look at my earth fire trap! Depending solely on this, we managed to survive all these years!"

Pointing at the barren basin, Polo Yan continued laughing, "Look, the earth fire poisonous flame formation I created. The entire basin is a giant trap. Before, these barbarians would attack us every month. But ever since I built this great formation, they haven't...Let me count..."

Doing the math with his fingers, Polo Yan seriously nodded and carried on, "They haven't attacked us for a whole six years. They trapped us and disabled us from finding enough food and water...

Fortunately, I'm not particular about food. If I were a fool like you, Polo Jia, I would have starved to death long ago!"

Green spirits screamed and fearlessly marched towards the city.

They needed to cover four-hundred to five-hundred miles to reach the newly built city from the wall of vines. On their way, more and more shadow leopards fell to the ground, and the ones from the behind kept moving forwards by treading on the corpses of their own kind.

From the surrounding forest, some tall figures showed up. These figures were weirdly shaped, and were entirely wooden. They were about three-hundred meters tall, all with wrinkled faces that were covered in vines and mosses. Their deeply sunken eyes sparkled with the special light of wisdom.

From a long distance away, these giant creatures looked at the city built by Ji Hao and his people. They didn't even take a glance at those fallen shadow leopards, or those green spirits who were burned to death by Polo Yan's earth flame trap.

Looking at these giant figures, Ji Hao suddenly realized that these wooden giants, who watched the fight from the mountaintops, were the true rulers of this world. These human-sized, especially slim green spirits were probably slaves of those wooden giants.

"Mr. Crow, show them our power!" Ji Hao raised his head and growled out loud.

Mr. Crow was squatting on a metal petal of the city of great calamity, looking down at the army of green spirit. Hearing Ji Hao, he happily raised his Fuso staff and gave a bright caw.

Fuso tree's hazy figure was released from the staff, gradually growing larger and larger. Along with an earth-shaking series of caws, tens of millions of Gold Crows flew out from the independent space created by Fuso tree.

A small-scale pure sun sword formation was composed in the air. Along with the deafening caws, a thousands of meters long, golden beam of sword light tore apart the space and landed violently on the tallest mountain hundreds of miles away.

A thunderous boom was generated, while the fiery light illuminated the sky. The hundred-miles-tall mountain was halfway torn down, while tens of wooden giants, who clearly had relatively high social status, were turned into strands of smoke before they could even make any sound. They were directly evaporated by the sword light which was condensed from Gold Crow flame.

Chapter 1545: Blood Crown Descends

Witnessing the death of tens of wooden giants, nearly a thousand wooden giants on the surrounding mountains burst into thunderous growls.

Shadow leopards roared with deep voices as they carried the expressionless green spirits, leaped down from the wall of vines, and crazily launched offensives on Ji Hao's city. The fire rising from the ground set their light green hair on fire, but no leopard or green spirit made even the slightest noise because of the pain, just silently charging towards Ji Hao's city.

Gradually, the eyeballs of all shadow leopards and green spirits turned pure dark green. A fierce power released from their bodies and condensed into a light green cloud, drifting above their heads.

"Prepare!" Yi Di laughed wildly and raised the Thunder running bow high.

Were these green spirits good at archery? Yi Di and his elite archers laughed so hard about this. It was time for the proud Eastern Wasteland archers to teach these green spirits about true archery!

The shadow leopards that lunged in the front were less than a hundred miles away from the city, when Yi Di prepared to order his archers to release their arrows. But all of a sudden, the entire circulation of the great Dao of Pan Heng world paused. All living beings, local creatures in this world or newcomers like Ji Hao, uncontrollably turned to one direction.

In that direction, the space collapsed as far as Ji Hao could see.

A tremendous object shattered the screen of Pan Heng world, forcibly squeezing into this world from the Chaos. It was so gigantic, and came with such a terrifying power, that it was like a hill suddenly falling into a large pool. Because of it, the entire Pan

Heng world quaked intensely.

All living beings in Pan Heng world felt like tiny fishes and shrimps in the pool, sinking in the suffocating terror and despair. Even Ji Hao temporarily lost his eyesight. He felt a giant hand gripping his heart, as his breath was blocked inside his chest, and his blood was nearly spraying out from his pores.

"How...can...he...be...so...fast..." With efforts, Ji Hao turned around and growled to Polo Jia with a hoarse voice, word by word. Every word coming from his mouth sounded like an outburst of his full strength and life-force.

Polo Jia's pupils shrank to the size of needlepoints. His eyeballs paled. In despair, he looked at Ji Hao and screamed hysterically. Hearing a series of meaningless scream from him, Ji Hao slapped heavily on his face.

Clap!

Polo Jia was put down to the ground by Ji Hao. He gasped desperately for air while effortfully struggling back up. Within this short span of time, he managed to calm himself down and turned halfway back normal. Also word by word, he responded Ji Hao, "Things that happen in the Chaos, no one can tell about them for sure."

Raising his head and looking at the tremendous object breaking into Pan Heng world, Polo Jia continued through gritted teeth, "Perhaps, it will still take years for Holy Blood Crown to reach Pan Gu world. Perhaps, he only needs a couple of days to cover the distance between Pan Gu world and Pan Heng world. But, in tens of minutes, he will descend to Pan Heng world."

"Time, space, these 'natural laws' we know are completely meaningless in the Chaos." Looking at Ji Hao, Polo Jia shouted hoarsely, "Do you understand? Ji Hao! The time, the distance, the space, these mean nothing in the Chaos. Holy Blood Crown has chosen Pan Heng world to land, and he is arriving now!"

"Shut down all defensive seals! Shut down the earth fire trap! Shut down all divine towers! No one is allowed to use any power... We can't expose ourselves to them! We can't!" Suddenly, Polo Yan burst into roars from the side.

All non-humankind beings immediately started moving. Ji Hao too shouted out. He gave Wuzhi Qi a few words, then transformed into a clear gust of wind and merged with a strong wind blowing over from the forest. He activated the golden bridge and flashed across the air, heading to Blood Crown's landing site.

Loud cracking noises could be heard without an end. The screen of Pan Heng world was broken, as a hundreds of millions of miles wide hole was left on it. From the hole, a dazzling golden light poured down, dyeing golden all mountains within the area hundreds of millions of miles in radius.

A magnificent golden city slowly squeezed into Pan Heng world. From a long distance away, Ji Hao saw the decorative golden statues standing on the thousand-miles-tall city wall. Those statues were heavily armored handsome men, beautiful women in long dresses, or rare creatures wearing flowers on their heads. Every statue was exquisitely carved and enormous, seeming to be indescribably sacred.

Golden clouds and glows carried up this tremendous city. Countless golden flying ships hovered around the city with their sails raised, looking like enormous eagles. Countless Jia Clan warriors in golden armors stood on the ships, expressionlessly and coldly looking down at the continent of Pan Heng world.

Countless giant dandelion-like magical plants floating in the air buzzed thunderously and released sharp green seeds that shrilly swished across the air, striking at the ridiculously tremendous flying city violently.

On the wall of the golden city, in a tall tower, a Yu Clan young man held a large crystal book with both hands as he gave a

scornful, faint smile. Next, he incanted a strange spell.

"Meng."

This Yu Clan young man's voice echoed through the sky of Pan Heng world. Sound waves spread out in the air thunderously. Amidst the strong sound waves, all green seeds were turned into strands of smoke, hundreds of miles away from the city.

The Yu Clan young man closed his book and held it under his arm, then slowly walked to the terrace of the tower, looking down at those gigantic floating plants in the midair.

Shaking his head, he gently pointed his right forefinger downward.

On the city wall, the eyes of countless decorative golden status glowed. Following a deafening buzzing noise, arm-thick light beams were released from the eyes of all golden statues, which swept across the entire sky like a thunderstorm.

The world-shaking explosive sounds gave Ji Hao a slight earache. In the dazzling golden light, all giant floating plants were crushed. More golden lights landed on the earth and flattened mountains. Giant rocks turned into smoke before they even landed on the ground.

The golden city descended from the sky unstoppably. Along with muffled thunderous noises, the city slowly landed on the ground.

Along with an earthshaking bang, Pan Heng world quaked for a few times. The mountains underneath the city were crushed completely. Countless Pan Heng world creatures which didn't manage to run were smashed to pieces, then evaporated instantly by the golden light.

Buzz! A thousand-miles-thick beam of golden light rose from the core of the golden city, violently reaching into the sky of Pan Heng world.

Surrounding the light, the space of Pan Heng world rippled like

water. Soon, a hundred-million-miles wide swirling cloud emerged in the sky, with golden bolts of thunder sizzling in it and causing deafening noises.

Chapter 1546: Brutal Invasion

Ji Hao stood on the crown of a towering tree, gazing at the magnificent golden city from a distance away.

Through a thick layer of soil, sand, and rock, Ji Hao saw tens of millions of golden underpinnings suddenly reach out from the bottom of the city, thickly covered in tiny spell symbols, drilling deep into the earth of Pan Heng world, then releasing dazzling golden light streams.

The sand and rocks seemed to turn into soft water to allow the golden streams to flow swiftly underground, towards the earth meridians of Pan Heng world, like a group of greedy beasts. The moment a golden light stream touched an earth meridian, it would immediately merge with it, releasing a giant number of golden spell symbols that spread along the earth meridian.

The earth meridians in this world were rich in pure green power, but under the effect of the golden spell symbols, a light golden color was added to them gradually. Meanwhile, a strong, violent, sacred and scorching power had been merging with the pure life-force flowing in the earth meridian.

Wherever the earth meridians traveled, the earth now turned light golden. As towering trees absorbed nourishment from the earth, this light golden color naturally flew into these trees.

Within a couple of hours, all plants near this golden city, hundreds of miles in radius around the city, gained a light golden color on their leaves and barks. A thin golden mist had been releasing from these plants, while pale golden dew drops were dripping from the leaves.

Living beings that inhabited in this area were shambling and staggering, seeming to be drunk. Surrounded by the golden mist, some living beings accidentally drank the pale golden dew. Soon after, the golden color emerged in their eyes.

Looking from a long distance away, one would find a sharp contrast between the area surrounding the golden city and the rest of the world. And, this golden area had been expanding gradually.

Countless wooden giants lived in this area, and the number of green spirits in this area was ten times greater than them. At the moment, they had all been screaming towards the sky in panic mode. They sensed the strange change happening to their bodies.

As plants, the body temperatures of these wooden giants and green spirits were constant. But at this very moment, their body temperatures had been rising. A golden light emerged on their skin while a boiling, awfully agitating force brewed inside their bodies.

The oldest wooden giants clearly sensed that once this force matured and erupted, they would no longer be themselves. Therefore, the wooden giants growled thunderously while leading their green spirits away from this golden city at their highest speeds.

"I am already here, so why don't you yield? What are you waiting for?" A deep, majestic voice suddenly came from the golden city. Following the voice, an extremely strong, irresistible spirit power condensed into a golden wave and roared towards all directions.

Ji Hao looked at this golden wave in shock. This was a thousand-miles tall, visible, nearly tangible wave of spirit power. How powerful a living being must be to release such an overwhelming spirit power?

Ji Hao activated the Pan Gu bell and wrapped himself in Chaos power streams. He carefully concealed his power and merged it with the forest in the surroundings. In this moment, Priest Hua's great Dao of evolvement did Ji Hao a huge favor, which made the sense of power released from Ji Hao's body variable and changeable, to perfectly merge with the ever-changing energy flows in the forest.

The golden spirit power wave scanned across all wooden giants

and green spirits, who had been running desperately. Violently and brutally, this terrifying spirit power directly suppressed their independent consciousnesses, leaving a slave mark in the soul of every wooden giant or green spirit.

The wooden giants and green spirits quivered intensely. Then, they slowly turned around and kneeled down towards the golden city. Their eyeballs turned purely golden, while a pale golden fire burned from their bodies.

A thin golden mist rose from the ground. The mist was a mutated natural power generated from the earth meridians which were 'polluted' by the golden city. Inhaling the golden natural power, the bodies of all wooden giants and green spirits began changing.

The bodies of wooden giants were like thriving trees, while the bodies of green spirits were similar to human bodies. Purified by the golden flame and replenished by the golden mist, their bodies had been turning into a crystalline texture. Their internal organs changed even more severely. Every internal organ of theirs had turned into a tiny melting pot for energies, that began gathering natural powers. A large number of spell symbols emerged in their muscles and bones. All spell symbols were connected, composed of powerful magic seals for both defense and offense.

Ji Hao clearly saw every spell symbol inside their bodies, and knew eighty percent of them. These were commonly used in the energy transformation systems by Xiu Clan craftsmen for large-scale battling puppets.

This powerful being who released the scary golden spirit power wave had actually turned hundreds of millions of wooden giants and green spirits into battling puppets within a single moment. Their body structures had been constantly changing into puppets.

Ji Hao was severely shocked, such that even his fine hair stood straight up.

Fortunately, this was Pan Heng world. If he did the same in Pan

Gu world, turning hundreds of millions of human warriors into battling puppets...Ji Hao wouldn't even know what to do with a situation like that.

The golden spirit power wave covered the forests hundreds of millions of miles around the city. Within this area, the independent consciousnesses of all wooden giants and green spirits and other living creatures were wiped out. They had all become puppet slaves under this powerful being's direct control.

Next, as more spirit power waves were released from the golden city, a series of authority conversions happened accurately in the air. The first, ridiculously strong spirit power distributed the rights of control of all puppet slaves to these new spirit powers. Some spirit power controlled more puppets, clearly they were at higher positions; some controlled fewer puppets, and without a doubt, their positions were relatively lower.

Within a second, the strongest spirit power distributed all battling puppets to over a thousand spirit powers. Afterward, all spirit powers began vibrating. Affected by the spirit power vibrations, all wooden giants and green spirits whose bodies had been changing thoroughly stood up, quickly gathering in the forest.

Terrifyingly fast, over one-thousand giant scale armies of wooden giants and green spirits were raised in the forest.

Golden light flew out of the city. Those were a series of small-scale, hundred-miles-squared flying forts, and large ones like the city of great calamity. These flying forts and cities were divided into about a thousand groups to lead all the puppet slaves in the forest, scattering in a formidable way in all directions.

Chapter 1547: Pan Heng Catastrophe

They invaded like a fire, professional and efficient.

Ji Hao followed behind a troop. From a long distance away, he witnessed the astonishing holocaust performed in Pan Heng world by these enslaved beings under Blood Crown's command.

Every time the troop ran into a tribe in the forest, the tribe would be encircled immediately by the warriors with a ten times greater number. When the tribe leaders questioned those puppet slaves loudly, the flying fort in the sky would directly and accurately smash these leaders' heads.

Afterward, the entire tribe would yield. A special magic seal would be stamped on their heads, turning them into another group of loyal slave puppets, so the troop would grow larger.

Non-humankind beings, whose eyes shone brightly with the light of wisdom, drifted out from the flying fort. Surrounded by large groups of guards, they walked into the treasuries of these local tribes and carefully checked and counted all valuable things.

Mineral resources were extremely rare in Pan Heng world, but the number of valuable herbs and magic drugs was astonishing. Most of the treasuries that belonged to these local tribes were filled with precious magic herbs, which were on an average older than one-hundred-thousand years. Back in Pan Gu world, herbs like these were all be extremely rare and valuable. But here in Pan Heng world, these herbs served high-grade wooden giants as food and daily used replenishments for cultivation.

Non-humankind scholars carefully evaluated all herbs, analyzed their effects and drug properties, and drew a picture for each herb in their specially crafted crystal balls. Ji Hao followed behind the troop and watched them sweep across seven tribes. Soon, the illustrated records entered in crystal balls by all troops under Blood Crown's command nearly covered all common herbs in Pan

Heng world. The effects and features of each herb were clearly and detailedly recorded.

The analysis and records were done professionally and efficiently, in cooperation with a strong military force. These subordinates of Blood Crow were like the most professional bandits, who had been plundering the entire Pan Heng world systematically.

Local tribes were conquered one after another, and mountain-huge piles of herb were sent into the flying fort. The number of puppet slaves grew bigger and bigger, while Blood Crown's troops turned larger and larger like rolling snowballs. Suddenly, strong winds began roaring across the entire Pan Heng world, as a disturbing atmosphere was brewing in the air.

Somehow, Ji Hao felt that the great Dao of Pan Heng world 'woke up' with a start, with a rising rage. Pan Heng world sensed the damage caused by the invaders, and it started gathering its power to punish them.

Meanwhile, Ji Hao also felt that the golden city was like a 'stability anchor', as the golden light it emitted had been strongly hindering the operation of the great Dao of nature. The revival of the spirit of Pan Heng world was largely slowed down, and the accumulations of the natural power was interrupted a couple of times.

It was wrestling against the great Dao of a world with the power of a city; this gave Ji Hao a more direct understanding of Blood Crown.

Frightful, seriously frightful!

The original power of Pan Heng world wasn't as great as one percent of Pan Gu world, but after all, this was a mature great world. And yet, Blood Crown managed to suppress, or interfere with its natural power. What a terror!

For quite a few times, Ji Hao saw a green swirling cloud slowly emerge above the golden city from far away. But every time, the green swirling cloud was shattered by the golden light beam and torn into green light streams that poured to the ground.

Even from a long distance, Ji Hao sensed the terrifying natural energy contained in the broken green thundercloud.

According to Ji Hao's estimation, if he were there, under the protection of the Pan Gu bell, he would be able to hold for a couple of hours in the thundercloud. But once he ran out of power, he could only escape with the power of the Pan Gu bell. Without replenishment, he would have no hope to survive the natural punishment.

"Power, strength." Ji Hao reached out his hands. A wisp of light green sunshine landed on the back of his hand through the dense branches and leaves above his head. Ji Hao activated the cultivation method with nine turns and absorbed this wisp of sunlight. A warm, cool, gentle, and refreshing power went through his body, being devoured by the Pan Jia sun inside him.

The suns in Pan Heng world were all warm and gentle, without any fierce or aggressive force. Under the shine of the Pan Heng suns, the thriving green power took the place of the heat and pure positive power of regular suns. Warm, gentle suns like these...Ji Hao raised his head and looked at the few glowing green suns in the sky, suddenly having an impulsion to swallow a couple of them. The Pan Jia sun sensed his desire and quaked inside his body to applaud for this idea.

Ji Hao sensed this instinctive reaction of the Pan Jia sun. Pan Heng suns would become its best fuel, to greatly improve its power. If the Pan Jia sun could devour enough Pan Heng suns, it might even reach the level of Pan Gu sun.

After all, most of Pan Heng suns had the nature of green. Wasn't wood one of the best types of fuel?

The non-humankind troop suddenly whistled shrilly. Hundreds of thousands of golden, round metal plates flew out of the flying fort. Treading on each metal plate was a tall and muscular Jia Clan warrior, holding oddly shaped chains tied with sickles. They wielded the chains, making them rotate swiftly above their heads and transforming into giant light shields for their own protection.

In front of them, a thousand-miles tall, incredibly gigantic tree abruptly showed up.

An elderly humanoid face was clearly visible on this tree, with its eyes widely popped out in wrath. The tree opened its mouth, gave a deep, resounding growl. Following his voice, a wave of green thunder bombs struck to the flying fort of this troop, caused rumbling noises.

Thunderous bangs could be heard without an end. Layers of honeycomb-like shields emerged around the flying fort, but this giant tree was strikingly powerful. A water-tank-sized green thunder bomb went off against the flying fort and tore apart thousands of thin honeycomb magic shields. Then, tens of thunder bombs struck on the fort in a row, destroying the outer circle defense of the fort within a blink of an eye.

The booming noise lingered in the air as hundreds of green thunderbolts landed on the golden wall of the flying fort. A dazzling golden light shone from the fort, transforming into a strong light shield and defending against the thunder bombs.

The golden light shield was blasted by the thunder bombs too. The violent thunder bomb attack never stopped until a ten-miles-long section of the fort wall collapsed. On the wall, thousands of Jia Clan warriors didn't manage to dodge. Green thunderbolts flashed across their bodies and turned them into ashes.

Jia Clan warriors on the golden metal plates burst into raging roars while throwing their

chained sickles towards this giant tree.

Shining sharply with a cold light, the sickles swished to the giant tree. The tree swept across the air with a hundreds of miles long branch and smashed all of the chained sickles. All Jia Clan warriors on the metal plates were dragged down by the chains held in their hands.

"Devils, die!" The tree gave a resonant roar. It's raging voice echoed directly in the deepest area of everyone's soul.

Chapter 1548: Merits Strike

Powerful, extraordinarily powerful.

Ji Hao looked at the thousand-miles-tall tree in shock. How many years had it grown for to be so tremendous, and to have such a destructive power? Its soul power was far stronger than Ji Hao's, and soul power usually needed to be grown over time.

Ji Hao could swear that he didn't see this giant tree while he followed this non-humankind troop here. In the vast forest in the front, even the tallest tree were merely about three-hundred-meters tall. Where this giant tree abruptly appeared was a sparse woods with short shrubs, definitely without a trace of such a giant tree.

But within a blink of an eye, this tree appeared all of a sudden. Ji Hao didn't even sense any abnormal power or energy.

Back in Pan Gu world, living beings which could show up suddenly without catching Ji Hao's attention were at the same level as Po and Gui Ling, or even Priest Hua and Priest Mu.

In Pan Heng world, suppressed by the great Dao of this world, Ji Hao's sensations were weakened largely. But still, this giant tree, which appeared right in front of Ji Hao without causing any power vibration, was at least as powerful as Po and Gui Ling.

Despite the fact that Pan Heng world was way weaker than Pan Gu world, it was a reasonable thing that this giant tree managed to top this non-humankind troop. After all, this tree might be one of the strongest in this world.

A Yu Clan man in a golden long robe broke out of the dense smoke raised by the collapsed wall, with an utterly twisted, dark face. As the leader of this troop, he surely felt humiliated when his flying fort was damaged so badly by the enemy.

"Devil? Ignorant barbarians, what do you know?" The Yu Clan

man widely opened his three eyes and laughed with a high-pitched voice, "We are 'gods' from Pan Yu world. We bring you civilization, we bring you a hope! Because of us, you now have a chance to free yourselves from this world. You should kneel under our feet...to lick the bottoms of our boots!"

"Devils!" The giant tree's voice rumbled in everyone's heart, "Lick your boots? Haha, haha, my tongue is too big. I'm afraid you don't have such a big boot to match it!"

The tree suddenly opened his mouth and let out an over ten-mile-long vine along with giant streams of green liquid, fiercely lunging towards the Yu Clan man's chest. Watching this, Ji Hao nearly laughed out loud. Such a giant tongue? As the giant tree said, his tongue was indeed too big...

Longbo Country people from Pan Gu world rarely wore shoes, but boots made for them in whale skin might be able to take a gentle lick from this giant tree's tongue.

While weird thoughts were popping up in Ji Hao's head, the Yu Clan man had already gripped a golden staff with both hands and pushed it slightly forward. Along with a muffled thunder, golden lightning bolts merged together before his face into a hundred-miles-wide strong wall, firmly shielding him against the tree's 'tongue'.

Bang! The golden wall was shattered, and the giant tree's tongue struck violently on the Yu Clan man's chest.

Yu Clan man's armor glowed brightly and transformed him into a stream of light, instantly flashing tens of miles away through the space. The cracking noise was loud and clear while the Yu Clan man's golden chest armor dented. Tens of thin cracks were left on it.

This Yu Clan man dodged this lethal attack from the giant tree, but before he could take a gasp, a thorn thrust shrilly into his chest from the trunk of the giant tree. To the giant tree, it was merely a

thin thorn, but to the Yu Clan man, it was a three-feet-thick wooden stake!

The Yu Clan man was torn apart. His head and half of his upper body was sent flying into the sky. He opened his mouth and shrieked with a high-pitched but hoarse voice.

Far away, on the wall of the magnificent golden city, a golden statue suddenly opened its eyes and released a beam of golden light. Wrapping up the Yu Clan man's torn body. A scorching energy was delivered by the golden light through space. The pieces of the Yu Clan man's body were instantly drawn back together, and within a blink of an eye, all of his wounds were healed.

The Yu Clan man gasped desperately for air. In anger, he took out a golden crystal ball from his sleeve, then began shouting.

"Damn you old bloody wood, I lost three first-class merits because of you!" His eyes even turned green in rage as he glowered at the giant tree and yelled, "No, no, no, and..."

The crystal ball sparkled while the Yu Clan man screamed, "The wall of my flying fort is damaged, and eight-thousand credits of mine were deducted! Ah, do you know how many bloody barbarians I need to kill to earn one credit? Ten-thousand ignorant barbarians, as strong as high-level Jia Clan warriors, for one credit!"

"Eight-thousand! Eight-thousand!" The Yu Clan man's eyes dazzled. Subconsciously, he turned around and glanced at those puppet slaves in his troop. But next, he slapped on his own forehead in pain and said, "Oh, no, these are already enslaved by me. They can't be counted as credits even if I kill them. Ah, I am losing money in this expedition, I am losing serious money!"

Behind him, Ji Hao was enjoying this show.

Earlier, this Yu Clan man was actually killed by the giant tree. He was dead already. But, the golden city had a magical power, which

brought him back from death. However, he had to pay for his second life with some so-called first-class merits.

Ji Hao had no way of finding out how did he earn his first-class merits. According to Ji Hao's estimation, repairing the ten-mile-long damaged part of the wall of this Yu Clan man's hundred-mile-square flying fort would cost a large amount of rare materials. But for that, he only paid eight-thousand credits!

Of course, credits weren't easy to earn. Clearly, this Yu Clan man was at a high position. Therefore, in comparison with ordinary warriors, earning credits must be much difficult for him. According to himself, he had to kill ten-thousand local creatures which were at the level of high-grade Ji Clan warriors, which equaled the level of human Magus Kings, to earn one credit.

Eight-thousand credits, did this mean that the credits he earned by killing eighty-million Magus-King-level local creatures were canceled because of the damaged wall of his flying fort?

Eighty-million Magus kings...Looking at this Yu Clan man, Ji Hao's heart even twitched.

"Since this has already happened, I don't mind wasting more." The Yu Clan man looked at the giant tree and said coldly, "I admit that you're strong, and I can't rival you. Asking for help will cost too much, so...With three third-class merits, I am now applying a lethal strike!"

The Yu Clan man pointed his finger at the golden crystal ball and shouted, "With three third-class merits, injure this old wood!"

Another thousand-miles-tall golden statue on the wall of the golden city opened its eyes. Held in the statue's hands, a trident sparkled and released a fork-shaped stream of light, that flashed across the sky and struck on the center of the giant tree's trunk.

Chapter 1549: We Are Destined to Meet Each Other

A raging roar could be heard. Ten-thousand-miles around the giant tree, the forest collapsed suddenly, while bottomlessly deep cracks appeared on the ground.

The deafening roar sounded like a thousand thunder bombs going off together on the ground. Jia Clan warriors were smashed to pieces. Enslaved wooden giants and green spirits remained perfectly unharmed, but fell unconscious because of the intense vibration of the earth.

Hearing the giant tree's roar, the Yu Clan man who summoned the strike started vomiting blood. Again, he transformed into a golden beam of light and fled thousands of miles away, breaking away from the range of the giant tree's voice. While flying backward, he was suffering a heartache and cursing through gritted teeth. Earlier, because of the ten-miles-long section of damaged wall of his flying fort, he lost eight-thousand credits. But now, a roar of the giant tree shredded the entire flying fort into a puff of metal pieces, drifting down from the sky!

In the flying fort, countless non-humankind warriors, slave warriors, and non-humankind slaves were torn apart by the violent sound waves into millions of pieces that fell from the sky along with a rain of blood.

In the forest, the branches of countless towering were shaking, causing loud and muffled rusting noises. Astonishingly, the giant tree's horrific roar caused such a severe damage to the non-humankind troop. But, except for having their branches shaking and some leaves falling off, the other trees in the surroundings barely suffered a harm.

The thousand-miles-tall trunk of the giant tree was twitching intensely, while its branches were shaking. Beside its wrinkled

face, a large piece of its trunk was blown off, and from the wound, a large amount of sticky green liquid had been squirting out. The giant tree twisted its face, its mouth widely opened as it let out muffled and long howls in pain from time to time.

In the middle, two-thirds of the giant tree's trunk was blown off, leaving the remaining part near its face barely supporting its heavy crown. In the damaged tree trunk was a miles wide green crystal ball, sparkling with a gentle green light. Streams of natural power had been gathering towards the crystal ball.

From this green crystal ball, Ji Hao sensed a warm, gentle, and strong life-force, as vast as a sea. It should be the giant tree's heart, or his 'spirit Dan'. Without a doubt, it was the core of this giant tree, which contained all its life-force, even its 'soul'.

As for the energy contained in the green crystal ball...The total amount of the highly compressed energy, which had gone through a magical conversion process, in the crystal ball, roughly equaled to the total amount of energy contained in all magic crystals from one-hundred-thousand super scale crystal mines in Pan Gu world!

The total amount of energy contained in all magic crystals from one-hundred-thousand super scale crystal mines in Pan Gu world... Thinking of it, Ji Hao's scalp was even numbed.

But soon, he realized that it was actually nothing to be surprised at. His current source of energy was the Pan Jia sun, a genuine natural sun. The energy contained in the Pan Jia sun was thousands of times greater than the total energy from one-hundred-thousand super scale crystal mines!

"Hrr! Devil!" The giant tree growled in madness, as large green spell symbols sparkled quickly on it crystal ball. Meanwhile, green-colored gales were started from the forest, tens of millions of miles around it.

Soon, dark green tornados rose from the ground. These tornados were generated from the purest green power. Countless towering

trees had been inhaling the power from the earth meridians underground and releasing the green power from their leaves and branches. Under the control of the giant tree's crystal ball, the green power was turned into a series of thousands of miles tall tornados.

The sounds of tornados even vibrated the earth and the sky. Green leaves swished swiftly in the air. The leaves flew way too fast, that gradually, they became thin beams of green light that screamed shrilly in the tornados.

Dark green tornados moved to the giant tree and merged into its body one after another.

All towering trees in the surrounding forest generously gave a half of their life-force to the giant tree. The trunk of the giant tree, which was injured badly by the golden light, was recovering quickly. Within the span of about ten breaths, the huge breach on the giant tree's body had disappeared.

The giant tree began shaking its body. The earth split open all of a sudden, and strong roots darted out of the ground, while its huge branches moved. Along with a thunderous roar, the giant tree slowly stood up from the earth.

The giant tree became a one-thousand and five-hundred miles tall, eight-armed, eight-legged giant, with four-faces on its trunk.

Following a series of creaking noise, the dark green tornados shrank in the air, as the pure green power condensed into an emerald-like crystal. Eight tornados condensed into eight thousand-miles-long clubs in the giant tree's hands.

Thud! Thud! Thud!

The giant tree wielded the eight enormous clubs and smashed in the air, generating waves of dark-green air ripples that spread speedily. Its violent strikes left countless thin space cracks in the air.

Looked at this tremendous tree giant, Ji Hao was dumbfounded.

He closed his eyes and observed this tree giant with pure spirit power. He saw the bright light of energy inside its body, no weaker than the Pan Jia sun. Besides, as an inexhaustible green power flowed into its body from all directions, the tree giant's power had constantly been growing stronger!

How terrifying! Sadly, this tree giant didn't seem to know how to cultivate itself. Instead, it had been instinctively using its immense power.

Somehow, Ji Hao felt that if this tree giant could join Yu Yu's sect, follow Yu Yu's guidance, and learn Yu Yu's art of Dao. In a few years, with its rich natural foundation, it would become a powerful being like Po and Gui Ling.

This tree giant was exceptionally strong. Even though it wasn't as talented as Chaos creatures like Priest Hua and Priest Mu, it could indeed be counted as a top-grade powerful creature.

"Devil! Fight!" The tree giant stared at the Yu Clan man, who stood stupefied in the distance, and roared, "Great Pan Heng creatures, we like peace, and hate killing. But, we do not mind turning the fleshes and blood of extraneous devils into our nourishment! It will be the best sacrifice to Pan Heng!"

"Fight! I am Giant Kui! Devils, I am Giant Kui, one of the second generation of Pan Heng world life! During the long years when our ancestors are asleep, my brothers and I are the guards of Pan Heng world! All extraneous devils must be shredded to pieces!" Giant Kui roared toward the sky while wielding his eight giant clubs.

The Yu Clan man looked at this crazy giant, seeming to want to cry but failing to shed any tears.

"My merits, my credits! My...troop! God, such a great casualty, my pension money!" Suddenly, clear teardrops dripped down from the Yu Clan man's three eye sockets. He couldn't help but start

crying.

So many troops were sent out from the golden city, but of all, why was he so unlucky to encounter a freak like Giant Kui?

The guards of a world? Like 'the guardians of the great Dao of nature'? If he knew that a world guard existed in this area, he would leave this area to the powerful ones. He was a small leader of a small expedition troop. Why was he even a part of this?

Suddenly, a man showed up before Giant Kui's face. That was Priest Mu. Forcing a smile out of his bitter face, Priest Mu looked at Giant Kui, nodded in satisfaction, and said, "My friend, you and I are destined to meet each other. Are you willing to join my sect? I will give you the unbreakable supreme great Dao!"

Chapter 1550: Giant Kui's Insistence

"Supreme great Dao?" Giant Kui vigilantly looked at Priest Mu and said, "Devils! Don't try to delude me with tempting words!"

"Supreme great Dao!" Priest Mu smilingly looked at Giant Kui. As a powerful Chaos creature, Priest Mu had clearly seen through Giant Kui's great talent. The more he looked at Giant Kui, the more he liked him. Giant Kui was amazingly talented.

Sadly, Giant Kui was like a wild beast that had merely learned to use his power based on his instincts, without knowing how to cultivate himself. If he could join the sect and be elaborately guided by Priest Mu himself, in a thousand years at most, he would have the qualification to compete with the best disciples of Priest Dachi, Priest Qing Wei and Priest Yu Yu. Priest Xuandu, Priest Guangcheng, Priest Po, and other disciples from Yu Yu's sect were indeed gifted, and Giant Kui was no less talented than them.

Compared to Priest Mu's current disciples, Giant Kui was way more talented. Even Priest Miao Xiang, Dragon-slam, Tiger-blast and the four weren't as gifted as Giant Kui!

More importantly, Giant Kui was a prehistorical plant. He was a tree!

The more Priest Mu looked at Giant Kui, the more he liked him. He even showed a sincere smile on his never-changing bitter face.

As he was smiling at Giant Kui, the Yu Clan man was scared to death. Held in his hand, the golden crystal ball had been sparkling with a blinding red light, as an alarm of extreme danger. A shrill voice was warning the Yu Clan man, while Priest Mu's portrait clearly appeared in the crystal ball.

Priest Mu smilingly turned around, glanced at the Yu Clan man, and said, "Supreme great Dao, like this!"

Straightening his right forefinger, Priest Mu slowly pointed to

the Yu Clan man. The golden crystal ball held in the Yu Clan Man's hands suddenly burst with a blood-red light. Looking at Priest Mu in a soul-deep fear, the Yu Clan man shrieked in despair, "All merits, all merits, strike, full strike! Full strike!"

Facing Priest Mu, the Yu Clan man didn't have the courage to fight; he even forgot to run.

At the moment, he only wished to trade all his merits for a full strike of the golden city to kill or badly injure Priest Mu at least, so that he could survive from the hands of this scary being.

In fact, at his current level, he couldn't tell how strong Priest Mu was. But, the crystal ball held in his hands was a magical tool made by Blood Crown himself, with a function to sense and show the power level of enemies. The golden crystal ball suddenly turned blood-red, which meant that he had encountered the strongest enemy. At the very least, this enemy was at the same level as Blood Crown!

On the wall of the golden city, the eyes of a whole hundred golden statues with long tridents shone simultaneously. A hundred statues 'looked' at Priest Mu, while the long tridents in their hands quaked suddenly and released a hundred fork-shaped light streams towards Priest Mu. The light streams tore apart the space.

"Quietus!" Priest Mu reached out his right forefinger. Somehow, the Yu Clan man felt that Priest Mu's finger had flashed across the sky and landed gently on his forehead. In the following moment, the Yu Clan man disappeared. His robe, the soft armor under the robe, boots, the crystal ball, and everything he had fell from the sky, but he disappeared without a trace.

"Devil! Watch out!" Giant Kui saw a whole hundred light streams striking towards Priest Mu and hurriedly warned him.

Priest Mu was also an 'extraneous devil', but Giant Kui wasn't silly enough to think of him the same as the ones who had been slaughtering Pan Heng world creatures. Just now, Giant Kui

suffered a fork-shaped light that nearly struck him into two. Therefore, he clearly understood how dangerous those fork lights were.

He hurriedly warned Priest Mu and told him to be careful.

Priest Mu gave a resonant shout, wielded the green staff in his hand, and sent streams of warm mist into the sky, emitting a splendid, colorful glow. The wooden staff transformed into a branch with smooth lines and swept down towards the hundred beams of fork light along with a beautiful melody.

As a seven-colored streak of rainbow flashed across the sky, the hundred fork light beams were gone, as if they never existed.

"I am willing to give you such a great Dao, but are you will to follow my guidance?" Priest Mu mildly looked at Giant Kui. He had paid all his attention to Giant Kui, who was a gifted tree.

With eight arms and eight feet, Giant Kui looked at Priest Mu without knowing what to do. Did this extraneous devil actually want to take him as a disciple?

Earlier, when Priest Mu reached out his finger, the mysterious power he released and the dreadful lethality of that strike even frightened Giant Kui. Afterward, Priest Mu simply 'brushed' away a terrifying wave of offensive from the golden city, and Giant Kui didn't even know where did those fork lights go.

How amazing! If Priest Mu were a powerful being from Pan Heng world, Giant Kui would have kneeled and called him 'Shifu' long ago. But, Priest Mu was an extraneous devil, an extraneous devil... Giant Kui was a guard of Pan Heng world. How could he ever bow to an extraneous devil?

"No!" With a muffled voice, Giant Kui roared. On his giant trunk, his four mouths opened widely and growled thunderously in chorus, "No! I am Giant Kui. I am a descendant of Pan Heng, a guard of Pan Heng world! Devil, you can never make me yield!"

Priest Mu's expression changed slightly. He looked at Giant Kui coldly, while the anger started rising in his heart. Back in Pan Gu world, taking high-quality disciples had always been extra hard for Priest Hua and him. Now here in Pan Heng world, the first potential disciple he chose actually rejected his offer. How could that happen?

Snorting coldly, Priest Mu said in a bland tone, "You and I are destined to meet each other. This is your fortune, a precious opportunity. Don't mislead yourself!"

Priest Mu looked at Giant Kui coldly, while slightly shaking the branch in his hand and continuing, "Do you know where that golden city came from? Do you know how powerful those people who are invading Pan Heng world are? Can you protect Pan Heng world all alone?" Priest Mu's voice turned harsh.

Shaking his head and snorting again, Priest Mu gave a conclusion, "This is a joke! You are just... naive!"

Giant Kui raised the eight giant clubs and yelled with his muffled hoarse voice, "Giant Kui is not afraid of death! Giant Kui has many brothers! We, together, we are not afraid of any devil!"

Roaring towards the sky, Giant Kui glared at Priest Mu and shouted, "You, devil, you are not like the other devils, you have...a smell that is like Pan Heng! So, I will not harm you! Leave! Don't interfere in our war!"

Turning around, Giant Kui marched to the golden city.

"Devil, war, Giant Kui is never afraid of wars!"

Priest Mu gritted his teeth in anger and murmured to himself, "Stupid...but brave and pure. For a great disciple like this, we can only be patient and take it slowly...Does he have many brothers? Great, great! They all destined to join my sect!"

From the golden city, golden light beams rose into the sky and drew giant arcs in the air, flying to this area.

Priest Mu killed the Yu Clan man, and the non-humankind beings in the golden city had already noticed something. Immediately, they sent the reinforcements.

Chapter 1551: Pan Heng's Eight Hundred Guards

Giant Kui wielded his eight giant clubs as he marched to the golden city. While running, he roared thunderously and released torrents of green mist, merging into the surrounding towering trees. Absorbing Giant Kui's power, these trees immediately turned into hundreds of meters tall giants, following behind Giant Kui while growling hoarsely.

Gradually, a formidable army emerged around Giant Kui, and the forest left behind by him was emptied.

Surprisingly, while running, flowers had been blooming and withering on the crowns of all tree giants. Fruits matured on their branches, fell on the ground, rooted, and sprouted in the soft soil. Before long, a giant number of saplings drilled out of the ground.

Clearly, all tree giants under Giant Kui's command prepared themselves to die on the battleground. Before the war between them and the invaders began, they had left their 'descendants' in this world.

Priest Mu followed behind Giant Kui in a distance away. Witnessing Giant Kui's powerfulness and the 'smart' behaviors of these new tree giants, Priest Hua even danced in excitement. These were his ideal disciples; these were the disciples he wanted the most.

Priest Mu had made up his mind, that no matter how, he would take Giant Kui as a disciple. Whoever dared to hinder him would be treated like an archenemy, and he would destroy every archenemy of hi.

Maybe because of the excitement, Priest Mu didn't notice Ji Hao, who was right behind him, under the protection of the Chaos power from the Pan Gu bell, hiding in the extreme negative power.

Ji Hao restrained his spirit power and soul power, quietly moving in the shade of the forest as he carefully tailed Priest Mu and Giant Kui.

The space quaked intensely. As the golden lights reached tens of thousands of miles away from the golden city, the green thundercloud above the golden city was finally formed without collapsing. Following a deafening series of thunder, water-tank-thick green lightning bolts descended from the sky, landing on the golden city and the non-humankind brings rushed out from it like a heavy rain.

Buzz!

An extremely thin, honeycomb-shaped magic shield emerged above the golden city. Green lighting bolts struck on the shield and raised clouds of fire, making the shield shake slightly. But, they failed to penetrate it and harm the city.

Non-humankind warriors who marched out of the city and rushed to Giant Kui and his warriors burst into howls and screams. They activated their defensive treasures and tried their best to protect themselves.

A lightning bolt struck down, breaking into thin electric currents that swept across the air. The electric currents generated from every bolt of lightning would cover the air for a million miles. All of a sudden, sizzling and dazzling electric currents covered the sky, shredding non-humankind warriors one after another. Their shrill snarls echoed through the world.

That, was the fury of a world, the strongest counteroffensive from a world to the invaders.

Polo Yan were invaders too, but they weren't so strong. They didn't even manage to disturb world guards like Giant Kui, not to mention the natural thunder strike. To Pan Heng world, Polo Yan and his people were like a group of bugs, which were too insignificant to start a war for.

However, Blood Crown in the golden city and his warriors were greatly powerful. If one compared Polo Yan and his people to weak bugs, Blood Crown and his warriors would be like Chaos monsters that broke directly into this world and forced the spirit of Pan Heng world to wake up from the deep sleep. Before the world was completely awake, the natural thunder strike was launched.

Lighting bolts descended waved after wave. The golden shield above the city swayed intensely. As the natural thunder strike began, a dense green power gathered around the city. Not long after, the exquisite golden statues on the wall of the golden city were covered in a thin layer of moss.

With a thriving life-force, the mosses grew crazily fast, slowly yet constantly corroding the golden city. Tiny yet dazzling sparks had been bursting from between the surface of the golden city and the mosses, while a burnt smell slowly suffused the air.

"What can you possibly change by stubbornly resisting?" From the towering sacred hall inside the golden city, a deep and strong voice could be heard.

A giant golden and shining hand reached out of the hall. The million-miles wide hand slapped on the green thundercloud and shattered it, extinguishng the lightning bolts brewing in it.

The giant hand then easily and unhurriedly shaped around in the sky, dispelling the lingering power of the natural thunder strike, leaving nothing.

"Pan Heng world, no stronger than this. Weak creatures, how dare you resist the power of Yu Clan?"

The golden palm turned around and slapped down at Giant Kui like a mountain.

When the hand was still over ten-thousand miles away from the earth, the ground trod by Giant Kui and the tree giants around him began sinking and splitting. In the surroundings, mountains were

flattened while earth meridians were broken. Strong natural power streams rose from the broken earth meridians, roaring into the sky like violent dragons.

Some tree giants unfortunately stepped on the splits of earth, where the fierce natural power streams rose from. Before their bodies were shredded by the rapidly flowing natural power streams, they only managed to give a deep growl.

Giant Kui cursed in a rumbling voice. He raised the eight giant clubs and roared towards the golden hand descending from the sky, attempting to fight against it with his eight arms and clubs.

Priest Hua narrowed his eyes and sighed. Finally, he made his move. He couldn't help it.

He raised the branch held in his hands and sent a million miles long streak of seven-colored light into the sky, brushing on the golden hand.

Along with an ear-piercing metal-clashing noise, the golden hand was cut into two by the colorful light, then fell apart. Golden lights and clouds of golden mist erupted from the disintegrating giant hand, while some heavy pieces fell to the ground. Raising fires and creating giant holes, these pieces killed countless tree giants woken up by Giant Kui.

Watching all this from behind, Ji Hao raised his eyebrows — Priest Mu had actually picked up a fight against Blood Crown on his own initiative!

This couldn't be counted as an action to fulfill what he promised Ji Hao, because he did it for his sect, and he did it based on his own decision!

'This is perfect, so perfect! Fight, fight harder, fill till one of you is dead!' thought Ji Hao.

Giant Kui immediately turned around, stared at Priest Mu, and yelled, "No need for you to fight! Devil! We, eight-hundred

brothers, will guard Pan Heng world! No need of you! We will defend our people, defend our asleep ancestors!"

Priest Mu raised his eyebrows as his eyes shone.

'Asleep ancestors'? Sounded excessively valuable!

In the golden city, Blood Crown snorted, coldly and deeply.

Green tornados approached from all directions, as a giant figure walked out from every tornado. These giants were one-thousand and five-hundred to three-thousand miles tall.

Chapter 1552: Blood Crown's Aggressiveness

The entire Pan Heng world was restless. The circulation of great Dao of nature was disturbed, turning slow and unstable, like gears with sand in it.

Ji Hao closed his eyes, sensing the anxiousness of the world. The winds blowing from a long distance away brought strange roars into his ears. The whole Pan Heng world seemed to boil, to squirm, and to quickly wake up from a nightmare.

The eight-hundred world guards mentioned by Giant Kui walked out of the green tornados. Giant Kui was one of the weakest among them. Ji Hao even sensed a ten-thousand-miles tall powerful being, whose power was as vast as an ocean.

The powers of Pan Heng world gathered from all over the world, being absorbed by the eight-hundred guards. Their powers soared at an unbelievable rate. They were trees, but strengthened by the natural powers through countless centuries, their bodies were as tough as diamonds.

Nourished by the natural powers under the will of the world, Giant Kui and his brothers grew stronger and stronger, more and more indestructible.

Every leaf on their crown glowed with a bright green light. The leaves did not rustle against each other anymore. Instead, they clanged each other like metal blades. Ji Hao carefully scanned across the body area of the tallest tree giant with his spirit power and found that the bark of this tree giant could already be compared with average-level pre-world spirit treasure from Pan Gu world!

A ten-thousand-miles-tall pre-world spirit treasure?

Ji Hao frowned. Even with the Pan Gu sword, he would have to make hundreds of moves to chop this giant creature, wouldn't he?

Sometimes, an enormous body could be an advantage. So gigantic, so tough; the body of each of the eight-hundred world guards was a huge fort, that no average-level attack could harm their skins.

"Devils! Pan Heng's children will not yield!" Giant Kui and the other world guards raised their clubs and roared thunderously. They wielded their clubs and bashed each other's bodies, causing deafening, world-shaking noises.

Their clubs were condensed from pure green power, while their bodies were so enormous and tough. When the clubs and their skin clashed against each other, hundreds of miles long thunderbolts were generated. Cyan-colored thunderbolts coiled on their bodies, making them look even stronger.

Looking at the eight-hundred world guards, Priest Mu even drooled!

If he could bring all of them into his sect and turn Pan Heng world into his dojo, even absorbing Pan Heng world into his quiet lotus world, the power of this quiet lotus world would be improved largely, and he would attain the natural fortune of a whole world, to bring his cultivation to a whole new level, way beyond the others.

Priest Mu trembled slightly. He must bring these world guards into his sect, he must!

His whole attention was on these world guards, for which reason, he ignored the other things. He didn't notice that Ji Hao now stood on a tree less than a hundred miles away from him, and was gazing at the golden city.

"Barbaric ants, how dare you say something like 'never yield?" Said the deep and strong voice from the golden city, "You creatures of wood, in fact, you don't even qualify as slaves."

"You can only live in a world of green power like this. You cannot

adapt to heat, lava, deserts and other environments. You are not a material for 'common-use'. Therefore, you aren't qualified to even to be slaves."

"Only adaptable materials have the qualification to kneel under my feet and become my slaves, to conquer worlds for me. The only value about you is your crystal cores. The best you can do is dedicate your crystal cores to me, to slightly increase my energy reserve."

Blood Crown scornfully judged Giant Kui and his brothers.

In the eyes of ordinary creatures, these enormous, strong world guards were so extraordinary. But, in the eyes of Blood Crown, who had a rich experience of conquering worlds, their excessively large bodies and simple natures meant they could only live in a world like this.

They could not adapt to other worlds. Therefore, they had no value in being conquered. Their only value would show after they were destroyed, when they became the materials in Blood Crown's storage. To powerful beings at the level of Blood Crown, any single-natured species was worthless.

Hearing him, Giant Kui and his brothers growled in fury. From tens of thousands of miles away, they threw their clubs at the city with all their strengths.

The giant clubs flew towards the golden city like shooting stars, leaving bright green light beams in the air.

Tree giants created by Giant Kui and the other world guards raised their clubs too as they roared and marched towards the golden city like the tidewater, with thunderbolts coiling on their bodies.

From the ground, giant roots reached up, breaking the rocks and soil. They thrust into the sky and then swung down at the golden city thunderously like mad boas.

A thick golden magic shield emerged around the city.

Countless clubs bumped against the shield and caused ear-piercing explosive noises, then shattering one after another.

Following a series of cracking noise, the eyes of all statues standing on the city wall opened, and so did the erect eyes above each divine tower on the city wall. In the next moment, a deafening boom could be heard as dazzling torrents of golden light tore apart the air and struck into the army of tree giants.

Explosive sounds burst without an end. The earth was covered in fire and blinding light, as hundreds of millions of tree giants were disintegrated in explosions. Countless tree giants roared in despair, then being torn into bits.

The giant roots reaching to the golden city disappeared in the storm of golden light. Not a single root managed to approach the city.

The blinding golden light broke the space and covered the earth, expanding towards Giant Kui and his brothers.

A tall and sturdy figure rose from the golden city. That was Blood Crown himself. From miles away, he glanced down at Priest Mu and began talking.

"You...You took a strike from me just now! Kneel, and yield to me, then I'll give you a chance to live!"

Priest Mu dropped his bitter lip corners hile his eyes shone dimly.

'Kneel', 'yield', 'a chance to live'? Who did this Blood Crown think he was? Who did he think Priest Mu was?

Silently, Priest Mu reached out his right thumb and pressed down on Blood Crown.

'Quietus'. The golden light dimmed, and the whole world was suddenly darkened.

Chapter 1553: A Confrontation of Dao

Priest Mu reached out his thumb and shook the great Dao of Pan Heng world.

Like the suddenly blowing autumn wind, the withering of all living beings, the decay of angels, the disintegration of the great Dao, Priest Mu's Dao of quietus covered the entire Pan Heng world like a shade. All sounds in the world, all movements, all of life were sinking,like a man silently sinking into a bottomless swamp; an endless despair and fear grew in this world.

Gian Kui and the other world guards burst into snarls, in both rage and shock.

Withering and death did exist in Pan Heng world. The fallen leaves and branches would eventually merge into the earth, becoming nourishment for new lives. Dead animals would eventually turn into manure too, to make the plants more thriving.

In this world, withering and death weren't the end of life, but parts of the natural circulation. Behind the withering and death in this world was an endless life-force, the start of countless new lives, without an end. Life, that was the true meaning of the death and withering in Pan Heng world.

However, Priest Mu's Dao of quietus meant true destruction, deep and dark, without a glimpse of hope. Perhaps, Priest Mu's Dao of quietus also contained a slight hope, but no ordinary creature could possibly reach it.

The moment Priest Mu reached out his thumb, the world was darkened.

Blood Crown's golden city was dimmed all of a sudden. The power consumption of the city instantly boosted up by tens of times, but everything in the city seemed to be aging, rotting, going

rapidly to the final quietus.

On the wall of the golden city, which used to be gloriously radiant, the mosses grew thicker and thicker, stronger and stronger. The thin layer of moss had grown meters thick, entirely covering all of the splendid statues on the wall.

Under the effect of the Dao of quietus, the mosses had been excreting a highly corrosive liquid, dragging this city into the eternal quietus.

Even the magnificent great hall in the middle of the city was dimmed as well. At the moment, it looked like a drained oil lamp, dark, mottled, halfway covered in moss.

"A scary Dao!" Blood Crown growled in a deep voice, "But, my Dao is the true eternity!"

A blinding golden light erupted from his body, growing into a giant beam within a blink of an eye that penetrated the darkness in the sky. He reached out his right thumb too, pressing towards Priest Mu's thumb along with a resplendent golden light.

Unlike Priest Mu's Dao of quietus, which came from the inside, Blood Crown's Dao was about pure violence and destruction. With the purest, strongest physical strength, he attempted to destroy everything in the wildest, cruelest way.

One from the inside, one from the outside; one restrained, one wild. These were two completely different type of great Dao, but equally fearful, powerful, and destructive.

Ji Hao quietly watched them. With all of his spirit power and soul power, he focused on their thumbs. From their thumbs, wisps of powers of Dao drifted out and wove into beautiful images behind their thumbs. Only the ones powerful enough could see those images.

It was like the collision of a volcano and an iceberg.

Along with a clear 'click', their thumbs thudded against each

other.

Ji Hao clearly witnessed the breakage of the nail of the brightly shining golden thumb. Golden blood erupted like lava, falling from the sky, dazzling and scorching, spattering all over the ground.

Down below, the golden city was like a greedy monster, crazily devouring the blood shed from the golden finger.

Suddenly, the dim city burst with a strong light and heat. The mosses on its surface disappeared amidst a golden fire, turning into strands of green mist that dissipated in the air.

Like a sun lying on the ground, the golden city released a frightful light and heat to dispel the darkness approaching from all directions.

Ji Hao also clearly saw the few bone-deep cracks on Priest Mu's nail. But apparently, Priest Mu was stronger than Blood Crown, because the few cracks disappeared instantly, as if they never occurred.

Before Blood Crown could take back his thumb, Priest Mu's branch landed quietly on his chest, leaving a seven-colored light in the air. Blood Crown's long robe immediately released layers of transparent golden magic shield that wrapped him up like an eggshell.

The seven-colored light flashed through the air, and the golden shields collapsed. The tip of the branch swept across Blood Crown's chest, dragging a large piece of skin off. More blood surged out of his chest and poured on the golden city, setting the entire city on fire.

"Priest Mu..." In shock, blood Crown growled out loud, "I know you! I've seen your portrait from their records! Liars! A bunch of lowly bloody liars! Your power...Those lowly poor family people, they claimed that they have conquered the Pan Gu world!"

Priest Mu gave a faint smile but didn't respond. His sunken eyes

sparkled dimly. The wrinkles on his bitter face seemed to be even deeper than usual., as though every wrinkle of his contained a part of the great Dao. Seeing those wrinkles, one could uncontrollably want to seek for the truth of nature.

"How can this be possible? With powerful beings like you, those lowly poor family people should never be able to set foot in Pan Gu world!" Blood Crown screamed, "You...What do you...No, this isn't right!"

Blood Crown suddenly calmed down. Surrounded by a raging golden fire, he looked at Priest Mu and continued coldly, "No, not like that. You...You were injured, weren't you? Your Dao isn't perfect. There is a flaw in your Dao...Yes, you were injured, badly. And this feeling...If I am right, you were injured before those idiots invaded Pan Gu world, right?"

Priest Mu looked at him in surprise and responded, "I didn't think you would be quite capable!"

Blood Crown laughed out loud, "Quite capable? Hah, Priest Mu, you really shouldn't have come to Pan Heng world!"

Raising his arms high, Blood Crown continued laughing, "If this were Pan Gu world, you would have defeated me. But in Pan Heng world...Do you know that Pan Heng world is already halfway mine? My Blood Crown City has infected a half of the great Dao of this world!"

The sky suddenly turned lightly golden. Among the suns in the sky, three abruptly turned pure golden from light green.

The golden light poured down from the sky and gathered on Blood Crown's body.

A ten-thousand-miles-wide golden sphere of light enveloped Priest Mu and Blood Crown. No one from the outside could see a thing in this area anymore.

Chapter 1554: Life and Destruction

"A fight between devils, let them fight!"

The tallest tree giant, who was over ten-thousand-miles-tall, wielded his giant clubs and roared. He took a step forward and pulled up a mountain, smashing on the golden city with all strength.

The golden magic shield emerged. The mountain shattered against the shield, but opened a giant hole on it. The tree giant turned around and shouted to all world guards and tree giants, "War! March in! Kill all bugs!"

This tree giant had a hundred and twenty-four arms. His thousands of miles long arms were huge and strong. After breaking a hole in the golden shield of the city, he immediately reached tens of arms in, grabbed the edge of the hole, and tore it apart.

Along with a deafening sizzling noise, the hole was torn bigger and bigger by him. Golden thunderbolts burst from the golden shield and raised clouds of smoke from the tree giant's arms, leaving hundreds of meters diameter dents on his arms.

If he were an ordinary living being, he would have been torn into pieces.

But, he was such a giant, that even his bark wasn't broken.

On the city wall, the eyes of all golden statues shone and released golden light beams, which struck on his body. The erect eyes of thousands of divine towers opened, attacking him with dazzling light beams and setting his body on fire.

Raging fires burst from his body. Giant dents, from hundreds of meters to a million miles in diameter, appeared on his body. In some dents, his skin was broken, and large streams of sticky green 'blood' had been flowing out of his wounds.

From the air, dense green mists poured down, merging into his

body. His body had been getting damaged constantly. But, supported by the great Dao of Pan Heng world, his wounds had been healing themselves speedily.

Trees had strong life-force; as a strong tree giant, his life-force was millions of times stronger than ordinary trees. Added with the support and protection given by Pan Heng world, his life-force was nearly inexhaustible. No external force could easily kill him and his brothers, unless one shredded them directly.

Eight-hundred world guards rushed to the golden city, even the shortest ones among them being over five-hundred miles tall. They wielded their giant clubs, opened large holes on the golden shield of the city, then tried their best to tear the edges of the holes, making them larger and larger.

"Whoo..."

Hundreds of tree giants, who were turned into warriors from ordinary trees by the world guards, raised their heads high and let out deep roars that sounded like horns. They charged madly to the golden city with giant steps towards the holes on the shield.

All defense mechanisms of the city had been attacking the eight-hundred world guards at the moment, and nothing was left to defend against these tree giants. Non-humankind warriors in the city had no choice but to watch them approach the city, then came in through the holes on the magic shield.

Countless tree giants came to the wall of the golden city and climbed up each other's bodies, quickly reaching the top of the thousand-miles-tall city wall. Strong vines grew out from under their feet and wove into giant rope ladders on the wall.

Before the golden city, the earth suddenly split up. Hundreds of thousands of enormous vines rose from the ground. The vines opened and formed broad paths, letting countless shadow leopards and green spirits out swiftly.

No one knew where all shadow leopards and green spirits were from. In Ji Hao's line of sight, the light green shadow leopards and green spirits had formed a boundless ocean, flooding to the city while roaring thunderously with fury.

Buzz!

The loud noise could be heard from midair, as fist-sized, bee-like poisonous bugs descended speedily from the dense green clouds in the air. Each bug was merely as big as a human fist, but the sharp dark-green thorn on its tail was half-foot long.

Ji Hao saw the intensely shaking thorns on their tails. Maybe because of the stimulation gave by nature, every big's poison gland was filled with venom. From the thorns of some bugs, sticky blue-green venom spurted out and dripped on the ground, corroding the earth and leaving fist-sized holes on the ground.

Such a powerful venom! But, the number of these bugs was even scarier.

By using his spirit power, Ji Hao scanned across the battleground and found over a trillion bugs. But those were merely one-thousandth of them all!

This was the retaliatory power of this world. Pan Heng world had woken up, and had been gathering all available forces to fight the invaders. Ji Hao sensed a weak yet fairly clear spirit from deep underground, where the roots of countless trees interwove. The spirit had been recovering and constantly growing stronger.

Raging growls of non-humankind warriors could be heard from the golden city. The defense mechanisms of the city had failed to stop these local living beings from Pan Heng world. Cities of great calamity and flying forts rose from the city, floating in the air tens of thousands of miles above the ground as they launched waves of destructive golden light against the boundless army of Pan Heng world creatures.

The fire reached the sky as giant explosions created enormous dents on the ground.

Every time a fire rose from the ground, hundred, even over a thousand green spirits would be killed right on the spot. Shrill screams of injured shadow leopards echoed throughout the battleground.

But, the light attacks were only effective on larger sized creatures. Facing the poisonous bugs descending from the sky, the destructive golden lights were completely useless. The bugs flew into the city shield and reached the top of the city wall in a moment.

The bugs surrounded all non-humankind warriors guarding on the wall, and pierced the sharp thorns fiercely into their bodies.

Some non-humankind warriors immediately burst into hoarse cries. The moment the thorns stabbed in, giant amounts of venom were injected into their bodies. Before long, all kinds of toxic reactions showed up. The venoms of this terrifyingly huge number of bugs actually had different natures; their toxins included all complicated kinds of toxins from plants.

Ji Hao chuckled as he pulled off seventy-two hairs of his and whiffed at them, creating seventy-two clones, all looking exactly the same as Pan Heng world green spirits.

His clones absorbed the natural green power and transformed it into longbows, dropping into the formidable green spirit army.

In the meanwhile, Ji Hao quivered slightly, gave a deep growl, and shifted his shape into a three-hundred-meters tall tree giant. Carrying a large club, he rushed into the broken golden shield.

Ji Hao darted to the top of the city wall swiftly, violently swung his club down, and smashed a ten-miles-squared flying fort into thousands of bits.

Chapter 1555: Harvest Lives

Fighting to his heart's content, Ji Hao never felt so good before.

He learned the fighting style from Pan Heng world tree giants, expanded his body to hundreds of meters tall, and swung down his giant cudgel, which was condensed from pure green power. With one strike, he generated a hurricane wrapped in thunderbolts, that exploded suddenly. Intense vibrations happened millions of times within a second. Not even a strong flying fort built by Xiu Clan masters could take one strike from Ji Hao.

"Er!" Smashing a flying fort, Ji Hao raised his left arm. Next, hundreds of Jia Clan warriors trod on golden metal plates with all kinds of weapons, who had been darting to Ji Hao, watched a green bolt of thunder descend on their heads with pale faces.

Bang!

Hundreds of Magus-King-level Jia Clan warriors were torn into pieces. The green thunderbolt struck violently on the city and landed on a luxurious hall. Creating a water-tank-sized hall on the magic shield outside, it shattered the roof and fell in, generating another thunderous bang as it flattened the great hall.

"Hoo! Hoo!"

Hundreds of tree giants climbed onto the city wall through the vine ladder, carrying their large cudgels. Witnessing Ji Hao's powerful strike, their eyes shone with a dazzling green light. Ji Hao boosted up their morale. They howled with rumbling voices and pounced on non-humankind warriors in the city from all directions.

Ji Hao laughed out wildly. As a tremor went through him, four new arms grew out of his body. With his six giant arms, he raised the huge cudgel and leaped up into the sky like a tornado, then landed heavily on a flying fort with both feet.

He swung down his cudgel again and caused a sky-shaking boom, slamming this flying fort to pieces. Ji Hao was trembling, as his endless strength surged inside his body. In Ji Hao's spiritual space, the mysterious man failed to restrain his excitement. He showed up in the spiritual space, waving his arms while growling, "Break them! Break them all! Smash! Yes! Just like this! Pure strength! The greatest strength!"

Sky-opening, earth-splitting, everything-grow, everything-perish, all living beings reincarnate! Ji Hao launched the combined move of the five over and over again. His cudgel cracked the space and left dark traces in the sky; wherever he reached, all non-humankind warriors were ripped into bits. Armors, shields, bodies, the giant battle puppets and flying forts, and even two cities of great calamity were crushed by Ji Hao's full-strikes.

"Hoo!" Ji Hao gave an earth-shaking roar. He widely opened his mouth and released a dark-green hurricane that swept across the area hundred miles in radius, along with all the strong toxins from plants. Touched by the hurricane, countless non-humankind warriors, who had been fighting in a battle formation, twitched and fell to the ground, fainting in an instant.

Ji Hao again burst into laughter. He covered the entire battleground with his spirit power. Priest Hua's results of the great Dao of evolvement almost made Ji Hao an all-powerful being. He observed, absorbed, and perfectly copied the fighting modes of tree giants, shadow leopards, green spirits, and poisonous bugs in Pan Heng world, then created his unique means of attack with the power of green.

The great Dao of Yan was ever-changing. At the moment, Ji Hao had become an omniscient and omnipotent tree giant, who was born and had been living in Pan Heng world since always. He wielded his giant cudgels and destroyed every flying fort and cities of great calamity that crossed his eyes. He sprayed the poisonous mist from his mouth and killed countless non-humankind

warriors; releasing thunderbolts from his arms, he tore non-humankind warriors apart, limb by limb.

Gradually, he became the sharpest arrowhead of the green army. Leading tens of thousands of tree giants, he marched into the golden city forward for tens of thousands of miles, breaking tens of lines of defense in the city in a row.

Behind him, countless green spirits mounted on shadow leopards rushed in. Because of Ji Hao, the non-humankind had fallen at a great disadvantage in this battle. Their arrays were disordered, and they could not organize any effective counterattack. Green spirits flooded into the city and killed great numbers of non-humankind warriors with storm-like waves of wooden arrows.

Ji Hao's seventy-two clones mingled in the green spirits army, releasing the arrows of the twenty-four solar terms that Yu Yu once taught Yi Di. With the results of the great Dao of evolvement, they forcibly activated the powers of the twenty-four solar terms arrows. By now, Ji Hao had learned about eighty percent of Yi Di's art of archery.

Highly lethal arrow lights flashed amongst the arrows to kill the stronger non-humankind warriors.

Some Divine-Magus-level non-humankind warriors had been shouting and yelling, building defense lines. But, the arrows swished through the air, penetrated their heads, and harvested their lives right on the spot.

A thunderous bang could be heard abruptly. Giant Kui, the first world guard Ji Hao saw, had already torn open the golden magic shield in front of them and squeezed his giant body into the shield, nimbly climbing up to the city wall. The thousand-miles-tall city wall was nothing to Giant Kui, who was a thousand and five hundred miles tall. Giant Kui swung his enormous palm and crushed hundreds of divine towers standing on the city wall, then burst into howls as he leaped into the city while wielding six large

cudgels.

With one leap, Giant Kui covered over a hundred miles, surpassing Ji Hao, who had reached tens of miles into the city, and landed among a luxurious group of buildings.

Giant Kui's feet were about a hundred miles long. When his pair of enormous feet landed on the ground, countless buildings and over a hundred thousand non-humankind warriors were flattened.

"Kids! Kill the devils!" Giant Kui roared. Turning around, he glanced at Ji Hao in surprise, who rushed in the front of the army of tree giants, then delightfully nodded and said, "Pan Heng will give you strength!"

Giant Kui widely opened his four mouths and released fierce hurricanes and dense poisons smoke, as same as Ji Hao.

The green-dark poisonous mist rolled in every direction. Giant Kui was way too enormous, that the poisonous mist he released instantly covered the area tens of thousands of miles in radius. Countless non-humankind warriors struggled, twitched, and coughed hoarsely within the mist.

Within a couple of hours, except for some extra strong Jia Clan warriors, all non-humankind warriors in this area died in the poisonous mist.

Ji Hao laughed out loud. He leaped to the sky and conveniently dragged a flying fort down. With all of his strength, he threw this ten-mile-square flying fort away. Amidst the shrill screams from non-humankind warriors, this flying fort smashed into a splendidly shining group of buildings, creating a deep ditch on the ground.

More and more giant holes were torn open on the golden shield of the city while Pan Heng world guards squeezed in one after another.

They raised their gigantic cudgels high and bashed everything in

front of them. Wherever they reached, all exquisite buildings were shredded. A huge number of tree giants and green spirits had also been gushing into the city, madly killing and destroying. Dense clouds rose from all over the city.

The resistance of the non-humankind was surprisingly weak.

Ji Hao had killed many, many non-humankind beings, but he felt that he hadn't even been making an effort.

"Weird, weird. The holy being, Blood Crown's warriors are too weak, aren't they?" Ji Hao frowned as he stopped moving.

He began worrying. Blood Crown was a powerful being who frightened Piji Nu and the other Yu Dynasty emperors. His warriors shouldn't be so weak.

Chapter 1556: Family Test

Shrill howls echoed throughout the battleground.

A great number of strange humanoid creatures appeared on the battlefield. They were around ten-meters tall, had iron-like bones, tight muscles, and sharp keratose thorns on bone joints. Their eyes sparkled with a cold, fierce, and dim light. Wearing high-quality armors and holding long machetes, they formed countless square formations as they approached Ji Hao.

The army of these strange creatures was boundless like an ocean. Against the overwhelming waves of arrow attacks from green spirits behind Ji Hao, they forward pushed speedily.

These humanoid creatures had especially strong defensive power. Ji Hao watched arrows shot on their faces cause muffled claps and then fall to the ground, failing to penetrate their skin. Scanning across the bodies of these creatures with his spirit power, Ji Hao found their bodies about thirty percent tougher than high-level Senior Magi.

Inside their strong bodies, an agitated, scorching energy had been flowing. The energy was like sandstorm from a desert, such that one could clearly sense every grain of sand in it.

They wielded their machetes, releasing black and red fires from the sharp edges. Within the fire, fine grains of dark sand had been swirling and clashing against each other, roaring and rolling like a small scale sandstorm.

Both sides charged fast. Within a blink of an eye, the square formations composed by these humanoid creatures and the disordered troop of green spirits mixed together. In close combat, the green spirits' longbows were nearly useless, but the machetes of the humanoid strange creatures turned out to be especially sharp. With a simple swing, a humanoid creature could cut a green spirit into two.

Shadow leopards roared in fury and pounced on these humanoid creatures. Their sharp claws and teeth rubbed against the bodies of the humanoid creatures, causing strange squeezing noises. The faces of some humanoid creatures were torn open, and dark blood gushed out of their wounds, but they seemed to feel no pain. They could always wield their machetes backward and kill the aggressive leopards right on the spot

Ji Hao raised a giant cudgel and launched a heavy strike, smashing hundreds of humanoid creatures. Next, he opened his mouth and released dense clouds of poisonous mist. These humanoid creatures seemed to be immune to herbal toxins, that they were merely slowed down a little bit after they inhaled Ji Hao's poisonous mist.

Some humanoid creatures even began climbing up Ji Hao's body. They hopped onto his branches and madly hacked at him with their machetes. Their machetes clanged against Ji Hao's body and raised dazzling fire sparkles.

Thousands of tree giants who followed Ji Hao into the golden city had humanoid creatures climbed onto their bodies. Countless machetes cut on their bodies, chopping off their body pieces. These tree giants growled with hoarse voices and crazily wielded their cudgels, without being able to efficiently hurt the enemies who were already on their bodies.

Giant Kui and the other world guards also noticed that these humanoid creatures were pretty hard to deal with. Watching them kill more and more tree giants, Giant Kui and the other world guards roared ragingly while violently swinging their giant cudgels. With a single movement, they could smash tens, even hundreds of thousands of humanoid creatures.

They had also been releasing thunderbolts from their mouths. Ten-miles-thick bolts of thunder struck on the earth like the enormous hammer of the Thunder God. Wherever the thunderbolts swept across, square formations of humanoid

creatures were wiped out one after another. Nevertheless, the number of these humanoid creatures was way too large, that more and more of them had been rushing out of all building in the golden city, fearlessly launching offensives on Giant Kui and the other world guards.

Because of the life-risking offensives launched by these humanoid creatures, the battlefront on the side of Pan Heng world creatures was pushed back for over a thousand miles. Countless corpses of shadow leopards and green spirits were left on the ground.

Oddly shaped, scorpion-like mangonels were pushed out by these humanoid creatures. Along with thunderous booms, they threw out a wave of hundred-meters wide metal balls, which were thickly covered in thorns.

The giant metal balls were pushed forwards by a mysterious, strong force, that created circles of air-blasts as they struck destructively on the bodies of Ji Hao and the other tree giants.

Ji Hao quivered slightly. To him, these giant metal balls were like a breeze to the face, completely harmless at all. However, surrounding him, those hundreds of meters tall tree giants, who were turned into tree warriors by Giant Kui and the other world guards with their magical powers, were nearly shredded. Some of them were broken into two, with the pieces of their bodies darting hundreds of meters away.

'Dong, dong, dong'.

The metal balls fell from the sky like a thunderstorm. Within a blink of an eye, tens of thousands of tree giants were crushed.

Green spirits and shadow leopards suffered even worse. To them, those giant metal balls were absolutely disastrous. The metal balls landed heavily o the ground and then rolled unstoppably. Wherever a metal ball rolled, body parts were sent flying to the sky, while countless shadow leopards and green spirits were

ground up.

In the tallest great hall located in the middle of the city, tens of thousands of Yu Clan nobles in luxurious golden long robes and armors stood straight, calmly watching the fight through a giant golden mirror.

"The first line of defense was guarded by the Shito Family...who claimed to be elites? What a joke! They have already lost seventy-seven point five percent of their family warriors who followed us here this time, but the number of local creatures they killed was less than ten percent of their own losses." Standing on the nearest stairs to Blood Crown's throne, a Yu Clan man said blandly, "The Shito Family people failed to show their potential. They aren't qualified to follow Holy Blood Crown in this expedition...Send all the rest of their members to the dare-to-die troop."

"The Kaya Family guarded the second line of defense...Not bad, not bad, really not bad. I heard that three-thousand years ago, they conquered a mid-scale world. Creatures from that world were born as fighters. Are these the 'iron bones' from that world? Very high-quality slave warriors. Strong, tough-minded, with no fear of death, and will never draw back." This Yu Clan man nodded in satisfaction and continued, "The Kaya Family has given an outstanding performance. Holy Blood Crown will be glad to have such a family as his follower."

The Yu Clan man lowered his head, pointed at a grinning Yu Clan old man standing in the hall, and said, "The leader of Kaya Family, we have seen your potential...Therefore, release the second line of defense and let your brave warriors retreat. Give the Doyu Family on the third line of defense an opportunity. Family Doyu, are you ready?"

Ji Hao slapped hundreds of 'iron bones' to death, prepared to release a thunder magic for mass destruction to destroy the mangonels with an increasing number in front of him. But abruptly, hearing a whistle, all 'iron bones' who flooded out of the

golden city just now turned around and left, disappearing from the battleground at an unimaginable speed.

In the front, a sky blue ice screen suddenly appeared. Behind the ice, countless Yu Clan enchanters in dark blue robes rose into the air.

Chapter 1557: The Main Goal

'Charge, Charge.'

The blue ice screen was violently shattered by Giant Kui and the other world guards. The group of Yu Clan enchanters with fragile physical bodies died in an overwhelming wave of green thunderbolts before they could do anything to hurt their enemies.

Another line of defense was raised. Giant Kui and the other world guards roared furiously and led the tremendous army of Pan Heng world creatures, proceeding along into the city.

With his palm, Ji Hao crushed a beast-like metal puppet which had countless sharp flywheels inlaid in its body, then raised his head and gazed at the central area of the city in confusion.

"Are they training their warriors with us? Or...?"

The Pan Heng world army had already broken tens of lines of defense, and Ji Hao found the situation getting weirder and weirder. Warriors from the tens of lines of defense didn't share commanders, and didn't even seem to have a connection with each other. Besides, from some lines of defense, large numbers of strange slave warriors appeared, but in the other lines of defense, the warriors that fought against Ji Hao and Pan Heng world creatures were Pan Yu world non-humankind beings. From Ji Hao's point of view, if all those strange slave warriors, such as the 'iron bones', could act in close coordination with the non-humankind troops, their general battle effectiveness would rise by at least ten times.

However, there was no cooperation, no connection either. Warriors from every line of defense of the golden city fought all by themselves. Whether the result was good or not, the warriors from every line of the defense would fight for an hour at most. After an hour of their appearance, they would retreat, leaving the battleground to the next line of defense, even if they managed to

stop the Pan Heng world army.

Under the circumstances, the Pan Heng world army led by Giant Kui and the other world guards had already reached hundreds of miles into the city, killed tens of millions of non-humankind warriors, and suffered a heavy casualty too.

Somehow, Ji Hao felt worried. Blood Crown's subordinates seemed to not take the offensive of Pan Heng world creatures seriously. Ji Hao felt that they were playing a game. Indeed, a game, an actual game!

"Retreat!" Following a shrill howl, about ten strange creatures with wolf heads and human bodies, who were standing in front of Ji Hao and preparing to cast a magic, each gave Ji Hao a complicated glance, then raised their curved staffs and transformed into strands of drifting sands, drawing back.

Countless wolf-headed creatures with round shields howled resoundingly while turning around and retreating. While retreating, they paid no attention to the storm-like arrows descending from the sky, even though the arrows had been landing on their backs, killing hundreds of millions of them.

These wolf-headed creatures didn't care about the death of their own kind at all. They withdrew from the battleground like tidewater, disappearing into buildings in the golden city within a blink of an eye.

A muffled wing-flapping noise could then be heard, as countless beautiful humanoid creatures with white wings and longbows rose from behind a group of buildings in the golden city. These six-meters-tall beautiful creatures pulled open their longbows and aimed at Ji Hao and the Pan Heng world army behind him. With the bowstrings buzzing intensely, countless arrows swished over, leaving beams of white light in the sky.

On the ground, green spirits pulled open their bows as well. Their arrows flew into the sky like a reverse heavy rain, towards

those beautiful creatures.

The two waves of arrows brushed against each other in the sky. Soon, along with a quick series of popping noise, the white arrows landed on Ji Hao and the other tree giants, penetrating the bodies of millions of green spirits and shadow leopards.

These white arrows exploded into white flames with an extremely high temperature the moment they landed on their targets. The white fire spread swiftly on Ji Hao's body, but he remained motionless, as it wasn't able to to do any harm to him. But unlike him, the other tree giants around him screamed in pain as their bodies were ignited. The white fire wrapped them up and incinerated them layer by layer. Within a couple of breaths, a hundred-thousand tree giants were cremated.

Green spirits and shadow leopards were set on fire too. The raging white fire spread, within which, countless shadow leopards and green spirits struggled and screamed, soon being turned into wisps of smoke.

Green arrows flew to those beautiful creatures, but the white fire condensed into fiery shields before their bodies. With a slight touch, all wooden green arrows were ignited, and not one managed to hurt those beautiful creatures.

Poisonous bugs marched towards these beautiful creatures, but as the white fire swirled in the sky, the bugs fell from to the ground while screaming. Since the war began, these winged beautiful creatures caused the most massive casualty to Pan Heng world army.

The white arrows landed on the bodies of Giant Kui and the other world guards too, starting white fires on their enormous bodies. However, they were gigantic and especially tough. Therefore, the white fire merely managed to burn their barks, but failed to do any actual harm to them.

Giant Kui and the other world guards roared thunderously,

wielded their cudgels, and released fierce thunderbolts that struck those beautiful creatures.

Apparently, those beautiful creatures weren't strong enough to rival powerful beings at this level. Their fire shields were crushed, and the green thunderbolts landed straight on their bodies, carbonizing them.

Ji Hao too growled in rage as he followed closely behind Giant Kui. Taking cover from a shank of Giant Kui, he raised his six arms and swung his cudgels fiercely forward, releasing waves of green thunderbolts. Yu Yu divine thunder, powerful and violent, cracked the space like the sharpest sword, instantly penetrating the chests of millions of beautiful creatures.

At the same time, his seventy-two clones darted out from a group of green spirits, pulled open their bows, and shot out the arrows of Green Rain from the twenty-four solar terms. Each Green Rain arrow could split into ten, then to a hundred, then to a thousand, then to ten-thousand...Within a second, the arrow wave grew ten-thousand times greater in size, covering the air and all beautiful creatures.

With a gentle yet thriving original life-force that erupted from the earth, the Green Rain arrows 'softly' penetrated the fiery white shields, leaving thousands of holes in the body of each beautiful creature.

In the magnificent, sacred great hall, a red beam of light suddenly flashed across the golden mirror.

In the mirror, Ji Hao and his seventy-two clones were marked by seventy-three small red circles.

"Dangerous targets? This is strange! Except for the eight-hundred giants who are supported by the will of this world, no such dangerous targets have ever emerged from these weak local creatures before...Lord, should we launch a strike to clean them out?" A Yu Clan old man, who was controlling the golden mirror,

said loudly.

Slowly, the Yu Clan man standing on the highest stair glanced at the mirror, slightly waved his hand, and responded, "Send a squad of Sun and Moon Knights to clean these little things which broke the balance of the battleground.

Chapter 1558: Seeing Samsara Again

Standing on the highest stair, the Yu Clan man gently drew a line on a scroll with his finger and said, "The 'feather-kind' archers from Ado Blue Family...Very good for long-distance support. Ado Blue Family conquered their world and destroyed their natural enemies, the 'shell-kind'. Therefore, their reproduction rate has been raised largely."

"Hmm, good fertility. At present, they can provide the Ado Blue Family with a billion mature archers every thirty years...In two centuries, this number will be higher than ten-billion, right?" The Yu Clan man pointed at a nervous Yu Clan old man standing in the hall in satisfaction.

"Good! Ado Blue Family people, with the power of the feather-kind's world, you are qualified to follow Holy Blood Crown." Raising his head as he looked at the golden mirror, this Yu Clan man smiled blandly and continued, "How many archers are still alive on the battleground by now? Less than ten-million? No need to retreat. Let them launch the final strike, aimed at ordinary local creatures."

Glancing at the scroll, the Yu Clan Man smiled and said, "Next line of defense, the Moro Family...Eh? You brought magical, spiritual creatures from the 'dim-kind', didn't you? Interesting, very interesting. Let us see the power of the dim-kind. Put up a good show. The Moro Family is relatively strong among mid-grade families. I look forward to your performance."

In the hall, a Yu Clan middle-aged man politely and deeply bowed to the ones standing on the stairs, then took out a golden crystal ball and quickly gave out his order. A cold sweat had been streaming down his forehead.

Ji Hao stood on the battleground as he watched the raging white fire rise from the bodies of hundreds of feather-kind archers with

beautiful white wings. These archers dropped their bows and arrows, then ferociously pounced on Ji Hao and the army of green spirits behind him like flying moths darting into the fire.

Before they approached, Ji Hao crushed hundreds of them in his surroundings. But, in other areas, Giant Kui and the other world guards didn't manage to stop these nimble feather-kind warriors due to their enormous bodies. The world guards watched the feather-kind warriors leave long streaks of white flame in the sky and falling to the ground like shooting stars.

White mushroom clouds rose from the earth, while fist-sized fireballs darted everywhere. The feather-kind warriors detonated themselves, and the fire erupted from the body of each of them covered the area over ten miles in radius, burning at least ten-thousand green spirits to death.

The desperate final strike launched by over ten-million feather-kind warriors caused a severe damage to the army of green spirits. All green spirits around Ji Hao were nearly wiped out. Only about a hundred-thousand of them right behind Ji Hao were shielded, luckily surviving the explosions.

Before the dazzling fire released from the explosions faded and more green spirits rushed up from behind, strong spirit power waves were abruptly released from the series of buildings in front of Ji Hao.

Ordinary creatures weren't able to discover these enemies with their eyes, but with Ji Hao's eye of Dao, he saw countless twisted spiritual creatures flooding out of the series of buildings. These creatures had incredibly strong spirit powers, and all their spirit power had merged together, vibrating at the same frequency. All of a sudden, an overwhelming spiritual strike was launched.

Ji Hao failed to stop the strike. Behind him, the last one-hundred-thousand green spirits and their shadow leopards paused instantly, as their souls were all crushed by the spiritual strike.

They thudded heavily on the ground. They were still breathing, and their hearts were still beating, but they had died already.

Silently, green spirits fell to the ground wave after wave. Gradually, hundreds of meters tall tree giants also fell down; the spiritual strike even affected the shortest few world guards, made them tremble, and forced them to bumble backward for a few steps.

"Exotic evil things." Ji Hao murmured. These dim-kind creatures were like an original version of sky devils, which were shapeless, traceless, and existed in a weird spiritual form, hard to be defeated through usual means.

But, in comparison with those scary sky devils, these dim-kind creatures were so easy to deal with. Ji Hao didn't even need to cast a magic for them, because the moment his Pan Gu bell rang, all of them would be gone. However, at the moment, Ji Hao was a tree giant, and it wasn't convenient to let out the Pan Gu bell in front of everyone. After all, represented by Giant Kui, all world guards seemed to be a bit one-track-minded. If they found out that Ji Hao was an 'extraneous devil', heaven knew what they would do to him.

Ji Hao came to Pan Heng world to bring Blood Crown a trouble, not to start a war against Pan Heng world creatures.

Ji Hao was hesitating, but suddenly, the space around him dimmed down. A destructive power rose straight to the sky, while dense and dark streams of mist rolled out from the air, surrounding Ji Hao and his seventy-two clones, who were in the shapes of green spirits.

Strong and sticky forced wrapped Ji Hao up and slowed him down. Next, torrents of fierce power approached from all directions. From the dark mist, twelve handsome, god-like Sun and Moon knights in golden armors showed their faces. Above their heads, three suns and nine moons were glowing, creating a

suffocating scary aura.

"Barbarians, you have caught the attention of our lord. He sent us to kill you especially. You should feel honored." One beautiful and blond Sun and Moon knights smiled to Ji Hao and said with a gentle voice, "Some mid and small-scale families want to follow our Master. The test for their family warriors is in progress. You have broken the balance of this battle...In fact, I'm okay with it, because it's actually fun to make more of those overconfident mid and small family people die or get injured."

Spreading his hands, this young knight helplessly sighed and said, "But, since our chief executive officer has ordered us to clean you out, we have no choice but to follow it."

The dense and heavy dark mist surrounded the twelve Sun and Moon Knights. Soon, a three-thousand-meters-tall, single-eyed giant stood up from the mist.

Ji Hao raised his eyebrows. A test for families? Was the chief executive officer under Blood Crown's command running a test for the family warriors of every mid and small-scale family,which intended to follow Blood Crown? No wonder the non-humankind army acted so weirdly just now.

"Interesting! You are actually using a life-taking battleground as a testing tool. I do admire the cruelty of your Pan Yu world very much." Ji Hao smiled and raised his six giant cudgels. Back in Pan Gu world, he once destroyed a Sun and Moon Samsara violently. Therefore, he now had no fear of this formation at all.

"Eh? How do you know we're from Pan Yu world?" The single-eyed giant looked at Ji Hao in surprise, asking the question without much of thinking. Ji Hao swung his cudgels with his greatest strength and accurately hit on the slight flaw located where the powers of the twelve knights merged.

Following a thunderous boom, the Sun and Moon Samsara formation disintegrated. By wielding his six giant cudgels together

twice, Ji Hao smashed the heads of the twelve Sun and Moon knights like raw eggs.

Chapter 1559: Pan Heng Green Ancestor

Breaking the Sun and Moon Samsara great formation with one move, Ji Hao grinned at the central area of the golden city.

Since some people now had their eyes on him, Ji Hao had no reason to keep hesitating. Letting out the Pan Gu bell, he banged his giant cudgels on the bell with all his strength. Along with an earth-shaking bell ring, countless dim-kind creatures were crushed immediately. Ji Hao burst into wild laughter, then turned around and ran right away.

While rushing, Ji Hao's body began shrinking. As he reached a hole on the golden shield of the city, he had shifted back to his real shape. His seventy-two clones turned into broken hair and were incinerated by a strand of golden fire long ago.

"A human being?" In the magnificent golden hall, a large group of Yu Clan nobles paused in shock.

A human being, here in Pan Heng world? What was going on? Did human beings manage to track Blood Crown? Barbarians from Pan Gu world, how could they ever be so capable? Or, did anything unexpected happen?

The chief executive officer, who stood high above the others, remained silent for a short while. As a cold light flashed across his eyes, he began talking, "Those low-grade families in Pan Gu world sold our whereabouts. They are weak low-grade families indeed, but through calculations based on the changes of the great space navigation formation, they can still find out our new destination."

Shaking his head, this chief executive officer murmured to himself, "Red Lei, Dim Cloud...Those useless things are dead. Yemo Tian, did he too...No, he shouldn't be. If that does happen, it won't be so easy for us to reasonably occupy Pan Gu world and the group of great worlds around it."

Ji Hao rushed out of the golden shield, flashed through the air, and quickly ran away from the golden city.

In this battle, Blood Crown's subordinates didn't send out any true elites. They simply wanted to test the family warriors from some mid and small-scale families. Once they deployed their true elites, the possible results would be scary. Giant Kui and the other world guards were already in difficulty now. Facing the true elites under Blood Crown's command, they would certainly lose.

Unless Pan Heng world creatures could show a greater power, Ji Hao wouldn't play this game with them. Ji Hao came to Pan Heng world because Si Wen Ming needed a cover, as he was secretly forging the nine caldrons back in Pan Gu world. Other than that, Ji Hao also came to Pan Heng world to cause Blood Crown as many troubles as possible, to postpone his journey to Pan Gu world. Ji Hao never thought about fighting against Blood Crown all alone.

Outside the city, from those broad paths created by giant vines, green spirits mounted on shadow leopards had still been ceaselessly rushing out. Countless green spirits gathered into a boundless tree ocean, flooding to the broken golden shield of the city. Ji Hao had no way to find out exactly how many green spirits existed in Pan Heng world.

Some other strange creatures could also be found among the army of green spirits, such as light green scorpions, large centipedes with hundreds of pairs of legs, and oddly shaped snakes. In the sky, other than the bee-like poisonous bugs which showed up the earliest, more and more highly poisonous flying bugs popped up, buzzing deafeningly while darting to the golden city.

These poisonous bugs weren't able to do any harm to Ji Hao. But, watching them gradually cover the sky while marching to the city, Ji Hao's scalp was still numbed. This was the will and the strength of this world. Even though this world was far weaker than Pan Gu world, the power erupted from it could still be terrifying once the

world was infuriated.

"It's so strange. The spirit of Pan Gu world...Except for the most basic circulation of the great Dao of nature...I've never sensed the spirit of Pan Gu world." Ji Hao abruptly frowned and wondered.

Facing an invasion, the spirit of Pan Heng world was waking up. The world itself had been summoning all creatures in this world to raise armies, to fight the invaders. But, back in Pan Gu world, Ji Hao never sensed its original spirit.

Pan Gu world was powerful. If it could summon all creatures in the world with its true will, and force all living beings in the world to fight the non-humankind with all their powers...If this did happen, not to mention the other species, as far as Ji Hao knew, together, the dragon-kind, the phoenix-kind, and the humankind would have destroyed the entire Yu Dynasty long ago.

But the spirit of Pan Gu world was never sensed...Was it gone along with Saint Pan Gu?

Ji Hao sank into his thought. Abruptly, a green figure flashed across his eyes. That was a short elderly humanoid creature, wearing a strangely styled, green-colored long robe, emitting a faint herbal aroma from his entire body as he blocked Ji Hao's way. He was slightly shorter than Ji Hao, with a wrinkled face, but seemed to be strong and energetic. Smilingly, he showed up in front of Ji Hao while holding a staff.

Ji Hao scanned him by using spirit power and sensed a ridiculously strong power from this humanoid creature. This elderly humanoid creature was even like a green sun. The power contained in his body was even much greater than the power of the strongest world guard.

Peng Heng world guards had lifeless powers, simply stored in their bodies, and could only be used instinctively. But inside the body of this elderly humanoid creature, his power had been flowing ceaselessly along a clear meridian. Efter every circulation,

his power would grow slightly stronger.

Apparently, he had already mastered a special cultivation method.

Ji Hao couldn't figure out his current power level, because the power of this elderly humanoid creature was immeasurable. After all, when he suddenly showed up just now, Ji Hao didn't even know how he did that.

"Elder!" Ji Hao calmly bowed to this creature.

"My friend!" He mildly bowed back to Ji Hao. With a strange accent, he used the language of the humankind. Even though he sounded a bit like two thin wooden slips blown by a wind, Ji Hao managed to understand him.

"These years, some extraneous devils invaded Pan Heng world. I have been watching them, and learned your language from them." Smiling warmly, he said, "In your language, my name should be... Green Ginseng."

Scratching his head, Green Ginseng grinned and continued, "Because in both terms of appearance and effects, I am ninety-nine percent similar with ginsengs in your Pan Gu world. But, I am green in color, so as a name, Green Ginseng is perfect for me."

An old ginseng baby? Ji Hao looked at Green Ginseng from head to toe in a complicated way, then asked, "Elder Green Ginseng, what can I help with?"

Green Ginseng smiled. He too carefully looked at Ji Hao up to down, then gently nodded and said, "I am one from the first generation of creatures in Pan Heng world, from a generation older than Giant Kui and the other muddleheads. So, the kids call me 'Green Ancestor'."

Breathing deeply, Green Ginseng showed a serious face and said, "Do us a favor, and we will give you enough in return. How's that?"

Ji Hao looked at him in surprise and asked, "What favor? Why do

you have to ask me to do it?"

Green Ginseng blinked, carefully looked around, and responded, "Help us to kill Pan Heng for good!"

Chapter 1560: Kill Pan Heng

On a completely empty rock hill without any plant, not even a moss, Green Ginseng pulled off a few beard hair of his and threw them to the ground. Immediately, tender, soft green sprouts grew out in the surroundings.

Circle by circle, the sprouts expanded to the foot of the hill. Wherever the sprouts reached, a faint green mist was released, drifting in the air. Ji Hao clearly saw that touched by the mist, all the other plants around the hill quickly withered and dehydrated, then turned into puffs of ash, dissipating in the air.

In confusion, Ji Hao looked at Green Ginseng.

"We have to be careful, because no now knows which grass, which tree, or which moss around us is spying for Pan Heng." Green Ginseng sat on the ground, took out a pair of wooden cups, then poured Ji Hao a full cup of green juice with a nice aroma.

"Will you try it? It's my spirit dew soaked with the flowers and fruits from the other few old ones. To us, this is just a tasty drink, but it seems to be very helpful to creatures with fleshy bodies like you." Green Ginseng picked up his own cup, took a sip, then let out a long breath.

Ji Hao took over the wooden cup and scanned it with his spirit power.

A pure life-force gathered in the juice in a strange form. The amount of natural power contained in this small cup of juice was as great as the amount contained in a large-scale crystal mine! Especially the incredibly strong life-force in the natural green power in the juice, it was like an active volcano which could erupt at any moment.

"Great treasure!" Ji Hao raised the cup, nodded to Green Ginseng, then emptied the cup.

A soft, refreshing power instantly spread to every corner of his body. Ji Hao clearly sensed an increase in the density of his body. He felt that every single cell of his body had been cleaned, and his power flow was sped up. Even the Pan Jia sun glowed brighter than before inside his body.

Roughly, this cup of juice improved Ji Hao's general power by one percent! This was already amazing. If he were an ordinary Senior Magus, this cup of juice might have boosted up his power by ten times! Pan Heng world indeed was a world of green power, that even a leaf from these countless years old 'green ancestors' was a supreme treasure.

"I may have misheard you. Elder, did you say 'kill Pan Heng'?" Fiddling with the exquisite wooden cup, Ji Hao looked at Green Ginseng curiously.

Watching Ji Hao 'unguardedly' drink up the cup of juice, Green Ginseng smiled delightfully and responded, "My friend, you do trust me. The others may not dare to drink this cup of juice. Indeed, we are going to kill Pan Heng."

While speaking, Green Ginseng again looked around with extra carefulness and cautiousness. Ji Hao even discovered a trace of fear on his face. He acted like 'Pan Heng', simply as a name, was like a poisonous snake that could give him a lethal strike at any moment, and he seemed to always keep vigilance towards some unpredictable danger.

Ji Hao narrowed his eyes. Pan Heng was the creator of this world, the owner of this world, while Green Ginseng and the other green ancestors should all be Pan Heng's descendants. Back in Pan Gu world, many human clans had still been worshiping Saint Pan Gu as their most original ancestor.

Green Ginseng and the other Pan Heng world creatures had no reason to kill Pan Heng, unless the latter had been causing them serious threats. Judging by his gingerness, Pan Heng might truly

have thrown him and his friends into great troubles.

"Why me?" Ji Hao didn't ask about the reason, but instead, was curious about why Green Ginseng and his friends chose him.

"Fear!" Green Ginseng seriously looked at Ji Hao and said, "From you, our original souls sensed a fear. Your power, your terrifying power is the natural terminator for all plant lives! Scorching, violent, burning everything; the power of fire, but scarier than all fires we know."

Swallowing his saliva with difficulty, Green Ginseng continued with a dry voice, "Your power makes you a natural terminator for us, which means you are also a terminator for Pan Heng. So, you have a chance to kill Pan Heng for good."

Remaining silent for a while, Ji Hao smilingly shook his head to Green Ginseng and said, "Since you have noticed me, you must have noticed the one with the power of quietus as well. If you ask him..."

Ji Hao was talking about Priest Mu. Based on what he knew about Priest Hua and Priest Mu, if Green Ginseng and his friends asked them for help, they would certainly do it with pleasure, without refusing."

"They are the same as us." Green Ginseng frowned, shaking his head. "They are magical plant lives from the Chaos, a grade, or many grades higher than us. But, as plant lives, we clearly sensed their powers. They are very powerful plant lives."

Snorting slightly, Green Ginseng emptied his cup and continued, "We can't let plant lives step into this. If they do it, they may...If they attain Pan Heng's body, or if any unexpected change happens, we cannot tolerate that."

Looking at Ji Hao with an extremely serious expression, Green Ginseng said with expectation, "What we need is the complete death of Pan Heng. Incinerate him, turn him into ashes, make him

disappear without leaving a trace. We can't do it. Our powers cannot do any harm to him, because our powers originate from him. We can't hurt him."

"In this case, why?" Ji Hao quickly interrupted Green Ginseng and asked, "Pan Heng created this world, created you, and you all originated from him. Why do you want him to die for good? And, why are you so sure that I can help you kill him?"

A trace of fear and despair crossed Green Ginseng's wrinkled face as he quivered and responded hoarsely, "If he lives, we will all die. We know it. We will all be devoured by him...Some of my old friends have already gone missing. Perhaps, the next will be me."

Slowly raising his head, Green Ginseng looked at Ji Hao and said word by word, "He suffered severe injuries, and he has been in a deep sleep. In the past countless years, he barely woke up for a few times...He joined the great war against Saint Pan Gu. His injuries, were caused by Saint Pan Gu!"

Ji Hao's eye corners twitched intensely. "Old man, do you know Pan Heng?" In his spiritual space, he shouted out directly.

The mysterious man showed a half of his face from the spiritual space, then snorted scornfully and said, "Back then, I...Eh, Pan Gu killed so many lives. Who can remember the little ones like that? Judging by the original power of this Pan Heng world, this Pan Heng was no more than an insignificant little thing. Who had the patience to memorize him?"

With the fear and despair, Green Ginseng continued, "Pan Heng is a man-eating vine...He is extremely brutal, heartless...He fled back from Pan Gu world with a giant axe inlaid on his body. He..."

"Axe?!" In Ji Hao's spiritual space, the mysterious man showed his entire body and yelled out loud with a hoarse voice, "Ji Hao kid, kill him, kill Pan Heng! Get the axe back! Damn it. It was he who stole it!"

Chapter 1561: The Story of Pan Heng

Green Ginseng began telling Pan Heng's story. Pan Heng was a man-eating vine. Before he created a movable body for himself and created a world, he had killed countless fierce creatures in the Chaos. By devouring blood and flesh, absorbing the others' life-force, he grew rapidly.

Pan Heng world didn't belong to Pan Heng. The original owner of this world was a powerful, peaceful Chaos being, which looked like an enormous bear with three-hundred and sixty wings.

Pan Heng traveled across the Chaos, killing any living being that was weaker than him. The original owner of Pan Heng world suffered a sneak attack from Pan Heng in sleep, being killed and devoured by him.

Pan Heng attained the unmeasured embryo of this world, then started changing the nature of the world with his own power. Forcibly, he turned it into a world embryo of green power from one with all natural powers in balance. Due to Pan Heng's evil nature, the cruel and malicious plant lives generated from Pan Heng world had taken an absolute advantage in this world.

After the world was created, Pan Heng occupied the central area, using this world as a giant trap. The peaceful appearance of this world attracted countless Chaos creatures. With home-field advantage, Pan Heng killed all of these Chaos creatures, and devoured them as his strong replenishments.

The remains of those devoured Chaos creatures enriched the soil in Pan Heng world. Because of them, Pan Heng world had generated a batch of especially evil creatures. Back in the prehistorical era of this world, which was under Pan Heng's control, this world was occupied by ferocious, fierce, and poisonous creatures, and was covered in carnivorous plants, highly poisonous bugs, and animals.

Back in that era of terror, kind rule followers like Green Ginseng lived precarious lives. At any moment, they could be devoured and become someone's replenishment.

Therefore, although Green Ginseng and the other 'green ancestors', who survived from that horrific era, weren't strong figures, every single one of them was a master of escape. They could disappear momentarily without a trace, and some of them even mastered illusion-creating magics and soul-confusing tricks. Meanwhile, they had also dug quite deep into all kinds of poisoning magics and secret detoxicating magics.

One day, Pan Heng suddenly sensed an extremely strong life-force coming from a long distance away. He was thrilled. Loudly, he declared to the world that he had found his 'direction of great Dao'. He then led all fierce creatures in Pan Heng world to march into the Chaos excitedly.

Hundreds of years later, Pan Heng returned from the Chaos all alone. He was forced back to his original shape as a man-eating vine. Before he could say a word, he fell into a deep sleep. All fierce creatures who followed him into the Chaos were gone, and no one made it back.

Because of the death of all the fierce ones, who were much stronger than Green Ginseng and the other green ancestors, represented by Green Ginseng, kind green ancestors rose in Pan Heng world. They spent a very long period of time to clean out all the evil creatures left in Pan Heng world. They had also raised and cultivated eight-hundred world guards, including Giant Kui, and countless peaceful tree giants and creatures like green spirits, composing the current Pan Heng world.

In the past countless centuries, Green Ginseng and the other green ancestors attempted to take risks and try killing Pan Heng. But at last, they helplessly found out that their powers were originated from Pan Heng, which meant they weren't capable of doing any harm to him.

At last, they chose to firmly seal Pan Heng's sleeping place, to isolate Pan Heng from the green power in this world to the greatest extent, and to slow his healing, keeping him injured and deeply asleep.

As time went by, Pan Heng woke up for a few times. Each time, he was only awake for a very short span of time, gave a series of curses and yells, then fell back asleep from exhaustion.

However, in the recent ten-thousand years, Green Ginseng and his friends discovered some strange changes happening in Pan Heng's sleeping place. In the meantime, quite a few green ancestors went missing. According to their inference, Pan Heng might have already restored a part of his power, and was killing green ancestors, devouring them to replenish himself in an orderly way.

"If we guessed right, those Yu Clan idiots managed to sneak into Pan Heng's sleeping place." With a gloomy face, Green Ginseng murmured, "Idiots. They brought themselves to him! The blood and flesh are helpful to Pan Heng the most."

"Even worse, all the memories and experiences that belonged to the living beings which were devoured by Pan Heng would be absorbed by him too. He must have known everything." Green Ginseng glanced at Ji Hao and continued. His eyes were as clear as the eyes of a child.

With that fear and despair, Green Ginseng murmured, his face twisted, "He knows everything...Once he regains his power, we, who dared to seal his sleeping place, will all die. The tree giants and green spirits raised and cultivated by us with years of efforts, will all die...Saint Pan Gu has fallen, we all know it. He will march to Pan Gu world, and you human beings will become his preys."

Shaking his head, Green Ginseng gave a bitter smile and said, "He wouldn't eat all of you at one time. He is good at raising livestock. Back then, those fierce creatures were actually his livestock. When

there was no Chaos creature falling into his trap, he would always satisfy his craving with those."

Ji Hao's mouth corner twitched. A pre-world men-eating vine from the Chaos which knew how to raise livestock?

But, none of that mattered. What truly mattered was that axe, which made the mysterious man growl in rage.

"Did you say that he brought an axe back from the Chaos?" Ji Hao wore a curious face as he asked.

"A giant axe, with a destructive power. It almost chopped him into two." Green Ginseng clicked his tongue and responded with shame, "It was so close. The axe was almost hacked him into two. But unfortunately, the owner of the axe was probably exhausted at the time. It was so close."

Letting out a long breath, Green Ginseng looked at Ji Hao and said, "That axe is down in the core of his roots now. All these years, he has been coiling, sealing it with his roots. We all thought that he was going to absorb the axe. But, he was in sleep all the time, without the strength to absorb the axe."

"Go! Kill that Pan Heng!" The mysterious man roared in Ji Hao's spiritual space, "Ji Hao, if I'm right, that axe belonged to Saint Pan Gu. It was born with Saint Pan Gu. Hah, it turned out to be brought here by Pan Heng. No wonder I couldn't sense the Pan Gu axe back in Pan Gu world! Go! Kill that thing and retrieve the Pan Gu axe."

With a pair of eyes shining brightly with a blue light, the mysterious man shouted impatiently, "An axe is perfect for performing the five moves I taught you. Sure, you can use a sword too. You can merge the Pan Gu axe with your sword. Compared to the Pan Gu axe, the sword you're using now is rubbish! Rubbish!"

As the mysterious man was excitedly yelling in Ji Hao's spiritual space, he said to Green Ginseng calmly, "I'll take that axe...What

else can you offer me?"

Chapter 1562: The Chaos Spirit Milk

One shouldn't blame Ji Hao for being greedy. The axe belonged to Saint Pan Gu, and must be taken back.

Pan Heng had been in a deep sleep for long years. Even though Pan Heng world was way less powerful than Pan Gu world, after all, he was a 'saint' who created a world. As the saying went, 'a lean camel is always bigger than a horse'. To kill Pan Heng for good, undoubtedly, Ji Hao would need to take a huge risk.

If it weren't for that axe, Ji Hao wouldn't even want to talk to Green Ginseng!

No matter how much Green Ginseng and his friends could offer, that wouldn't be more important than Ji Hao's own life, would it? Ji Hao was quite satisfied with his current power. The Pan Gu bell for defense, the Pan Gu sword for offense, bringing out the best in each other, with the golden bridge for his protection. By now, Ji Hao had no excessive demands for any other treasure.

He would continue his cultivation step by step, with the great Dao taught by Yu Yu, the immeasurably great natural rewards power earned through the great contributions he made for the humankind, plus his high position as a divine emperor. What else would he be craving for? As Ji Xia said, he could hurry up to finish all kinds of troublesome works and marry Man Man and Shaosi, then have a whole bunch of kids who would laugh and roll all over the ground.

Why would he ever risk his life against a saint who created a world for the safety of Ginseng and the other Pan Heng world creatures?

Because of that axe... He had to take the axe back. He had to make a trip to Pan Heng's sleeping place. Since he had no choice but to go, Ginseng and his friends had to give him a satisfying offer.

Green Ginseng remained silent for a long while. Seriously, he looked at Ji Hao, then slowly nodded and said, "Except for myself and the other old dudes, and the kids who have started knowing things, you can take whatever you like from Pan Heng world."

Green Ginseng looked at Ji Hao honestly and said, "It has never been easy for the other old ones and me to live till now, so we don't want to be thrown into stoves, be cooked into a bowl of soup to nourish someone. Those smart kids are our hope of future, and they can talk, laugh, walk, and run; they look just like you. My friend, do you have the heart to harm them?"

Ji Hao blinked. This old Ginseng did know how to talk. Wasn't he right? Those plants in humanoid shapes, who could laugh, talk, and run, Ji Hao truly didn't have the heart to chop off their limbs to concoct magic drugs.

"So, what good things do you have in Pan Heng world?" Ji Hao asked straightforwardly, "Before I start, I need an upfront payment, also to improve my power conveniently. After all, I am going to kill a saint, a world creator. You better think of some treasures that can quickly, efficiently improve me."

Green Ginseng frowned and pondered for a while, then abruptly clapped his hands and said, "I know! Back then, Pan Heng killed the original owner of the world and devoured his entire body, but left his imperishable heart. When Pan Heng created this world, he merged the heart with the core of this world."

While speaking, Green Ginseng pulled off a beard hair of his and breathed on it. The hair transformed into a small cloud of green mist, spreading out and condensing into a beautiful landscape. A towering mountain stood straight on the ground, with thin streams of five-colored water flowing down its smooth sides, into a large pool by the mountain foot.

With the power of the world core, the imperishable heart made a connection with the Chaos. It had been absorbing the power of

creation from the Chaos day and night, generating water, fire, wind, thunder, and other natural powers from it, letting liquified natural powers flow down through the world core. Pan Heng put down his roots in this pool to absorb the pre-world green power form it and strengthen himself.

With regrets, Green Ginseng glanced at the pool and continued helplessly, "This pre-world dew of creation power has a miscellaneous nature. Only powerful beings like Pan Heng can withstand the destructive power contained in it while absorbing the pre-world green power from it to strengthen himself. The other old ones and I once tried to do the same. Aas a result, we nearly lose our minds and detonated ourselves..."

In Ji Hao's spiritual space, the mysterious man laughed out loud, "What a fortune, what a fortune! An imperishable heart? Hah, fortunately, that flying bear has fallen long ago. Otherwise, if I knew about him back then...Hah, what pre-world dew of creation power? Ignorant things, that's called Chaos spirit milk. It's needed for the creation of every world. Ji Hao, if you can absorb this full pool of spirit milk, hehe, no one at your level could ever hurt a hair of you."

But next, the mysterious man cursed sullenly, "What a reckless waste of treasure. The imperishable heart is merged with the core of this crappy world. What a waste, what a waste! If we can loot this world core back to Pan Gu world..." He snorted and continued, "Ji Hao...You will receive the great, immeasurable natural reward again!"

Ji Hao's eyes shone. Receiving the immeasurable natural reward again? He now knew how amazing the natural rewards could be. No one could have too much of that!

"Right? An imperishable heart! It's a powerful thing, that can even improve the original power of a world. If you can bring that treasure back to Pan Gu world, you will not only receive more natural reward power from the great Dao of nature, you can also

sell it to Netherworld Priest. That kid will empty his pockets and cry to beg you for the treasure!" The mysterious man laughed, "Since the creation of Pan Gu world, Netherworld Priest has occupied the Netherworld. These years, I can tell that he wants to attain his great Dao with the Netherworld."

"Sadly, the Netherworld doesn't want him...If he wants to attain his great Dao with the Netherworld, he needs to give it a satisfying offer. The imperishable heart, the world core merged with the heart will be the key for Netherworld Priest to truly control the Netherworld." The mysterious man yelled with laughter, "If you can bring it back, ask him for whatever you want."

Ji Hao slowly nodded and said, "Elder Green Ginseng, this pool of pre-world dew of creation, I'd like to try absorbing some. Success or not, I will kill Pan Heng for you. After that, we will talk about the rest of my payment. What do you think?"

Green Ginseng stared at Ji Hao in shock, pointing at the pool as he said, "That's dangerous! Even touching it slightly can make us explode and die. My friend, I am not underestimating you, but it's..." His voice even changed.

Ji Hao smilingly nodded and said in a deep voice, "I'm not silly enough to risk my life, am I?"

Green Ginseng frowned. After carefully observing Ji Hao from head to toe for quite a while, he clapped his hands and said, "Alright, follow me then. But my friend, please, be careful. Don't hurt yourself. We waited for so many years and finally found you, my friend, a natural terminator. If you get yourself killed, there would be no hope for us."

Shaking his head, Green Ginseng continued murmuringly, "We can't really go beg the two who shared the same origin with us, can we?" Green Ginseng clicked his tongue, "Even looking at them from a long distance away made my heart freeze. I don't think we want anything to do with them unless we have to."

Hearing him, Ji Hao laughed in his head. 'You're totally right. Priest Hua and Priest Mu, you better not to have anything to do with them.' Thought Ji Hao.

Following behind Green Ginseng through a teleporting formation composed of eighteen towering trees, Ji Hao soon came to the core of Pan Heng world.

Chapter 1563: The Ninth Turn of the Cultivation Method

Same as the Buzhou Mountain in Pan Gu world, the core of Pan Heng world stood straight on the earth, reaching directly to the sky. Standing at the foot of the mountain, one wouldn't be able to see the top. This mountain of world core was smooth and crystalline, covered in complicatedly interweaving natural stripes. Thin streams of Chaos spirit milk had been flowing ceaselessly down through these stripes.

A magical glow was emitting from the world core, making the surrounding space glisten like egg white.

Down the world core was the one-hundred and twenty-thousand miles wide pool, which was tens of thousands of miles deep, and fully containing the colorful Chaos spirit milk. A breeze blew across and brought an indescribable scent out of the milk. It wasn't an aroma, neither was it a stink; it wasn't light, and wasn't strong. It seemed to contain all smells in the world. The strangle scent even disordered Ji Hao's power glow.

When Green Ginseng guided Ji Hao out of the split trunk of a large tree, about ten stooped elderly people were already standing by the pool. They all looked at Ji Hao in a strange way.

"Little kid," An amiable old lady, who had pool-like shining eyes, abruptly began talking, "Don't risk your life...Back then, Old Gold didn't listen to us, because he believed that as a golden skin jade bone vine, he was strong enough. He did the same as Pan Heng had done, putting down his roots in the pool...He's still lying there now, half dead!"

"Not to mention Old Gold," An old man, whose long beard reached the ground and had earlobes dropping on his shoulders, coughed loudly and said, "Old Flower, you didn't listen to us either. You thought you can detoxify all poisons in the world as a red

heart dark jade orchid, so you dove in directly, then crawled back out screaming in tears. Hm, you weren't much better than Old Gold, were you?"

"Kid, it's not easy for us to meet a kid like you who can naturally suppress us but is nice, so you..." With brightly shining eyes, the group of green ancestors looked at Ji Hao and tried to persuade him to not risk his life.

Ji Hao smilingly bowed to them, then without hearing another word from them, he flashed across the air, transformed into a golden beam of light, and disappeared in the pool.

From Ji Hao's shadow, a twisted silhouette rose. Expressionlessly, Yemo Shayi stood up from Ji Hao's shadow, turned around, and looked at the group of green ancestors coldly, then said, "Please don't interrupt my Master's cultivation. Otherwise, don't blame me for being impolite."

The group of green ancestor glanced at each other, then creepily chuckled together.

Yemo Shayi's expressions changed instantly. He leaped up, transformed back into a shred of shadow, and attempted to run. But, a green vine had already darted out from behind, immediately weaving into three slipknots that tied him up perfectly.

The green vine floated in the midair, disabling Yemo Shayi from moving. The old lady, who talked the first, 'smilingly' walked to Yemo Shayi, raised her palm, and threw a series of spanks on Yemo Shayi's butt. The old lady seemed to have one foot in her grave, but she spanked with a scarily strong strength, causing a very loud sound to be produced. Yemo Shayi's face twisted in pain, which almost made him scream.

"Misbehaving little kids need to be spanked, hah! I have so many good grandsons, and so many naughty kids are taught well by me. Kid, if you talk big again, you may learn a serious lesson from me!" The old lady then grinningly took out a large piece of honey, which

emitted a strong aroma, and thrust it into Yemo Shayi's mouth.

"Behave yourself, and there will be sweets for you. Stay quiet and wait, let's see if your...'Master' can get through this!" Finishing this, the old lady turned around and walked to the edge of the pool, looking at it worryingly without saying another world to Yemo Shayi.

All of a sudden, an old man raised his staff and smashed on Green Ginseng's head. Thud! Green Ginseng was sent flying to a long distance away.

"You silly old thing, why did you tell the kid about this bloody place? If anything happens to him, if Pan Heng truly wakes up..." In fear, the other green ancestors pointed their fingers at Green Ginseng and began complaining.

Green Ginseng's head swelled. Rolling up his eyeballs, he squatted on the ground and buried his head in his arms. Hearing the other green ancestors, he dared not to even raise his head.

At the moment, down in the bottom of the pool, Ji Hao was never in a better state.

He didn't need to move or activate his power, but naturally, the power of his Pan Gu body had been releasing from him, and the Chaos spirit milk in the pool had been permeating into his body like a smart living being.

He never felt so warm and comfortable, closing his eyes with delight. That warm and comfortable feeling made him want to sleep. He felt that he was back in his mother's womb. Without needing the mysterious man to explain a thing, Ji Hao had naturally learned a lot from the Chaos spirit milk.

Chaos spirit milk was a supreme spirit treasure produced in the endless Chaos. Pan Gu, Pan Yu, Pan Xi, Pan Jia, all these saints, who had the power to create worlds, were nourished by it when they were still embryos in the Chaos. The Chaos spirit milk made

them strong and healthy.

To after-world creatures, the Chaos spirit milk was the strongest poison. But, to the powerful ones who had the potential to become world creators, it was the best replenishment.

To Ji Hao, the Chaos spirit milk was the greatest magic drug for him to strengthen himself and cultivate his Pan Gu body. A drop of Chaos spirit milk could largely enhance his Pan Gu body. But now, this one-hundred and twenty-thousand miles wide pool was filled with Chaos spirit milk for his taking.

Streams of Chaos spirit light had been flowing rapidly on Ji Hao's body. He didn't need to do anything but naturally absorb the Chaos spirit milk, like a fetus absorbing nourishment in its mother's womb. Without making any extra effort, Ji Hao's basic-level Pan Gu body had been growing stronger and stronger.

His body began growing taller and stronger. He was about three meters tall, but soon, he reached three-hundred meters in height. Before long, he was tens of thousands of meters tall, and then he became a hundred miles tall giant, and his growth was still turning faster.

The cultivation method with nine turns sensed his rapidly improving body condition. This magical cultivation method activated itself, after which, Ji Hao's three-hundred-mile-tall body started shrinking slowly. Like a piece of iron which was converting into steel, the density of his body was increasing speedily.

The Chaos spirit milk had been flowing into his body without an end. His body then stopped shrinking, and began expanding again. As the cultivation method with nine turns operated faster and faster, his body again shrank quickly.

While shrinking and expanding, Ji Hao's physical strength had been soaring at an unbelievable speed. His blood flowing in his veins sounded like the natural stars orbiting in the sky. The rumbling noise could even shatter souls.

When Ji Hao reached thirty-hundred-and-sixty-thousand miles in height, the operation of the cultivation method with nine turns ceased.

The cultivation method had met its limit, the ninth turn. Ji Hao had cultivated himself to the limit of this cultivation method with nine turns, which was created by Priest Dachi, Priest Qingwei, and Yu Yu with their knowledge of Dao.

In the next moment, Ji Hao's body suddenly grew even more gigantic. His body condition broke the limit of the cultivation method with nine turns and stepped into a higher, immeasurable, mysterious level, that even Yu Yu and his brothers couldn't tell for sure.

Chapter 1564: True Pan Gu Boby

The moment Ji Hao broke the limitation of thirty-hundred-and-sixty-thousand miles of height and grew taller, he suddenly felt stiff for a second.

A blinding golden light burst from inside his body, penetrated his body, and condensed into a hazy figure around him. Countless strange spell symbols were faintly visible on the figure, while deep growls could be heard from it.

Along with a magical, fair-sounding rumbling noise, this hazy figure merged with Ji Hao's body. A scorching hot stream of power poured down into his body from the top of his head, momentarily flushing through his body for countless times. Ji Hao nearly screamed out in pain.

Every time the power stream flushed through his body, his body would shrink a little bit, and his bones would grow slightly stronger. Before, he needed to activate the cultivation method with nine turns with all of his power to gain extra strength. But by now, that strength completely belonged to him; it was accumulating inside his body, bit by bit.

Suddenly, Ji Hao figured out the secret of the cultivation method with nine turns. Priest Dachi, Priest Qingwei, and Yu Yu found a piece of Pan Gu's body; it might have been a finger, or a small piece of bone. But without a doubt, it was a remnant of Pan Gu, a part of Pan Gu's body.

They studied the body piece for countless years. Based on their own cultivations, they explored the secrets of the circulation of the great Dao in Pan Gu world, and finally created the cultivation method with nine turns.

That was a supreme cultivation method. Through this method, a cultivator could attain his or her great Dao with strength, and turn him or herself into a 'saint'. Yu Yu and his brothers hoped that

someone from their sect could reach the extreme of this cultivation method, build a Pan Gu body, and attain his or her great Dao with pure physical strength. This cultivator would become the strongest being and the best guardian of the sect.

Nevertheless, the great Dao of Yu Yu and his brothers wasn't purely about strength. Plus, the quantity of the remains of Pan Gu's body they found wasn't great enough for them to dig deep into the great Dao of strength. Therefore, even at the extreme of the cultivation method wth nine turns, a cultivator could not build a true Pan Gu body.

At the extreme of the cultivation method with nine turns, Ji Hao attained no better result than an obvious improvement of his physical strength. It was like adding brilliance to his present splendor, not so meaningful. After all, Ji Hao had now stepped onto the right path to a true Pan Gu body, which was far smarter and more advanced than the incomplete cultivation method with nine turns.

However, the cultivation method with nine turns did give Ji Hao a strong controlling force. Because of this cultivation method, while attaining a great strength, Ji Hao was also able to freely and flexibly control it.

Merely under the mysterious man's guidance, Ji Hao would become a violent giant who knew nothing more than madly hacking everything with his axe. But, with the cultivation method with nine turns, this wild giant would be able to carve rivers, mountains, fishes, bugs, all kinds of animal on dew drops, with the finest details.

The burning hot power stream was like a heavy hammer that struck Ji Hao back to about three-meters tall. As the power stream flew across his body over and over again, Ji Hao could clearly sense the existence of every single one of his cell, and control every slightest strand of power inside him.

That feeling was fabulous. A thick screen was shattered by his incomparably strong physical strength. Suddenly, Ji Hao realized that he could now shift into any shape with his strong and magical body, even without using Priest Hua's Dao of evolvement.

With his pure physical power, without casting any magic, Ji Hao was actually able to transform his body into anything in Pan Gu world, that was generated from the body of Saint Pan Gu. He had the ability to control every slightest part of his body. Therefore, he could turn into anything he had seen back in Pan Gu world.

Flashing across the air, Ji Hao became a five-clawed golden dragon and curled in the pool.

He then smiled and turned into a seven-colored phoenix, slowly stretching his wings.

A dragon, a phoenix, a Taotie, a Piqiu, a Yaci, a tortoise, a rosefinch, a Bi Fang, a Gold Crow...

A giant tree, a vine, a grass, a moss, a flower, wheat, corn, sweet potato...

A hill, a rock, jade, gold, a pearl, colorful glass, coral, earth...

Animals and plants, the living beings and the lifeless things, the ones flying in the air and the ones swimming in the water, or the ones living underground...Without consuming any power, Ji Hao could turn his body into anything in Pan Gu world under his will.

Different from the results of shape-shifting magic, when Ji Hao turned into another being, he would actually become it. For example, when he turned into a dragon, he was a true pure-blood dragon, and could even be authenticated by the divine treasure with the dragon ancestor's bloodline. When he turned into a phoenix, he was a real phoenix with all nature-given powers of a phoenix. He could even be reborn in the fire.

This kind of a transformation was based on his physical body instead of magic power. Therefore, no energy vibration would be

caused during his transformation. Not one, not even powerful beings like Priest Hua and Priest Mu could recognize him after his transformation, unless they saw him do that.

This was a true great power, an unimaginable power delivered by Pan Gu body.

His bones creaked in his body. The cultivation method with nine turns finished its final strengthening of Ji Hao's body. He then began absorbing the Chaos spirit milk at an amazingly high rate, while his body started growing rapidly once again.

Ten miles, a hundred miles, a thousand miles, ten-thousand miles...

His strength had been growing along with his body. Ten miles, a hundred miles, a thousand miles, ten-thousand miles...His physical state soared and soared. Chaos power streams spread on his body and condensed into giant dragons, coiling on his limbs and roaring silently.

Inside his body, the boundless void started expanding. The Pan Jia sun floated inside him, all alone and seeming to be so small. The void suddenly turned so vast that the Pan Jia sun only occupied less than one ten thousandth of it.

This void represented Ji Hao's current capacity. He was able to take over ten-thousand suns like the Pan Jia sun into his body.

With efforts, he could even swallow the Pan Gu sun with his current body, and truly turn the Pan Gu sun into a source of his energy.

Ji Hao growled, as a one-hundred and eighty-thousand miles tall giant slowly rose from the drained pool. His head penetrated the clouds. As he raised his arms, a hurricane was started. Countless dragons condensed from Chaos power streams coiled on him, letting out muffled roars, making Green Ginseng and the other green ancestors feel dizzy. They exclaimed and fell to the ground

one after another.

Ji Hao raised his head and looked at the nine suns in the air.

The suns in Pan Heng world were hotter than the Pan Jia sun. The sun power that belonged to a Pan Heng sun was about a hundred times greater than if of the Pan Jia sun.

Looking at these suns, Ji Hao gave a grin. 'Nothing too bad would happen to Pan Heng world if I take three to five suns, right?'

"Good." In his spiritual space, the mysterious man looked at Ji Hao's gigantic body, then nodded in satisfaction, "Little guy, go, kill Pan Heng. Get the...axe back."

Chapter 1565: The Sealing Place

Ji Hao raised his head and gave a deep roar, then pressed his hands on the core of Pan Heng world.

Green Ginseng and the other green ancestors were horror-struck. Under their witnesses, the core of Pan Heng world quaked intensely, then along with a series of thunderous creaking noise, the smooth and straight world core was pulled about a thousand miles higher by Ji Hao.

Buzz! Under Ji Hao's colorless skin, his dragon-like muscles swelled. The Pan Jia sun burst with a dazzling light, nourishing his body. Next, the blinding light and heat erupted from every cell of his. He gasped deeply and slowly pulled the Pan Heng world core out of the ground, bit by bit.

"My!" Green Ginseng's eyes grew wider in shock, "The pre-world spirit dew of creation...A full pool...is gone...Not leaving a single drop...So enormous, his power...he, he, he..."

The group of green ancestors were all stunned. Sensing the suddenly raised, terrifying power of Ji Hao, they had no idea what exactly had happened to him. But the power they sensed from Ji Hao scared them; it brought them a fear that originated from their souls, from the beginning of their lives.

Even Pan Heng back at his golden age didn't bring them such a strong fear.

Like tiny mice which suddenly saw a golden-winged roc hovering in the sky, these green ancestors were naturally frightened and suppressed by Ji Hao at the level of bloodlines. They were paralyzed and frozen, that they couldn't even move a finger.

"Up!" Ji Hao roared thunderously. His lower legs had sunken deep into the earth of Pan Heng world. From his a pair of legs, strong Chaos power streams surged out, striking the earth

meridians of Pan Heng world with the supreme 'great Dao of strength'. The earth meridians buried underground were invaded by the violent Chaos power released from Ji Hao. The earth meridian were mainly occupied by the green power, but they were gradually agitated, turned colorless, and began moving underground like mad bulls.

Slowly, the earth meridians within the area hundreds of millions of miles in radius centered on the world core had woven into an enormous Chaos spell symbol. Strong Chaos creatures might recognize this spell symbol, which represented 'strength'.

An inexhaustible power flowed into Ji Hao's body, filling up his body. He was moving the world core with difficulty, but replenished by this power, he pulled the world core directly out of the ground. Gripping the world core with both hands, he raised it, then followed by a muffled boom, it was gone.

Inside his body, in the vast void, the Pan Jia sun floated in the middle. Standing beside the sun was a five-colored towering mountain, so tall and slim that it looked like a jade pillar. The mountain was over ten-thousand times taller than the Pan Jia sun, that its ends almost reached the edges of this vast void inside Ji Hao.

"No, bring me to Pan Heng." Ji Hao forcibly put the Pan Heng world core into his body, then his body began shrinking. Before long, he turned back to about three-meters tall, standing in front of Green Ginseng. With a pair of brightly shining eyes, he glanced at Green Ginseng and the other green ancestors. Immediately, the group of green ancestors quivered, instinctively lowering their heads. None of them dared to look at Ji Hao direct in the eyes.

"That...that was..." A green ancestor looked at Ji Hao, stuttered.

"Didn't you say that I can take anything I want from this world as my payment? It's nothing but a useless stone pillar. I want to bring it back to my world and use it as a stick. Don't you agree?" Ji Hao

abruptly opened the eye of Dao between his eyebrows. As a dim blue light flashed across that eye, he smiled and continued, "If you don't want to give me the stone pillar, it's alright. Killing Pan Heng will no longer be my responsibility."

The blue light in his eyes was much dimmer than the blue light that shone in the mysterious man's eyes, but it managed to release an indescribably strong pressure. Under the pressure, the green ancestor who tried to talk to Ji Hao began trembling. Soon, his eyes were unfocused, and even the waves of his soul power suddenly paused.

Puff! Stinky dark green blood spurted from the green ancestor's eyes, mouth, ears, and nose.

Ji Hao did nothing to him but scan across his body with the dim blue light from his eye of Dao, but the green ancestor felt like being punched right on the face. His bones were nearly crushed and soul nearly perished.

Green Ginseng and the other green ancestors were dumbfounded. By promising Ji Hao that pool of pre-world spirit dew of creation, what did they turn Ji Hao into? They were the green ancestors, the most powerful beings in the world, and they were under the protection of the will of Pan Heng world. Nevertheless, Ji Hao injured one of them with a glance. Which exact level was Ji Hao at now?

In shock, panic, fear, and regret, Green Ginseng carefully cupped his hands to Ji Hao, bowed and said, "My friend, congratulations for this major progress of your cultivation...Let's go to Pan Heng's sleeping place now. My friend, is there anything else that we can do for you?"

Ji Hao narrowed his eyes, wielded his hand, and said, "Elders, please take care of my friends. You found me, so you should know where they are, right?"

Green Ginseng and the other green ancestors nodded. Of course,

they knew that Ji Hao arrived in Pan Heng world with a city of great calamity. It was completely reasonable for them to take care of Ji Hao's friends while he went away to kill Pan Heng for them.

Beside the pool, the trunk of a towering tree suddenly split up. Quietly, a gate of light emerged. Following Green Ginseng and the other green ancestors, Ji Hao and Yemo Shayi walked into the gate.

Behind him was the giant empty pool, and beside the pool was a dark, bottles hole. The core of Pan Heng world was forcibly unrooted by Ji Hao. Afterward, the steady circulation of natural powers in Pan Heng world was slowly disordered.

Green ancestors had built countless magical teleporting formations and gates all over the Pan Heng world. Through tens of teleporting formations, Ji Hao finally came to a dark place.

Tens of thousands of miles higher than the ground was a dome of rock. Extra huge mushrooms stood in the surroundings, covered in glistening mosses. Many of these giant mushrooms had been glowing with colorful lights too.

Under their feet was a layer of silver grass, less than three inches tall, shining brightly. This kind of grass could be found all over the ground, illuminating this space with a bright yet not dazzling light.

Ji Hao looked around. This was a vast underground space, such that even with Ji Hao's current eyesight, no bound of this space could be seen.

Raising his head, Ji Hao saw countless strange symbols thickly carved on the rock dome. These symbols had been moving around on the rock like fishes in water. The atmosphere in this place was depressing, and the air in here barely contained any natural power.

Ji Hao even sensed that the giant mushrooms around him had been greedily and crazily absorbing the last bit of natural powers in this space, like small black holes, trying to empty the natural

powers in this area.

"This is the forbidden area where Pan Heng is resting and healing...We spent years, and made a lot of sacrifices to seal this place, in order to slow down Pan Heng's healing as much as possible." Carefully, Green Ginseng lowered his vice, put his mouth near Ji Hao's ear, and whispered.

Chapter 1566: Dead Giant Vine

Giant dragons flying while phoenixes dancing in the sky. Cranes hovered in the air, holding ganodermas in their beaks, as white apes politely stood side while carrying trays of fruits.

Clear spring water had been gushing out of the ground, colorful lotuses were swaying in the breeze. Sitting on the seedpods of these lotuses were golden shining people, hands crossed before the chests, wearing pearls and gemstones, chanting chorus.

Priest Hua sat on the tallest, golden lotus, legs crossed, with his fingers locked together. His one forefinger pointed at the sky, while the other forefinger reached to the ground. His entire body glowed with a bright light, and he had also been chanting. Every word he said turned into countless golden transparent petals, drifting everywhere.

This place was a broad valley. Down at the bottom of the valley was a flat grassland. Countless hundreds of meters tall tree giants politely kneeled on the ground, devotedly listening to Priest Hua. Behind these tree giants were an incalculable number of green spirits, kneeling with their foreheads and palms on the ground, listening to Priest Hua with reverence.

The golden petals drifting out of Priest Hua's mouth had been falling on the bodies of these tree giants and green spirits. Landing on their bodies, every petal would become a pure strand of power of Dao and merge into their bodies. The green power belonging to these tree giants and green spirits was gradually converted into a pure spiritual power of Dao, generated by a secret magic of Priest Hua.

"Master, what you said is ingenious beyond description!" A six-hundred-meters tall tree giant, who was clearly at a higher position than the others, laughed heartily. Suddenly, his bark, which was covered in mosses and vines, split up, then his body

shattered bit by bit. Amidst his howls of both pain and happiness, this tree giant trembled. A cyan mist wrapped a water-tank-sized crystal core that rose from his body, spun in the air, and turned into a priest in a green robe.

"Master, I am Mu Cang Cang. Please, mercifully bring me under your guidance. I will be brave and fearless. I am willing to sacrifice my body for the sect!" In his man shape, Mu Cang Cang still had a dense green mist lingering around his face. With large steps, he walked to Priest Hua's golden lotus, kneeled on the ground, and kowtowed ceaselessly.

Priest Hua smiled delightfully. He felt very proud.

Priest Mu was fighting against Blood Crown, for no other purpose but to buy time for Priest Hua to peacefully develop their sect in this world. Priest Hua had chanted in this valley for days, and finally, a tree was enlightened.

"Good, stand by my side, stay calm, and stay focused!" Priest Hua mildly grinned to Mu Cang Cang, then pointed his finger at Mu Cang Cang's head. A golden lotus flew out of his fingertip, entering into Mu Cang Cang's body. Along with the golden lotus, a scripture created especially for plant lives merged with Mu Cang Cang's soul, gifting him the power and cultivation which might require thousands, even tens of thousands of years of effort for him to attain independently.

Mu Cang Cang hurrahed, kowtowed to Priest Hua for a few more times, then politely stood by his golden lotus.

Priest Hua's eyes shone dazzlingly as he continued lecturing about his great Dao of evolvement. This time, a beautiful female green spirit chuckled while a cloud of mist rose from her head, with a water-like transparent lotus halfway bloomed in it.

The green spirit was overjoyed. She ran to Priest Hua's golden lotus and kneeled. Seeing her, Priest Hua laughed out loud, then hurriedly gifted her the scripture and sent a strand of power into

her forehead, telling her to also stand by his side.

Time passed, and on listening to Priest Hua, more and more tree giants turned into priests in green robes, while more and more green spirits had clouds of mist rising from their heads.

As the number of new disciples stood by Priest Hua's side nearly reached ten-thousand, Priest Hua's eye corners twitched.

"Eh? Why did the great Dao of Pan Heng world suddenly quake? It's not because the invasion of the non-humankind. On the contrary...it was like Pan Gu world without Buzhou Mountain. Why does the steady and regular great Dao circulation seem to be disordered slightly?"

"Does this world have a core, like Buzhou Mountain to Pan Gu world? Which powerful being stole it? Other than my brother and the one he is fighting against, did anyone else come to this world?"

Priest Hua frowned, ran a rough calculation with his fingers, but failed to gain any result after a long while. This was Pan Heng world, not Pan Gu world, which he was familiar with. He faintly sensed the source of the disordered Dao of nature, but he had no way to find out who exactly caused the abnormal disorderliness.

Wielding his sleeve, Priest Hua left a lotus seed clone continue his lecture, while he shifted his shape into a cyan crane and quietly flew into the sky, swiftly towards the core of the Pan Heng world, leaving a green beam of light.

In the sealed area, Ji Hao followed Green Ginseng and the other green ancestors, proceeding along for quite a while. Finally, he saw a dark, enormous mountain range in the front.

This mountain range extended for incalculable miles. The tens of peaks in front of Ji Hao were about twenty-thousand-miles in height, while the shortest branch of this mountain range was seventy to eighty miles long. The peaks of the branch ranges were over a thousand miles tall, and this mountain range had countless

branches.

The air in this place was dry and hot, without any moisture. The silver grasses, which could serve as a source of light, had disappeared in this area, because in here, the rich soil was replaced by red, barren desert.

Metal stakes stood on the boundary of the soil and sands, about three meters apart from each other. The exposed part of each human-head-sized metal stake was nearly six-feet-long, thickly embossed with all kinds of weird spell symbols. Ji Hao couldn't recognize these spell symbols, but he sensed a fierce power of destruction from them.

The barren desert surrounded this enormous mountain range. A large number of metal stakes were nailed on the edge of the desert, all connected, composing a powerful sealing formation that firmly caged the mountain range.

About ten green ancestors stood outside worryingly as they looked at the giant mountain range in the formation.

Ji Hao again opened his eyes of Dao. As the dim blue light sparkled in his eyes, his heart missed a beat because of what he saw. This 'mountain range' with an immeasurable size was actually a tremendous vine, and the 'branch' ranges were growing from it.

What numbed Ji Hao's scalp was that the vine and all its branches were thickly covered in round-shaped mouthparts, and every mouthpart was filled with dark-green, sharp teeth.

The vine was in sleep, but occasionally, some of its mouthparts would squirm slightly, clanging the teeth together and starting dazzling sparkles, along with deafening shrill noises.

What a ferocious creature!

Ji Hao had never seen something so evil-looking and weird before.

So gigantic! Was this Pan Heng's body? Ji Hao glanced at Green

Ginseng and the other green ancestors and thought. Indeed, these green ancestors were barely enough to fill Pan Heng's tooth gaps. The largest mouthpart Ji Hao found on this vine could swallow tens of mountains at one time.

"So this is Pan Heng!" murmured Ji Hao, "Where did he hide the axe?"

Chapter 1567: Make A Painstaking Investigation

By the site of the world core, Priest Hua locked his fingers together and swiftly took three circles around the bottomless hole. Wisps of colorful mist emerged in the air as he cast a spell and pushed his palms forward. The mists glistened, then a figure leaped out from it.

Priest Hua was about to replay everything that happened in here not long ago, but suddenly, an unstoppable power descended and crushed the colorful mist, disabling it from showing any image.

Gasping in shock, Priest Hua stared at the strands of mist lingering in the air. In terms of power level, the force which crushed the mist was at a much lower grade than Priest Hua. But, speaking of the nature of the power, it was about the same as Priest Hua's power, which was gained through countless years of severe cultivation.

Priest Hua wasn't cautious enough. As a result, the mysterious force broke his magic. By now, it was impossible for him to regather the pieces of information he found just now.

"Who is this?" With a shocked face, Priest Hua took another two circles around the hole. Pondering for a short while, he abruptly jumped in and soon came to the invisible bottom of the hole, took a handful of soil, and carefully observed.

A while later, Priest Hua extracted a colorful, transparent, thick, and nicely scented drop of liquid from the soil.

"The Chaos spirit milk?" Priest Hua's expression changed suddenly. "It's...The, the pool outside...If one living being absorbed a full pool of Chaos spirit milk...no matter how weak it was before, it would now be strong enough to rival me. Damn it! How could such a great fortune fall into another one's hands?"

Priest Hua clearly understood that the Chaos spirit milk was the main nourishment for all world creators when they were still embryos. Especially gifted world creators like Saint Pan Gu were able to absorb the Chaos spirit milk back as embryos, but other than them, any ordinary creature would get itself killed if it dared to try absorbing even a slight little bit of it.

Quietly, the drop of Chaos spirit milk merged into Priest Hua's body through his fingertip. A colorful light instantly flashed across his skin. Next, he abruptly breathed out a colorful mist with complicatedly natured energies. He was a powerful being, but even he could only absorb the energies which shared the same nature with himself from the Chaos spirit milk, while the rest of the natural powers contained in the milk, which were naturally against him, had to be forced out of his body.

Absorbing this drop of Chaos spirit milk, Priest Hua sensed a slight improvement in his power. He believed that his power would be doubled if he could absorb the entire pool of Chaos spirit milk.

However, such a great fortune was taken by an unknown somebody. A sharp light flickered in Priest Hua's eyes. Together with Priest Mu, he finally suppressed Great Freedom not long ago. But now, Great Freedom seized an opportunity and began shaking his mind. Quietly, before he even noticed, a trace of greediness, a faint intent of killing, and a wisp of fire of jealousy that could destroy a world, grew in his heart. A dim seven-colored light emerged in his eyes.

"This was such a fortune...When I capture you, I will peel you and eat you alive. Then, my power can grow by at least fifty percent. By then, I will be stronger than my brother, and will become the Great Master of my sect. My brother is hesitating, so the development of my sect has been slow. Once I become the Great Master, hehe, my sect will be brave and fearless when seeking for future progress. Pan Gu's descendants? Those three

will never suppress my sect."

Priest Hua chuckled, not feeling strange about these thoughts which suddenly popped up in his mind. Flashing across the air, he left the deep hole and continued carefully searching for any trace left by Ji Hao and the others in this area.

Soon, he discovered the teleporting formation inside the towering tree. With his power, he forcibly woke up the tree, and turned it into a disciple of his. From the tree, he learned the destination of the teleporting formation. Priest Hua then laughed out loud and transformed into a clear gust of wind, swiftly heading to the next teleporting formation, emitting a strange aroma from his body.

In the sealed area, Ji Hao didn't want to listen to the endless warnings from Green Ginseng and the other green ancestors anymore. Determinedly, he stepped onto the barren desert, which had no other plant but the vine.

An indescribable heat attacked from all directions. In this place, the powers of Green Ginseng and the other green ancestors would be weakened down to ten percent. Besides, no natural power that was useful to plant lives existed in here, which meant that green ancestors had no way to replenish their consumed energies in this area.

Ji Hao grinned. As a tremor went through his body, he suddenly grew to about thirty meters tall and released streams of Chaos power from his pores. From the surroundings, the scorching power was immediately drawn into his body by the Chaos power, and was easily converted into Chaos power by the Pan Gu bell, being absorbed by his body.

Chaos, it could include and tolerate every type of energy, and was the origin of all kinds of energies in the universe.

The nature of Ji Hao's Pan Gu body was Chaos, and it followed the great Dao of absolute strength. Therefore, regardless of the

surrounding environment, Ji Hao's body was able to use any type of energy within his reach.

He gasped in satisfaction. Indeed, this giant seal cast by Green Ginseng and the other green ancestors had created an extremely abominable environment for plant lives. But in here, Ji Hao felt as same as walking in the best place in Pan Gu world.

He walked to Pan Heng with giant steps. Walking past the smallest branch he saw, Ji Hao pressed his palm on it.

Boom!

He suffered a terrifying counterforce. It was the body of a 'saint' after all. Even though it had been in a deep sleep for many years and was exhausted, Pan Heng's vines were still especially strong. Ji Hao's fist sank into this relatively thin branch for about three-inches deep, but the counterforce numbed his hand.

A distance away, seeing Ji Hao punch Pan Heng, Green Ginseng and the other green ancestors hurriedly shouted in deep voices, "No punch! Use fire, fire! Use the fire inside you, burn him, burn him!"

Ji Hao didn't do what they said. Instead, he pressed both palms on this relatively small branch and quietly sensed the energy flows in it.

This branch seemed to be withered, but inside it, a weak life-force was still flowing. In the core area of this hundreds miles thick branch, a hair-thin stream of life-force had been flowing rapidly along an odd meridian.

He traced this life-force flow with his spiritual power. Following it, Ji Hao walked on Pan Heng's body with big steps.

The thin life-force stream flew into a slightly larger meridian, through which, Ji Hao drilled his spirit power deeper into Pan Heng's body, and soon found a further larger meridian.

He followed the life-force stream step by step. Before long, Ji Hao

disappeared from Green Ginseng's sight.

Nervously, Green Ginseng and the other green ancestors gazed at where Ji Hao disappeared. A long while later, they leaped up abruptly, as if they had gone mad all of a sudden. From an unknown source, they took out countless metal stakes thickly carved with spell symbols and inserted them in the ground one after another, setting up more and more new magic seals.

Chapter 1568: Facing Pan Heng

Moving deeper and deeper through Pan Heng's rugged, interweaving vines, Ji Hao's spirit power reached into his enormous body, which was hundreds of millions of miles long.

The thin life-force stream Ji Hao found from the relatively small branch became like a brook, then turned into a small river. At last, it grew into a raging-dragon-like, rapidly flowing great river.

Without life-force, Pan Heng's body was dark, hard as fossils, and lifeless like zombies. But, near the main body, which had the life-force surging like rivers, his body turned dark-green, with a beautiful luster, translucent like the best jade, filled with an indescribable glow of vitality.

On the tens of thousands of miles thick main vine, countless different sized, round-shaped mouthparts had been spinning, opening and shutting. Layer and layers of sharp teeth clanged against each other in every mouth part, staring dazzling sparkles, but without making any sound.

A magical power muted this area. Nothing that happened deep inside Pan Heng's body could be heard outside. Therefore, Green Ginseng and the other green ancestors, who were too scared to come here, never would have dreamed that a part of Pan Heng's body had already developed such a thriving life-force.

Ji Hao went deeper. From some mouthparts, dark-green vines darted out like ghosts, covered in sticky liquid as they nimbly coiled to Ji Hao. These vines chased after Ji Hao, attempting to drag him into a mouthpart, to chew and swallow him up.

Ji Hao moved forward quickly. Every time the vines approached him, he would activate the golden bridge and let a beam of light flash across his forehead. With the golden bridge, he could always flash forward swiftly right before the vines touched his clothes, making the vines feel that with a slight little bit of effort, a

delicious meal would be attained.

Surrounding Ji Hao, countless vines darted out from differently sized mouthparts from time to time, reaching to him like torrents. But, none of them managed to truly touch him.

Moving forward, Ji Hao saw tens of thousands of tree giants.

These hundreds of meters tall tree giants were hanging upside-down in the air by dark-green vines, struggling and screaming, without being able to free themselves from these evil vines. Sharp vines pierced into their bodies, quickly draining their life-force.

Every now and then, drained tree giants would become a pile of wood and fall from the air. Maybe because tree giants had no flesh and blood, Pan Heng didn't eat their remains. Instead, he let their corpses fall everywhere.

At first glance, Ji Hao saw at least a hundred million corpses of tree giants piled on Pan Heng's body, under the ones hanging in the air! Based on the strong original life-force possessed by these dead tree giants, Pan Heng had already absorbed a scary amount of life-force.

"Green Ginseng and the other old ones, don't they know how many of their children have gone missing?" In shock, Ji Hao paused before this hell-like scene. But soon, he nodded and continued, "It's reasonable though. They all have wooden brains. I doubt they ever learned how to count and calculate."

Looking at those struggling tree giants, Ji Hao sighed slightly and pointed his finger at them, releasing tens of thousands of raging fire streams that penetrated the bodies of all alive tree giants. Golden flame erupted from their bodies and incinerated them instantly.

Countless vines of Pan Heng let out shrill screams and crazily swished to Ji Hao.

By burning all alive tree giants and igniting their life-forces, Ji

Hao took the delicious food away from these vines. How could these vines not be mad? More importantly, these vines would not only absorb these tree giant's life-force, they would also devour their souls. Ji Hao burned, them, but released their souls. The vines didn't manage to seize these tree giants' souls, and this drove the vines even crazier.

Pan Heng needed the life-force to heal his injuries, but he needed the souls more, to replenish his consumed soul and spirit power.

Ji Hao ended those tree giants' pain. Without a doubt, he stirred up a hornet's nest. From all directions, dark-green vines darted out and wove into a giant web that covered the sky as it descended on Ji Hao.

Ji Hao moved swiftly, easily casting off the vines as he proceeded along Pan Heng's main body.

While walking, he had been releasing translucent, melting-glass-like golden flames from his body. Thanks to the pool of Chaos spirit milk, he had made a major progress on the cultivation of his Pan Gu body. As one of the results, his body could now withstand a full-release of the power of the Pan Jia sun.

Walking on Pan Heng's body with big steps, Ji Hao left a meters wide fiery pit behind him, with every step he made. The essence sun power ragingly burned Pan Heng's body, which had a pure nature of green. Soon, the series of fiery pits connected into a line, following Ji Hao and extending on Pan Heng's body.

"Enough! Kid!" A silvery voice came from a very long distance away. Hearing the voice, Pan Heng's body squirmed intensely under Ji Hao's feet. A strong dark-green light shone from all directions and condensed into a thick shield, attempting to defend Pan Heng against the essence sun fire.

Nevertheless, the essence sun fire was the extreme of all fires in all worlds, the strongest, fiercest fire, with pure positive energies,. Pan Heng's dark-green shield struggled against the essence sun fire

for a short while, then slowly began burning.

A little-finger-sized, bluish-green vine suddenly reached out from the front, about ten miles away from Ji Hao. The vine was like an extra long neck, connected to the head of a beautiful girl with watery eyes and shiny white teeth.

"Kid, what are you doing? Did my rebellious, unworthy descendants ask you to kill me?" The girl stared at Ji Hao angrily and asked.

Ji Hao was startled by this suddenly appearing, beautiful girl head.

Was this Pan Heng's human shape? Together with the enormous true body of Pan Heng, as a man-eating vine, Ji Hao felt that she looked quite weird.

And her wording made Ji Hao even more speechless. Rebellious, unworthy descendants? A teenage-looking little girl called a group of wrinkled grey-haired green ancestors rebellious unworthy descendants?

Ji Hao had seen a couple of worlds by now. But, even though he had met quite a lot weird creatures, he still didn't know how to respond to Pan Heng.

He released a dazzling golden light and raised both arms. The essence sun fire condensed into scorching sword lights, spreading towards the surrounding area and cutting every dark-green vine that wriggled to Ji Hao. Then, it set all the broken vines on fire. In the golden fire, the broken vines twisted like boas, oozing dark-green liquid from their bodies to defend against the essence sun fire, in vain.

"Pan Heng?" Ji Hao looked at her, then nodded, "Green Ginseng and her friends asked me to kill you."

Pan Heng remained silent for a while, then her beautiful eyes shone brightly with a green light as she said, "They have become

more and more daring over the years...How much did they promise you? I'll give you ten times more! Or a hundred times more! Extraneous kid, you better not recklessly step into the things happening in my Pan Heng world. My body is not convenient to move at the moment, but still, it won't be too hard for me to kill you."

Ji Hao gave a faint smile, pointed at one direction, and said, "Give me that axe, then I'll walk right away."

Pan Heng's expression changed immediately.

Chapter 1569: Shocked

In the Chaos near the natural screen of the Pan Heng world, endless Chaos tide waves had been clashing against each other, releasing beams of light.

Priest Mu was wielding the colorful branch, eyes fixed on Blood Crown as they glowed with a green light. Blood Crown's entire body was shining with a blinding golden light, such that he now looked like a dazzling sphere of light with no shape to be discerned. Every move of his could shatter a Chaos tide wave and cause a sky-shaking boom.

However, he tried his best but failed to harm even a hair of Priest Mu.

A splendid torrent of golden light shone from Pan Heng world, connected to Blood Crown's body like a giant ribbon. Through the light, Blood Crown had been ceaselessly absorbing the natural powers from Pan Heng world to support himself in this long-lasting battle.

As time went by, Blood Crown got more and more furious. He gave a roar and let out an oddly shaped staff, which emitted a blinding blood-red light. He raised the staff high, then swung it fiercely down to Priest Mu's head.

"Eh? A pre-world supreme treasure of killing? This piece is only slightly weaker than the pre-world sword of killing that belonged to my friend Netherworld Priest. Great, this treasure is destined to be mine!" Priest Mu sighed loudly and habitually, "This staff of yours has harmed and killed countless living beings. I will bring it back, suppress its evil, and wash off the countless wronged souls from it to reshow its true face."

'It's a pre-world supreme treasure of killing, what is a treasure of killing? Only a treasure used for killing can be called as a treasure of killing. Why do you have to make it sound so reasonable? You

just want to loot the treasure!' Hearing Priest Mu, Blood Crown cursed in his head.

"I have conquered countless worlds, and encountered countless powerful beings. But among them all, I haven't seen one as shameless as you." Blood Crown shouted coldly. The staff, which was shaped like a hand gripping a sharp blade, burst with a blood-red light and released tens of thousands of streaks of blood-red light, striking at Priest Mu.

Priest Mu defended himself with the colorful branch. The branch thudded against the staff and caused muffled thunderous bangs, bringing up a brilliant glow. No matter how hard Blood Crown attacked, he could not touch Priest Mu's body.

Blood Crown looked at Priest Mu helplessly. He had never met an opponent who was so hard to defeat. Was Priest Mu especially powerful? In Blood Crown's eyes, he didn't seem like an especially powerful being. At least by now, he hadn't shown such a lethal power. But was he actually weaker than he looked? That branch in his hand swished across the air as swiftly as mudfishes. Because of the branch, Blood Crown didn't manage to cause any actual harm to Priest Mu, not even for once, even though he had been fighting with all of his power.

"Damn it!" Blood Crown laughed in an extreme range. He took a deep breath and released twelve beams of golden light from the top of his head. Every light beam was supporting a sphere of light. Those were the shadows of the three suns and nine moons from Pan Yu world.

Blood Crown's body suddenly began growing. He snorted deeply in pain while his body grew taller rapidly. Within a blink of an eye, he reached three-thousand-meters in height. His face squirmed, and the eye socket between his eyebrows expanded quickly, soon merging with the other eye sockets.

A blood-red eyeball appeared in the giant eye socket, budging and

covered in blood streaks. A fierce, cruel, completely instinctive sense of power could be sensed from the eye. Blood Crown roared towards the sky, as his body had grown tens of thousands of meters tall.

"Pan Yu?" Priest Mu praised sincerely, "Perfect! Back then, those non-humankind beings couldn't do this."

Smiling like a predator who had its eyes on a prey, Priest Mu slowly nodded and said, "Great, great! This isn't Pan Gu world, so I'll give you enough space for you to release your power. I'd really like to see exactly how strong is your Pan Yu world."

Raising his head, without seizing the opportunity to attack Blood Crown as he was transforming into his shape of Pan Yu, Priest Mu looked at the boundless Chaos and said blandly, "Back then, when your people invaded Pan Gu world, I restrained myself. I didn't really do a thing to teach you people a lesson...Today, right here, I have nothing to worry about, and I'd like to see what you can do."

Blood Crown paused suddenly. He lowered his head and looked down at Priest Mu, then shouted coldly, "What did you say?"

With a complicated, mysterious expression, Priest Mu responded slowly, "I said, right now, right here, no one is around but you and me. Therefore, I can do whatever I want without worrying that some other people may know, or that some of my plans may get exposed. I'll give you enough time to show what you can do."

Putting down the colorful branch, Priest Mu slowly rolled up his broad sleeves and exposed his pair of arms.

Gently waving his hands, which were twice longer than the hands of ordinary human beings, he calmly looked at Blood Crown and said, "Try your best. If you can't take my strike, for sure, you will die and your power will be gone. As for your followers, I won't let any of them live."

Blood Crown's body had still been expanding quickly, but he

focused his attention on Priest Mu, and said, "You Pan Gu world, you...And the one who took a strike from me last time, what on earth are you planning on?"

"The supreme Dao of eternity!" Priest Mu raised his hands, with an indescribable, unspeakable force emerging in his palms. Proudly, he looked at Blood Crown, and said coldly, "You won't understand even if I told you. I don't want to waste time either."

Blood Crown blushed. "How dare you despise me?" He yelled at Priest Mu.

Priest Mu's mouth corners dropped, while the bitterness grew stronger and stronger on his face. He prepared to say something, but quivered abruptly. "No, is my brother falling into the devil's trap again? Brother, my brother, your Dao of evolvement is too complicated...You're trying to attain the great Dao by letting yourself being possessed by the devil. Do you really think that I don't know? But it's too dangerous, too dangerous!"

Priest Mu turned around and attempted to rush back to Pan Heng world.

Blood Crown burst into a raging roar. He raised the staff with both arms, which had expanded to tens of thousands of meters long, and smashed violently down to Priest Mu.

Priest Mu sneered. Fifty-two beams of golden light erupted from his head, within which, fifty-two weirdly shaped golden figures wearing all kinds of jewels growled resonantly towards the sky. They circled around Blood Crown and attacked him with all weird-looking weapons, putting him down to the ground before he even figured out what was truly happening.

"You!" Blood Crown shouted in shock.

"Piss off!" Priest Mu gave a deep growl and locked his left fingers together, then flicked. A green light flashed across the air and next, the chest of Blood Crown, who was in the shape of Pan Yu,

exploded. A ten-thousand meters wide hole appeared on his chest. Blood splashed everywhere along with muscle pieces. Blood Crown screamed in pain while he was sent flying backward, being swirled away by a Chaos tide wave.

"Nobody! Don't you have powerful beings in your Pan Yu world?" Priest Mu gave a cold and faint smile, then disappeared without a trace.

Chapter 1570: Failed Negotiation

Hundreds of differently sized vines silently straightened up from all directions, covered in mucus. Huge or small, countless mouthparts squirmed on the vines. In the mouthparts, sharp teeth clashed against each other, starting fire sparkles and causing ear-piercing noises.

The thin vine silently approached Ji Hao as Pan Heng stared at Ji Hao with a dark look on her beautiful face and said, "The axe is mine. No one can touch it. Whoever dares to touch it, I will fight him with my life."

Her long hair wriggled like small snakes while she looked at Ji Hao and continued in a frosty tone, "Put forward a reasonable condition, and don't even say it out if it's too much. I am injured indeed, but that doesn't mean a kid like you can play a trick with me."

Ji Hao carefully looked at Pan Heng's head, wondering what kind of an organ it was.

Was it truly Pan Heng's human-like head? Would Pan Heng be injured severely if this head were chopped into two? Or, did Pan Heng create this head simply to communicate with others?

Pondering for quite a while, Ji Hao shook his head and said, "I only want the axe. Nothing else in your Pan Heng world is good enough to catch my attention. Give me the axe, then I'll turn around and walk right away without harming even a vine of yours."

Pan Heng's pretty face twisted. With a twisted smile, she responded in a deep voice, "In this case, what else can we say? I haven't tasted blood and flesh for a long time. Those trees, hehe, they were far less tasty than a fleshy body. Little one, blame yourself for being greedy, but don't blame me for having no mercy!"

Surrounding Ji Hao, the space suddenly froze. On hundreds of huge vines, countless mouthparts opened wide and let out thin dark-green vines, which swiftly wove into a hundreds of meters wide sphere.

The air was suffused with a faint aroma, and a strong toxin spread along with it. A powerful neurotoxin that could paralyze living beings wrapped Ji Hao up, drilling fiercely into his body through his pores.

Clearly, this was a nature-given ability of Pan Heng, as a man-eating vine, for her to hunt. At first, she would trap her target, then paralyzes it, disabling it from moving. Afterward, she would capture the target alive and enjoy it.

Ji Hao laughed out loud while the Pan Gu bell flew out of his head. He punched violently on the bell. The bell expanded to about a hundred meters tall, and on its surface, the figure of a giant flashed across. As a bell ring sounded, the sphere, which caged Ji Hao and was woven from countless vines, was shattered.

Green juice and vine fragments fell from the air. Surrounding Ji Hao, spider-web-like cracks appeared on the frozen air. The space in Pan Heng world was far less sturdy than the space in Pan Gu world. The cracks spread speedily, reaching millions of miles away within a blink of an eye.

Wherever the space cracks reached, Pan Heng's branches squirmed intensely. Deep cracks emerged one after another on her branches, letting out large amounts of dark-green, sticky juice. Next, the juice started burning.

Ji Hao's body had been releasing raging golden flames, swirling to the sky as it wrapped hundreds of Pan Heng's branches in.

"How dare you!" Pan Heng shrieked. She widely opened her mouth and let out three dark-green beams of light towards Ji Hao, along with an ear-piercing noise. Ji Hao saw the three light beams clearly. Those were three foot-long toxic thorns, especially sharp,

and thickly covered in glistening spell symbols. From a long distance away, Ji Hao sensed a fierce power coming straight at him from the three thorns.

Buzz!

The Pan Gu bell released Chaos power streams to shield Ji Hao. The three thorns bumped against the Chaos power streams and stirred up faint ripples, but failed to cause any harm to the bell.

Pan Heng's eyes grew even wider, as she couldn't believe her own eyes. With a sharp voice, she yelled, "These are my spirit supreme treasure. I've killed countless powerful Chaos creatures with these...How can you possibly stop these?"

Ji Hao silently pulled out his sword. The Pan Gu sword was swung directly down, leaving a sharp arc-shaped beam of light in the air. Tens of ragingly burning giant vines wriggled to Ji Hao, defending against the sword light. But, before they could approach Ji Hao, the essence sun fire had already incinerated them.

With a puffing noise, Pan Heng's head was chopped into two by Ji Hao. The neck-like thin vine quaked intensely, then lunged to Ji Hao's heart like a crazy poisonous sake.

The vine bumped against the Pan Gu bell. The bell remained perfectly motionless, while the thin vine was shredded.

Ji Hao wielded the Pan Gu sword. The sword light swept across the area tens of thousands of miles in radius and cut every squirming vine in the area into countless pieces. Ji Hao freed himself from the encirclement of hundreds of vines, then activated the golden bridge and chased after a weird power vibration.

Countless giant dark vines coiled into an enormous sphere in this area. From the sphere, Ji Hao sensed something familiar. He gave a growl, then swung the Pan Gu sword down.

A silhouette showed up suddenly right before Ji Hao's face. That was a slim, beautiful young girl, her face looking exactly like the

one chopped by Ji Hao just now. While screaming, the girl swiftly lunged a wooden long spear at Ji Hao.

The girl fought without skill, but she moved extremely fast. With Ji Hao's current eye power, he only saw hundreds of sharp green light spots flashing across his eyes before the spear clanged against the Pan Gu bell hundreds of times in a row.

The Pan Gu bell buzzed slightly as Ji Hao snorted coldly. Without paying any attention to the girl's swift attacks, he hit the bell violently with an elbow. A sonorous bell ring was generated. The surrounding air collapsed immediately, letting out overwhelming Chaos tide waves. The girl burst in furious curses, then her slim body was swirled into the Chaos tide wave.

"Die!" Ji Hao pointed his left forefinger at the Pan Jia sun, which floated above his head. Within a moment, thousands of golden sun thunder bombs emerged in the air, transforming into golden thunderbolts and descending on the girl's body, setting her on fire.

The golden fire burned ragingly, and the girl was torn into pieces. From her body parts, thin green vines reached out and interweaving, trying to pull all pieces back together. But, the incredibly powerful essence sun power soon incinerated all the vines and the body of the girl.

"Kid, you have enraged me! I may need to sleep for a hundred million, a billion, even ten-billion more years, but I will crush your soul!"

Chapter 1571: Natural Suppression

Following shrill screams, thousands of light green colored beautiful girls with exactly same looks showed up. The sense of power and energy waves released from their bodies were all the same; they even shared a twisted, ferocious expression.

Thousands of clones of Pan Heng screamed and pounced on Ji Hao. Some of them punched and kicked, some let out toxic mists from the mouths, some released thunderbolts or dark-green toxic winds from the palms...Without a pattern nor cooperation, they launched a series of violent yet disordered offensives on Ji Hao, but failed to shake the Pan Gu bell even slightly.

Nourished by the Chaos spirit milk, Ji Hao's Pan Gu body had grown stronger rapidly, and the connection between his body and the Pan Gu bell was much tighter than before. At the moment, he could already release the incredible power of the bell. How could Pan Heng ever harm him with some clones?

Ji Hao had been simply wielding his fist to ring the bell. In the surroundings, the space was cracking and the Chaos tide waves were striking out. Pan Heng's clones were swirled into the Chaos tide waves one after another, then being shredded by Ji Hao's golden sun thunder bombs.

Within a couple of breaths, the thousands of clones were wiped out, and tens of thousands of vines, which took advantage of the chaotic situation and attempted to approach Ji Hao, were cut broken by the Pan Gu sword, then burned out.

"Pan Heng, you're a world creator. Is this all you can do? Your clones, even the world 'rabble' is too good for them." Glancing around at the emptied surrounding area, Ji Hao laughed.

Strange roars could be heard from Pan Heng's body. Clearly, she was infuriated.

Along with a series of creaking noise, an enormous vine slowly rose from the darkness, covered in mucus and squirming quickly, soon becoming a million-miles-tall giant.

With the same beautiful but twisted face, this new clone of Pan Heng lowered her head, looked down at Ji Hao, and roared, "Kid, do you think that you can provoke me as much as you like, only because you have an amazing treasure for defense?"

Ji Hao remained silent. He raised his hand and released thousands of golden sun thunder bombs. Dazzling golden light balls exploded on the clone's body, raising a raging, melting-glass-like fire that wrapped her up and burned a sizzling noise out of her body.

Pan Heng screamed hoarsely in rage. She boosted up her power and tried to kill the fire on her. But, her green power was naturally suppressed by Ji Hao's fire. The situation was still controllable before she activated her power, but after that, the fire grew even more scorching.

"Damn it, damn it, damn it! Traitors! Traitors! I shouldn't have waited for them to ripen! I should have devoured them all back then!" Pan Heng shrieked, "I created a world! I created them! I shielded them against the fierce Chaos creatures. I allowed them to live a carefree life in this world!"

Pan Heng's clone crazily swung her pair of arms and screamed hoarsely, "I only wanted to raise them then eat them as snacks... But, they colluded with you, such an evil creature, to kill me...How can they do this? I don't want to die, I don't want to die! I have just woken up. I haven't regained all my powers...Give me more time, let me restore my strength. Then, I can crush a weak creature like you with a little finger."

The million-miles-tall clone desperately swung her arms and released countless highly toxic green thunder bombs.

Ji Hao activated the golden bridge and nimbly flashed across the

space, dodging every green thunder bomb.

By now, Ji Hao understood why the mysterious man described Pan Heng as 'an insignificant little thing'. Pan Heng was not strong. She had a great power, but didn't know how to use it well. She was like a giant who was born with a tremendous strength, yet knew nothing but punching people with his fists; she had no skills in fighting.

The fighting capacity demonstrated by Pan Heng's thousands of small clones and this giant clone was completely rubbish, despite the fact that she had a great power. Ji Hao even wondered how she dared to join the war against Saint Pan Gu back then.

Seeing her thunder bombs fail in harming Ji Hao, Pan Heng chose a brainless way to continue this battle.

Countless enormous vines let out shrill screams and straightened up from all directions. These differently sized vines wriggled and soon filled Ji Hao's line of sight. Layer by layer, these giant vines squeezed each other and wove into a strong wall, smashing to Ji Hao.

The offensive Pan Heng launched failed to hit Ji Hao. Therefore, this time, Pan Heng planned to simply leave Ji Hao no room to dodge. As she failed to break the Pan Gu bell and harm Ji Hao, she decided to seal Ji Hao off with her endless vines. She truly did not believe that she wouldn't be able to seal a kid, even though she was still recovering from severe injuries.

Ji Hao laughed out loud and spread his arms. All of a sudden, he jumped into the Pan Jia sun, which floated in the air.

The Pan Jia sun expanded quickly and reached tens of thousands of miles in radius within a blink of an eye. The vines coiled on the Pan Jia sun. Every vine was covered in sparkling dark-green spell symbols. The space was even twisted by the violent squeezing vines, letting out muffled popping noises.

More vines darted out from the darkness and coiled on the Pan Jia sun, layer by layer, trying to seal it off. But apparently, Pan Heng underestimated the natural suppression brought to her by Ji Hao's essence sun fire. The vines coiled on the Pan Jia sun, and then were incinerated layer by layer. The vines released a giant amount of dark-green juice, but the sticky juice was burned out as well.

Pan Heng sent more and more vines to the Pan Jia sun, but the harm caused to her by the sun was far beyond her estimation.

When Ji Hao boosted up the power of the Pan Jia sun as much as he could, beams of golden light tore apart all vines and illuminated the dark space. Pan Heng roared in both shock and anger. She couldn't believe it. She had put forth all her currently available power, but still failed to seal Ji Hao.

The natural suppression given to a plant life by the essence sun fire could be terrifying. Pan Heng was a powerful plant life from the Chaos, but not even she could endure the endless fire from a natural sun.

Gradually, the vines turned fewer and fewer. A panic could be detected from Pan Heng's raging curses. Suddenly, she realized that she could no nothing to Ji Hao, who was as tiny as a bug.

In Ji Hao's spiritual space, the mysterious man began incanting a spell with a deep voice. From his pair of eyes, the blue light shone to a long distance away, turning the entire spiritual space blue.

Puff!

Along with a thunderous noise, the giant sphere woven from countless vines of Pan Heng was torn apart by a sharp and unstoppable force. Next, a million-miles-long, dark axe flew swiftly to Ji Hao while cutting millions of vines.

Chapter 1572: Finish It With the Axe

"No! It has been so many years. I drained my spirit blood, exhausted my spirit for it...My supreme treasure for the great Dao!"

A thousand-miles-lone-thick vine suddenly straightened up, covered in mucus as it squirmed and transformed into a giant clone of Pan Heng, its eyes fixed on the axe in front of Ji Hao while screaming.

Pan Heng sounded so shrill and sad, like a gray-haired concubine who was forgotten by her emperor; her voice was filled with hatred and sadness. Hearing Pan Heng, Ji Hao's fine hair even stood up.

"Supreme treasure for the great Dao?" In Ji Hao's spiritual space, the mysterious man, who was a bit hazy, chuckled, "This idiot chose to devour the others' blood and flesh to replenish herself. Yet, she attempted to attain her great Dao with Pan Gu's axe of killing? What a silly woman."

Carefully, Ji Hao reached his hand to the axe.

His body began expanding. Within a couple of breaths, he reached hundreds of miles in height. He raised his hand and gripped the hilt of the axe. Buzz! An especially strong power flew into his hand from the axe and numbed his body. Holding the axe, Ji Hao's heart was suddenly filled with an inexhaustible courage.

Holding the axe, he believed that he was able to hack all enemies into pieces, no matter how many there were.

Sky-opening, earth-splitting, everything-grow, everything-perish, all lives reincarnate... Silently, Ji Hao performed the five moves in his head, then gripped the axe with both hands and wielded it fiercely with the combined move.

The axe moved. An indescribably strong power surged out of the

axe and led Ji Hao's body to draw the perfect arc in the air. The mysterious man taught him the combined move, but due to Ji Hao's depth of understanding and his limit of power, a slight flaw existed in his every performance of the move.

But led by the axe, the flaw was gone.

This time, the movement was so smooth and natural. The axe broke the space and landed on Pan Heng's head.

With a shrill howl, the giant body of Pan Heng was easily broken by the axe. Ji Hao sensed no resistance while he split this huge body of Pan Heng. The axe released a dark arc-like and shredded all vines coming at Ji Hao, then drilled deeply into Pan Heng's body.

Pan Heng's real body, which extended for incalculable miles, suddenly twitched. The entire sealed area began quaking while Pan Heng was cut into two by Ji Hao. The edge of the wound was a smooth as the surface of a mirror. A strange power lingered in the wound, destroying her body.

"Back then, this axe of Pan Gu killed nearly every creature it touched. I truly don't know how did this silly woman manage to bring the axe back here when Pan Gu was exhausted and couldn't even hold the axe." The mysterious man sighed, "But, she's dead."

As the mysterious man said, Pan Heng's life-force had been disappearing rapidly. Her dark vines were quickly turning black, withering, and rotten. A terrible odor rose straight to the sky. Following a series of weak screams, Pan Heng's body began falling quickly apart and decaying.

A green figure darted out of Pan Heng's dying body. That was a girl with a twisted, hideous face. She kneeled down before Ji Hao, tremblingly reached her hands to him, and begged, "Spare...Spare my life...I, Pan Heng...am willing to serve you...as your slave... Please..."

Before she finished, the green figure collapsed into a puff of

green light spot, dissipating in the air.

Because of the destructive strike launched by Ji Hao with the axe, Pan Heng, who hadn't recovered from her serious injuries, lost her hope of living. Through the connection between her body and her soul, the power of the axe killed her soul directly, wiping out all traces of her existence.

Ji Hao held a sword and an axe, pondered silently for a while, then put the sword and the axe together.

"Sword?" Sitting in his spiritual space, the mysterious man murmured a bit grouchily, "In fact, a man with an axe is manlier than a man with a sword...But, never mind, this axe shouldn't be exposed in public, or you'll be in trouble."

Sighing again, the mysterious man continued, "A sword is also good, also good. The shape doesn't limit it anyway. I just like axes more."

The sword and the axe were put together. The axe shook slightly, then transformed into a strong stream of light and merged with the sword. The shape of the sword started changing immediately. The sword became longer, wider, and thicker. On the sword, layers of anciently styled patterns of swirling clouds sparkled, then merged into it.

The swirling clouds were faintly visible on the sword. Among them, stars shone one after another, chasing each other inside the sword, leaving longboats of light. Afterward, the silhouettes of countless Chaos creatures flashed across the sword, then the patterns of mountains and rivers and legendary creatures from Pan Gu world also emerged slowly on it.

All changes happened within the span of a couple of breaths. The Pan Gu sword became dark and lusterless, seeming like a thick piece of iron, with no sharp edge at all.

"Ji Hao kid?" From a distance away, a clear voice could abruptly

be heard, "Why are you here? Eh? Is this...Pan Heng's body? Did you kill her?" Damn it! I was going to bring her into my sect."

"Hehe, no one is around but us. Not even your powerful Shifu will know what is about to happen in here. In this case, today, I will take your life, so you won't bring any more trouble to my disciples in the future!" Priest Hua flew over, his body and eyes shining with a seven-colored light. He wielded his right hand and seized a brightly glowing golden pestle from the air, then swung it down at Ji Hao with a twisted look.

This pestle was a pre-world supreme treasure, found by Priest Hua from the Chaos. Its power was strong and violent. Touched slightly by this golden pestle, any living being without an equally powerful pre-world supreme treasure to defend itself would be crushed immediately. Back in the prehistorical era, countless Chaos monsters who offended Priest Hua were slaughtered by him with this pestle.

Instinctively, Ji Hao raised the Pan Gu sword to defend himself against the pestle. He didn't make any sword move on purpose. Instead, he simply wielded the sword.

The dark, lusterless Pan Gu sword cracked the space and clanged loudly against the dazzlingly shining golden pestle, which had been releasing strong power waves.

With the clang, the pestle was cut into two by the lusterless Pan Gu sword, as easily as cutting a cucumber with a sharp knife. A beam of sword light shone from the Pan Gu sword swept across the air and startled Priest Hua, making him scream and teleport himself away as fast as possible.

The sword light penetrated the space and chased straight after Priest Hua like a living being.

Puff!

Priest Hua's right hand, which was still holding the other half of

the golden pestle, was cut off from the elbow. The blood sprayed out from his wound while emitting a dense aroma and glowing with a colorful light. Splashing on the ground, the blood immediately turned into beautiful and colorful beads, rolling all over the ground.

"Ji Hao!" Priest Mu's voice could be heard from a distance. With his bitter face, Priest Mu flashed across the air and came to before Ji Hao, stopping him with a colorful branch.

Chapter 1573: The Quality of the Evil Being

"Brother, you are too reckless." Holding the branch, Priest Mu slightly waved it towards Ji Hao and silently told Ji Hao to stop attacking, then turned around and sighed, shaking his head at Priest Hua as he said with his bitter face.

As priest Hua's eyes sparkled with the seven-colored light, Great Freedom's laughter could be heard, "Reckless? Priest Mu, you didn't think that Priest Hua let me in on purpose..."

Before Great Freedom finished, warm mists rose from around Priest Hua's body. Within the mist, lotuses bloomed. The seven-colored light faded in Priest Hua's eyes, then those eyes turned clear and mysterious.

"Brother, I am not reckless. I can create thousands of worlds, create everything with these devils. With the nature of these devils, I strengthened my soul, and dug deep into the great Dao of evolvement. This is just a method of cultivation." Priest Hua gave a faint smile, then let out a long breath and glanced at the arm in surprise, which was cut off by Ji Hao and floated in front of him.

"Ji Hao, my little friend, you have surprised me. I didn't know that your art of Dao has already achieved such a high level."

A clear spot of light flew out of Priest Hua's fingertip and hovered around the broken arm, bringing it back to where it belonged. A refreshing aroma was emitted from the wound, while the wound was healed completely without a trace.

Holding the Pan Gu sword, Ji Hao calmly nodded at Priest Hua and said, "All thanks to my Shifu. Compared with my Shifu, my sword of art is not worth mentioning."

Priest Hua chuckled and gave Ji Hao a complicated glance, then fixed his eyes on the dark, lusterless sword held in Ji Hao's hands. Ji Hao immediately sensed an incredibly strong spirit power

coming from Priest Hua's eyes, slowly scanning across the Pan Gu sword. Priest Hua wasn't making an effort to restrain his spirit power.

The Pan Gu sword remained unmoved. Priest Hua coiled his spirit power onto the sword and carefully scanned for a while, but failed to see through it.

"Your art of sword is not worth mentioning indeed in comparison with my friend Yu Yu's art of sword. However, you did manage to break an arm of mine, only because your sword is too, too, too good." Fixing his eyes on the Pan Gu sword, Priest Hua sighed,

"Just now, I wasn't controlling my body, It was Great Freedom inside me, and he can only release about thirty percent of my power. But still..."

As his eyes shone dazzlingly, Priest Hua stared at the Pan Gu sword and said word by word, "Against thirty percent of my power, you managed to cut an arm of mine. This is already impressive. This sword..."

Ji Hao smilingly shook his head to Priest Hua and responded, "This sword is not destined to be yours. Don't start your mantra. Don't you feel ashamed?"

Priest Hua instantly dropped his face.

Ashamed? Of course he felt ashamed. How could he not? After all, his arm was chopped off by a kid. Back in the Chaos, before the creation of Pan Gu world, ever since he started his cultivation of Dao, when did he ever suffer something like this?

Back then, in public or secretly, he fought Yu Yu countless times, but even Yu Yu did no more than leaving a few scars on his body. No one had ever cut off a part of his body. He was a master of his sect, one of the few most powerful beings in Pan Gu world. But, his arm was cut off by a disciple of Yu Yu.

If anyone else knew about this, Priest Mu would be too ashamed

to see anyone in the world.

Glancing around, Priest Hua blinked slowly. An intent of killing started showing in his eyes.

Priest My moved. Flashing across the air, he abruptly reached behind Ji Hao. One in the front and one in the behind, he and Priest Hua trapped Ji Hao in the middle.

Priest Hua laughed out loud and said, "Brother, you stay aside and watch. You don't need to make a move personally. This little kid is not worth it."

While laughing, Priest Hua didn't make a move to attack Ji Hao either. He slapped on his head and caused a clear jade tinkle. From his head, a white light rose, from which, a three-meters tall, three-headed and eight-armed figure with jade-white skin, wearing a robe woven from glistening pearls, darted out. Each hand was holding an oddly shaped weapon.

The multi-headed figure created by Priest Hua coldly glanced at Ji Hao, then silently dove down from the air as it wielded his eight arms and swung the weapons down at Ji Hao, violent as a storm.

The weapons held by it had different shapes and colors. From the eight weapons, Ji Hao sensed strong emotions and desires. The eight weapons were actually made from the purest emotions and desires, and endless power of faith. A strike from any of the eight weapons would certainly trigger all the emotions and desires of a living being, and generate a rampant inner devil. Facing these eight weapons, a slight carelessness could cause a collapse of one's spirit and the end of one's soul.

The Pan Gu bell rang thunderously as it poured down strong Chaos power streams. The jade-white figure's weapon landed on the bell like a heavy ring and started a long series of clangs, but nothing managed to touch Ji Hao's body.

Priest Hua's expression changed slightly. He chuckled and said,

"Kid, you do have some abilities. This bell..."

Ji Hao interrupted him. He slightly shook his head, then smiled and said, "This bell isn't destined to be yours either."

Priest Hua laughed. He raised his left hand and slowly slapped at Ji Hao along with a gentle breeze, "Whether it's destined to be mine or not is not for you to understand. The great Dao of nature is immeasurable, the destiny is unpredictable..."

Before he finished his speech, Priest Hua had already pressed his left hand on the bell.

Buzz! The space around Ji Hao exploded. Pan Heng's body was blown into pieces, flying all over the sky. The Pan Gu bell vibrated intensely. An immense force quaked the sky, attempting to break the bell's defense in an unstoppable way. However, the Pan Gu bell blocked this strike from Priest Hua. Enduring the intense vibration given by the bell, Ji Hao raised the Pan Gu sword and silently lunged it at Priest Hua's palm. The sword released a dim beam of light.

Priest Hua gave a muffled snort in pain as his palm was penetrated by the sword. Of course, he didn't finish his speech, because he had to draw back as fast as he could with his wounded palm.

Priest Hua's expression changed utterly. He looked at Ji Hao while trembling. His fury could even break the sky. Once again, he was injured by Ji Hao, by a disciple of Yu Yu with a sword!

Priest Mu's expression changed as well. Just now, when launching the strike, Priest Hua didn't restrain his power.

Priest Mu saw it clearly that Priest Hua put forth all of his power to try and kill Ji Hao with one strike. Nevertheless, with the Pan Gu bell, which was so mysterious to even Priest Mu himself, Ji Hao survived this strike. Although it seemed to be a bit difficult for Ji Hao, he did survive a full-strike of Priest Hua.

And his sword easily penetrated Priest Hua's palm.

Priest Mu's face turned even bitterer than usual. In a complicated way, he looked at Ji Hao and sighed, "My friend Yu Yu is so lucky. His oldest disciple, Priest Po once took a palm move from me. He was injured, but didn't die. And now, one like you has emerged among his disciples. Even though you have supreme treasures..."

"Guys, shall we continue this?" Ji Hao slowly raised the Pan Gu sword and said. He was as calm and cool as a chilly stream.

Chapter 1574: Be Greatly Shocked

"My friend Yu Yu is so lucky." This short sentence included everything Priest Mu wanted to say.

Looking at Ji Hao, Priest Mu pondered with the bitter look on his face.

Same as what happened today, a conflict started between Po and Priest Mu, leading to a fight. Priest Mu was infuriated, so he launched a palm move with all his power. He believed that the palm move could easily kill Po.

However, Po was incredibly powerful. As Yu Yu's oldest disciple, Po took a strike from Priest Mu, and was injured to the point of vomiting blood. But, the result of his palm move was far away from what Priest Mu expected, as he wanted to crush Po's body and destroy his soul.

How could a disciple take a full strike from Priest Mu and survive?

This fact strongly stimulated Priest Hua and Priest. For this exact reason, they started to recruit disciples from all over the world by all kinds of means.

Today, Yu Yu's younger disciple Ji Hao, who started his cultivation less than a century ago, took a full strike from Priest Hua with the help of supreme treasures. Indeed, Priest Hua was weaker than Priest Mu, but wasn't Ji Hao weaker than Po too?

Po took a full strike from Priest Mu with his actual power and cultivation. Stimulated by this fact, Priest Hua and Priest Mu began absorbing talented disciples from all over the world, in order to catch up with Yu Yu's sect. But today, Ji Hao took a full strike from Priest Hua with the help of a supreme treasure...It was easy to find talented disciples, but where could Priest Hua and Priest Mu find supreme treasures like the Pan Gu bell?

"Brother!" Priest Hua called Priest Mu coldly. Above his head, a dense cloud had been spinning slowly. From the cloud, beams of golden light poured down, spreading on the ground and transforming into blooming golden lotuses.

The intent of killing grew stronger in Priest Hua's heart. Under Yu Yu's guidance, Priest Po had already overshadowed all disciples under the guidance of Priest Hua and Priest Mu. But now, Ji Hao had become another threatening disciple of Yu Yu. Ji Hao hadn't started his cultivation for long, neither was he as powerful as Priest Po. But, judging by Ji Hao's performance today, no one under Priest Hua or Priest Mu's guidance would be able to rival Ji Hao.

Ji Hao was such a powerful and promising disciple. But sadly, he didn't belong to the sect led by Priest Hua and Priest Mu. Priest Hua and Pries Mu decided to seize the opportunity and kill Ji Hao, as they were in Pan Heng world with no other people around.

Even though Ji Hao was under the protection of the Pan Gu bell, by putting down all their pride and dignity, by combining their powers, couldn't Priest Hua and Priest Mu break the Pan Gu bell and crush Ji Hao's soul?

If Ji Hao were killed by Priest Hua and Priest Mu, the natural fortune of Priest Dachi, Priest Qingweim and Priest Yu Yu would certainly be decreased largely. Apart from this, Priest Hua and Priest Mu could also seize the Pan Gu bell and the Pan Gu sword. With the bell, Ji Hao was strong enough to take a full strike from Priest Hua. Similarly, if the bell belonged to Priest Mu and Priest Hua, it would certainly become a greatly powerful treasure in boosting the fortune of their sect.

Deciding to kill two birds with one stone, Priest Hua resolutely and determinedly decided to do this.

Priest Mu pondered for quite a while. The colorful branch in his hands slightly quaked, while a sense of quietus spread from his

body. Silently, this sealed area collapsed, and the corpse body of Pan Heng gradually turned into ashes, drifting away.

All of a sudden, a splendid light rose into the sky. Within the light, over a thousand pre-world spirit treasures and supreme treasures screamed shrilly while flying into the sky. Pausing briefly, all treasures transformed into streaks of light and attempted to escape.

Ji Hao, Priest Mu, and Priest Hua didn't see this coming. They hurriedly fixed their eyes on these treasures, then their souls were shocked. Instinctively, they all released their powers to forcibly occupy these treasures, which attempted to run.

Back then, Pan Heng joined the great war between Pan Gu and hundreds of millions of Chaos monsters. In the end, Pan Heng managed to drag the Pan Gu axe back to Pan Heng world with a badly injured body. As a greedy creature, she surely wouldn't let go of the treasures belonging to the other Chaos monsters who were killed by Pan Gu.

Over a thousand pre-world spirit treasures and supreme treasures, those were Pan Heng's harvest from the battleground.

No one knew how she suppressed the powers of so many powerful treasures with an injured body for so many years. Perhaps, because she burned too much energy and spirit power in suppressing all these treasures, she ended up being sealed by Green Ginseng and his friends all these years.

Whatever the truth was, the moment these spirit treasures and supreme treasures, which had all been releasing strong power waves, appeared, Priest Hua's strong intent of killing was gone, and so was Priest Mu's rage. Ji Hao's calmness was broken as well. The three of them immediately made their moves with all their powers, without paying more attention to the tense atmosphere between them.

Priest Mu slapped on his head and released dazzling light

streams. Fifty-two strangely shaped 'spirit warriors' of his roared thunderously and reached out their giant hands, cracking the space as they grabbed towards the treasures in the sky.

Priest Hua flashed across the air and created three-thousand weird-looking spirit warriors, sending them into the sky along with a beautiful melody. They weren't as powerful as Priest Mu's fifty-two spirit warriors, but they moved swiftly and nimbly. Within a few seconds, they had grasped over a hundred treasures.

Ji Hao also let his power erupt. With his one-hundred and eighty thousand miles tall Pan Gu body, he raised an arm and slapped one-thousand and eight-hundred spirit warriors of Priest Hua flying away, then moved a leg and swept away eighteen of Priest Mu 's spirit warriors before they could even react.

Ji Hao then reached out his pair of enormous hands and clenched his fingers towards the air, crushing countless layers of seals cast in the space by Priest Mu and Priest Hua. He grasped over five-hundred treasures from the air and threw them into the Pan Gu bell.

Priest Hua and Priest Mu exclaimed out loud. They witnessed Saint Pan Gu create the Pan Gu world, how could they not recognize the Pan Gu body?

It was just, just, just...

While forcibly restraining the shock in their heads and continuing to grasp the treasures from the sky, they gritted their teeth and roared in their heads. Ji Hao, a kid who didn't finish his first century of cultivation, had actually grown such a strong Pan Gu body. How could he even deserve it?

The overwhelming power and the great pressure given by Ji Hao's Pan Gu body even suffocated Priest Mu and Priest Hua.

Facing the tremendous Pan Gu body, they helplessly realized that no one among their disciples could take even one strike from Ji

Hao anymore, not to mention that terrifying long sword held in his hand, which could even injure Priest Hua so easily.

"The cultivation method with nine turns! It must be the cultivation method with nine turns that Priest Dachi, Priest Qignwei, and Priest Yu Yu created together!" Seizing about ten swiftly darting treasures, Priest Hua growled through gritted teeth, "The pool of Chaos spirit milk, Ji Hao, did you absorb it all? No wonder you managed to bring your Pan Gu body to such a high level!"

Hearing the words 'Chaos spirit milk, Priest Mu's face twisted intensively. He gave Ji Hao a complicated glance. Silently, he was determined to create another cultivation method to rival the cultivation method with nine turns, and to raise an elite from his disciples, who could compete with Ji Hao on the cultivation of Pan Gu body.

Otherwise, how could his sect ever expand and grow stronger?

Chapter 1575: Share the Interests

Intentionally or not, among all treasures in the sky, a tower was left to the last, while all the other treasures were occupied. That was a six storied, hexagonal tower, dark yellow in color and surrounded by coiling clouds and mist. No door existed on the tower but thirty-six windows, from which, a glistening yellow light shone. Led by the light, the tens of meters tall tower spun swiftly like a windmill.

Ji Hao, Priest Hua, and Priest Mu reached their hands to the tower simultaneously. Ji Hao maintained his shape in Pan Gu body, over hundred-thousand miles tall. Priest Hua and Priest Mu stopped driving their spiritual warriors, and instead, expanded their bodies also to about a hundred-thousand-miles tall. Their tremendous hands cracked the space and reached to the tower at lightning speed.

Priest Mu flicked his finger. Silently, the power of quietus landed on Ji Hao's palm.

Ji Hao sensed a piercing pain while his right forearm was evaporated quietly by the power of quietus, without leaving a trace. In the following moment, Ji Hao burst into a thunderous roar. Streams of Chaos power were forcibly drawn into Pan Heng world by Ji Hao from the Chaos, and within a single second, Ji Hao had a new arm, perfectly unharmed.

A dark sword light flew out of Ji Hao's left hand, without making any noise. Suddenly, the light reached to Priest Hua's face before he even noticed. Priest Hua gave a muffled snort. Earlier, he watched Ji Hao break Priest Hua's pestle with his sword. Therefore, he now dared not to defend himself against the sword light with his colorful branch or his body. Without any other choice, he took three steps backward in both shock and anger.

Taking three steps backward in a row, he was forced a million

miles away, far away from the tower.

Ji Hao's gigantic hand wrapped in layers of Chaos power was about to grasp this tower, but from another side, Priest Hua launched his palm while leaving shreds of images in the air. With his kaleidoscopic great Dao of evolvement, Priest Hua's created millions of complicated magic seals within a moment by slightly shaking his fingers. The magic seals coiled on Ji Hao's palm layer by layer like silk threads.

Ji Hao's giant arm stopped moving. He gave a resonant shout and sent up dragon-like fierce streams of Chaos power from his hand. A destructive power erupted from his giant body and pushed his hand, tearing all magi seals into pieces as it continued reaching out to the tower.

Priest Hua smiled faintly, then pointed his finger at Ji Hao. The space around suddenly collapsed and a tremendous power descended. Before Ji Hao realized what was happening, he was already thrown over a million miles away by Priest Hua through the space which was twisted by Priest Hua's supreme power.

"Ji Hao kid, you are still too young!" Priest Hua suddenly had such a good mood. He gripped the tower in his hand, then cast a spell at it, delightfully putting it into his sleeve.

Priest Mu took a few steps forward and stood side by side with Priest Hua. The two of them looked at Ji Hao with brightly shining eyes, with an extremely complicated feeling.

Ji Hao stood under the Pan Gu bell, holding the Pan Gu sword. From his forehead, the golden bridge darted out suddenly. Immeasurable waves of space vibration surrounded Ji Hao's body, seeming to bring him away through the space at any moment.

"The golden bridge!" Priest Mu sighed helplessly. He understood that it was impossible for Priest Hua and himself to kill Ji Hao today in here. With the golden bridge, not to mention traveling around Pan Heng world without any difficulty, Ji Hao could even

return directly to Pan Gu world, then bring Yu Yu back to fight.

Yu Yu was a bad-tempered one. If he knew that Priest Mu and Priest Hua combined their powers in Pan Heng world to bully his disciple, he might spread his life-taking sword formation to start a life-and-death war against Priest Hua and Priest Mu!

Yu Yu was powerful enough to cause Priest Mu and Priest Hua a serious headache, but now, he had Ji Hao, a little monster who wasn't afraid of any attack from Priest Hua and Priest Mu, and could even threaten their lives with his Pan Gu sword, as his disciple. Why could Yu Yu's sect be so thriving?

"Ji Hao, shall we call an end to what has been happening?" Priest Mu remained silent for a short while, then abruptly began talking, "You broke my brother's golden pestle, so you compensate my brother for his loss with three supreme treasures. What do you think?"

Ji Hao remained silent for a while. Just now, Ji Hao showed his Pan Gu body, which badly shocked Priest Hua and Priest Mu. Taking advantage of the situation, Ji Hao moved fast enough to seize about fifty percent of all treasures. In other words, nearly a half of all treasures collected by Pan Heng had fallen into Ji Hao's hands.

Priest Hua's golden pestle was broken by Ji Hao, but if he could clear the debt with three supreme treasures...

"Some of those large family leaders I brought to this world must have been keeping you informed. Some of them are already your disciples, aren't they?" Ji Hao conveniently took out three pre-world supreme treasures, pushing them to Priest Mu as he said, "Take away all your disciples mingled in the group of human being from large human clans and families. Take away all your people, and they won't be allowed to return to the humankind. How's that?"

Priest Mu took the three supreme treasures, but before he said a

word, Priest Hua laughed, "If I refuse to take them away, what can you do?"

Ji Hao gave a warmer grin, then looked at Priest Hua and responded slowly, "Elder, I've brought them here. Do you think they have a chance to return to Pan Gu world on their own? They will all die here, in battles."

Priest Hua's expression changed suddenly. With the remaining half of the golden pestle, he pointed at Ji Hao and shouted, "Ji Hao kid, how cruel are you? They are all human beings."

"I'm a divine emperor!" Ji Hao rolled up his eyes and said coldly.

Priest Hua opened his mouth. He wasn't happy about this response was given by Ji Hao, but he didn't know what to say.

Priest Mu slowly nodded and said, "You are a divine emperor, so facing those large human family leaders, you can kill as many of them as you like, or do anything you want to them. Alright, we will take away all our disciples. As for the other things, those are between you human beings. We won't step in."

Pausing briefly, Priest Mu pointed at Priest Hua and continued, "You broke my brother's arm..."

"Just now, you broke my arm too, elder." Ji Hao responded coldly.

"You're just a kid. How can your arm be compared to mine?" said Priest Hua angrily.

Priest Hua attempted to lay a pressure on Ji Hao with his high position. He was a master of a sect. A broken arm of his and a broken arm of Ji Hao, could those be the same?

Ji Hao rolled up his eyes once again. Maintaining the cold voice, he said, "I am a divine emperor! I am ruling Pan Gu world, guarded the natural law...You are beyond the mortal world, but as long as you stay in Pan Gu world, you need to follow the law of the world. Can't I be compared with you as a divine emperor?"

Priest Hua opened his mouth but was speechless again. All he could do was stare at Ji Hao furiously. 'This kid...This kid is a divine emperor chosen by the world! Damn it!' Thought Priest Hua. Ji Hao was a divine emperor, this fact was enough for Priest Hua to be speechless.

Priest Mu nodded slowly and said, "Regarding broken arms, we shall call it even. This Pan Heng world is very useful to my brother and I, so this world belongs to us now. Emperor Ji Hao, do you agree? If the heaven wants to take part in this, let's do whatever we can to determine the winner, shall we?

Remaining silent for a while, Ji Hao nodded and said, "This world belongs to you, alright! But Green Ginseng and the other ancestors are already under the protection of the heaven in Pan Gu world. They are no one but green ancestors, so I assume you can't care less, right? If you disagree, I will now return to Pan Gu world and ask my Shifu to negotiate with you!"

"Good!" As the golden bridge dazzled, Priest Mu pondered for a while and finally nodded.

Chapter 1576: Conquering

Green Ginseng and the other green ancestors stood by the edge of the sealed area, directing a large group of tree giants to strengthen the magic seal in a great hurry. They worried that Ji Hao might fail to kill Pan Heng, but enrage Pan Heng and cause an even more serious trouble.

While they were busy, three long streaks of light flashed over from a long distance away. The eye corners of Green Ginseng and the others twitched intensely. Sensing the suffocating power from the lights, they burst into shouts and screams simultaneously.

If one of the three light streaks was Ji Hao, who were the other two?

If one were Pan Heng and one was Ji Hao, who was the third one?

Soon, Green Ginseng and his friends thought of the owners of the other two light streaks — Priest Hua and Priest Mu, the two powerful beings who were also plant lives. But, how could they show up in here? When did they sneak into the sealed area? Green Ginseng and his friends knew nothing!

Before they could make any decision about how to react, the golden bridge flashed across Ji Hao's forehead and allowed him to surpass Priest Hua and Priest Mu by far, bringing him instantly to Green Ginseng and his friends. Before they could ask any question, Ji Hao wielded his sleeve and released an unstoppable force, which then transformed into a tornado, forcibly swirled them into his sleeve.

Thirty-three green ancestors and over ten-thousand tree giants, who were busy at strengthening the magic seal, were all captured by Ji Hao.

"Take me to your true bodies." Ji Hao gently tinkled the Pan Gu bell with his finger and said. A sonorous bell ring echoed through

the minds of Green Ginseng and the others. They saw thousands of stars sparkling before their eyes while feeling that their souls were about to collapse.

"Ji Hao, my friend!" In a panic, Green Ginseng shouted out loud, "Why are you doing this? When did we offend you?"

Green Ginseng and the other green ancestors were nearly scared to death by Ji Hao. This was the sad side of being plant lives, they were all precious herbs and plants. To cultivators, these green ancestors were highly nourishing and replenishing. They might survive if they encountered kind and peaceful people, but facing the evil and brutal ones, being sliced and thrown into stoves, then turned into magic pills would be their worst end, if they had no power to defend themselves.

"I have no evil intent against you. I am saving you." Through the Pan Gu bell, Ji Hao directly sent his voice into the souls of Green Ginseng and the other green ancestors. In this way, he didn't need to worry that Priest Hua and Priest Mu might be able to hear him. "The axe matters a lot. If anyone else knows about it, you will be torn into pieces. So, take me to your real bodies, I will give you a future!"

In a panic, Green Ginseng and the other green ancestors immediately understood. Ji Hao, Priest Hua, and Priest Mu were from the same world. If the axe truly mattered that much, Ji Hao, as its new owner, would never risk to let Priest Hua and Priest Mu know about it.

If Priest Mu and Priest Hua heard even a word about the axe, Ji Hao undoubtedly would silence Green Ginseng and his friends. In order to occupy the axe for themselves, Priest Mu and Priest Hua would not let Green Ginseng and his friends live either.

"Ji Hao, my friend, can you swear to save our lives?" Green Ginseng asked hurriedly.

"Cut the crap." Ji Hao responded with a deep voice, "I, as a divine

emperor of Pan Gu world, am telling you that as long as you follow me and become my ministers in the heaven, I will never harm you."

Ji Hao didn't want to start a massacre just to keep a secret. Therefore, bringing Green Ginseng and his friends under his leadership was his best choice.

The heaven in Pan Gu world had metal gods, green gods, fire gods, earth gods, and the gods of all the other natural elements. The gods from every department had their own territory, which were like independent small worlds. The territory of green gods in Pan Gu world was no worse than Pan Heng world, and it was supported and protected under the will of Pan Gu world. It could serve as the best cultivation ground for plant lives like Green Ginseng and his friends.

"Eh? What else are you hesitating for?" Ji Hao sent his divine seal into the Pan Gu bell and continued with a deep voice, "Follow my lead now. Otherwise, when the other two discover even a thing, you will die, both your bodies and your souls."

The Pan Gu sword also quietly flew into the Pan Gu bell. It expanded into a tremendous sword that floated above the heads of Green Ginseng and the others, suffusing the space inside the Pan Gu bell with a fierce intent of killing. Sensing the irresistible power releasing from the bell and the sword, Green Ginseng and his friends each let out a trace of true spirit and sent it into Ji Hao's divine seal, becoming green gods of Pan Gu world under Ji Hao's direct command.

Crack!

Green Ginseng and the others vomited the blood. The connection between them and Pan Heng world was suddenly broken and replaced by another world, a great world which was thousands of times stronger than Pan Heng world.

They sensed that their souls and spirits were brought under the

protection of a strong natural will, and a great power was flowing into their bodies through the immeasurable space. On their skin, green spell symbols sparkled as the great Dao of green from Pan Gu world began merging into their bodies, changing their understandings about the great Dao of nature.

"Your Majesty, we have about ten old friends guarding in different directions, defending the world against extraneous devils. Please, head to these places and bring in all our old friends. Other than the eighty-four of us, no other living beings in Pan Heng world know about the axe." Standing in the Pan Gu bell, Green Ginseng suggested loudly.

As the golden bridge flashed across Ji Hao's forehead, Ji Hao left the sealed area and disappeared without a trace.

Priest Mu and Priest Hua paused stopped where Green Ginseng and his friends were. They gazed where Ji Hao disappeared while frowning. A long while later, Priest Hua gave a frosty smile and said, "What an impatient boy. Those creatures share the same origin with us, and have solid foundations. If we bring them into our sect..."

Priest Mu slowly waved his hand and said carelessly, "They do have solid foundations, but their great Dao has already been finalized. Ji Hao took them because he can turn them into divine gods. By planting the great Dao of green from Pan Gu world into their souls directly, he can promote them to divine gods."

Shaking his head, Priest Mu continued in a bland tone, "If we bring them into our sect, we have to rinse their roots, turn them back into their natural shapes, and allow them to rebuild their cultivations based on our supreme great Dao, which would be a strenuous task, not as good as..."

Priest Mu's eyes sparkled again with the seven-colored light. Suddenly, he rudely interrupted Priest Mu and said, "Even though they may not be under our guidance, they are qualified to serve our

sect as guardians. You are hesitating, aren't you?"

Priest Mu's expression changed slightly. Looking at Priest Hua angrily, he said, "Great Freedom, do you want to die?"

Priest Hua's voice turned weird as he sneered and responded coldly, "Great Freedom? Can't I be Priest Hua? Hehe, how do you know that I'm not telling what's in Priest Hua's mind? In the end, you don't want to, aren't able to, and dare not to go against Priest Yu Yu and his brothers openly, am I right?"

"If everyone is as hesitant as you, when will our sect thrive?" Priest Hua shouted out loud.

Wielding his broad sleeve, Priest Hua stomped his foot against the ground and disappeared without a trace.

Priest Mu's face turned dark. Narrowing his eyes, he sank into his thoughts.

Chapter 1577: Expelling

In the basin, the enormous city of great calamity had already landed on the ground, covered in countless branches and straws. All defense formations were shut down.

In the city of great calamity, all human beings and non-humankind beings remained motionless. Outside the city, on the surrounding mountains, large groups of tree giants and green spirits arrayed quietly without showing a sign of attacking. The main force of Pan Heng world creatures had been fighting against Blood Crown, naturally paying less attention to this area.

With a clear noise from the sky, Ji Hao trod on a fiery cloud and descended from the air. As he wielded his sleeve, the branches and straws covering the city started burning, and were incinerated within a blink of an eye.

Polo Jia, Polo Yan, the other Yu Clan nobles, Wuzhi Qi in the shape of Si Wen Ming, and the group of large family leaders walked out of the city of great calamity. Ji Hao nodded to them as a greeting, then raised the Pan Gu bell with his left hand and let it ring. A three-hundred-meters-tall tree giant flew out of the bell.

Holding an enormous green staff, this tree giant politely kneeled on the ground and saluted to Ji Hao, then walked to the wall of the city of great calamity with giant steps. A distance away, the group of tree giants on a mountain, who were responsible for watching the city of great calamity, were instantly stirred. Some tree giants pointed at the tree giant on the city wall, shouting with hoarse voices in a panic, but no one could understand them.

The tree giant on the city wall stomped his staff heavily against the wall, then raised his head high and gave a series of growls with the language of Pan Heng world creatures. He sounded like a wooden reed pipe, sonorous, resounding, with a special trill.

The tree giants on the mountain paused briefly, then burst into

roars while leading countless green spirits and shadow leopards to rush up like the tide waves.

Polo Yan turned pale with fright. As the one who survived in this world for over ten years, he clearly knew how dangerous these local creatures be. He shouted out loud in a hurry, "Prepare for war! Prepare for war! Emperor Ji Hao, did you collude with these local creatures to..."

Polo Jia slapped straight on the back of Polo Yan's head and yelled at him, "Idiot! Shut up! As the others said, the good Flow Moon people are all wise, and the ones slightly combat-worthy are...total idiots. Look at the eyes of these local creatures. They have no intention of killing."

Hearing him, all non-humankind beings in the city of great calamity, who were thrown into a panic, turned around and looked at those Pan Heng world people. As Polo Jia said, their eyes were clear and green, without any intention of killing.

Hundreds of miles away from the city, hundreds of thousands of tree giants and countless green spirits kneeled on the ground and kowtowed to the tree giant on the wall, or more specifically, they kowtowed to the green staff held in his hands.

Ji Hao nodded in satisfaction, then shouted to the tree giant on the wall, "Green Xun, green ancestors are not convenient to come out. They will stay with me, and you are now responsible for communicating with your people. Remember, we're a family now. Do not start any conflict."

"Yes." Green Xun responded with a muffled voice, then roared towards all Pan Heng world creatures outside the city. Hearing him, all green spirits mounted on shadow leopards drew back, as fast as an ebbing tide, while the hundreds of thousands of tree giants stayed where they were, swaying their bodies. Their legs transformed into giant roots and slowly drilled into the ground.

With deep squeaking noises, the humanoid faces on the trunks of

these tree giants disappeared. They became tens of thousands of trees with luxuriant foliage that surrounded the city of great calamity, hiding it in a thriving greenery.

Green Xun nodded and carried the staff, which had been releasing strong waves of energy, then slowly walked to Ji Hao and quietly stood beside him.

Without explaining anything to the others, Ji Hao looked at the ones from the large human families and clans and said coldly, "leaders, elders, you're all elderships among human beings, while I am one from the younger generation. I don't want to make this too ugly."

The expressions of those people changed slightly. With a sulky face, the leader of Ghost Chariot Clan walked out and looked at Ji Hao, then said in a frosty tone, "Ji Hao, you brought us here with no reason, and now you say something like that. What on earth do you want? You're not thinking about leaving all of us here, are you?"

"Leaving all of you here? Do you mean, kill you? Why not?" Ji Hao smilingly looked at him and responded.

Immediately, all those people pulled out their weapons and stared at Ji Hao furiously.

Polo Jia, Polo Yan, and the other Yu Clan nobles paused briefly, then quickly stepped backward with grinning faces. They were allies with the humankind now, but an inner conflict between human beings was still good to hear and see.

If these people from large human families and clans could kill Ji Hao right on the spot, Polo Jia would definitely applaud for them. Polo Jia would even provide a batch of strong armaments to help these people, because after all, Ji Hao was extremely aggressive and dangerous to the non-humankind.

Ji Hao looked at those people who had weapons prepared.

From the air, a shrill bird scream could be heard while Yi Di led his troops to rise into the sky with their flying mounts. Over a hundred-thousand elite Eastern Wasteland archers hovered high up in the air as they locked up all the large family people with fierce intents of killing. Their bows were covered in sparkling spell symbols.

Shaking his head, Ji Hao took out a linden leaf and a lotus petal.

Of all people from large human clans and families on the scene, over thirty percent had their expressions changed immediately. In reverence, they put down their weapons, then deferentially kneeled on the ground.

Ji Hao's expression changed as well. He knew that some among these large family people had secretly joined Priest Hua and Priest Mu' sect, and they told Priest Mu and Priest Hua about this journey to Pan Heng world. But, Ji Hao never would have dreamed that over thirty percent of the leaders and elders from the top-ten human families and clans were Priest Mu and Priest Hua' disciples!

Did they trouble Si Wen Ming and Ji Hao back in the nine water gate area to strive for the credits of the flood-control mission for themselves, or did they do that under Priest Mu and Priest Hua' secret control?

"You, just go." Looking at the ones kneeling on the ground, Ji Hao said coldly, "Your master Shifu are right here in Pan Heng world. I assume you are all clearly aware of that. Go, just go. They're fighting Blood Crown, and are going to occupy the entire Pan Heng world. They need their disciples to work for them, so..."

All of a sudden, Ji Hao wielded his sleeve and generated a scorching gust of wind that rolled up these people and threw them outside the city.

"So, just piss off! If you can't do a thing to protect the humankind, if you know nothing but fighting each other and weakening the humankind, why should we keep idiots like you in

the human society? Piss off! Piss off!!"

The wind roared and swept these leaders and elders to tens of thousands of miles away. These people had no power of resistance.

The linden leaf and the lotus petal transformed into two streams of light and rose into the sky, flying behind the ones thrown out by Ji Hao.

Chapter 1578: Watching the Fight

Sending away the ones who were human leaders but followed the guidance of Priest Hua and Priest Mu, Ji Hao stood on top of a mountain and gazed at this world for a very long while.

He wasn't heavy-hearted, because he understood those leaders and elders. They had high positions and great wealth, which they never wanted to lose. Almost everyone from the upper class was like them. Those kinds of people had a shared goal, and no one was better than the other. Priest Mu and Priest Hua tempted them with immortal lives; how many people in Pan Gu world could ever say no to that?

Ji Hao didn't expel them because they were disciples of Priest Hua and Priest Mu. Wasn't Ji Hao a disciple of Yu Yu? Didn't he grow an embryo of Dao? With the embryo of Dao, he was now immortal.

Ji Hao sent them away simply because they hindered Ji Hao and Si Wen Ming, and also disgusted him. For this simple reason, Ji Hao expelled them from the troop in Pan Heng world, and the humankind in Pan Gu world.

If Priest Mu and Priest Hua weren't here, Ji Hao even wanted to leave these people in this world forever. This world was filled with thriving giant trees, which could certainly use some more nourishment.

"Ji Hao, what are we doing here?" Yi Di leaped down from the back of a giant eagle and curiously looked in the direction Ji Hao gazed at. In a far distance away, the magnificent golden city stood on the ground. Green thunderbolts had been landing on the city one after another, while the wind brought the raging roars of countless tree giants to Yi Di's ears.

"Wait, for a result!" Ji Hao said calmly, "I need to watch Blood Crown be killed, and his city be taken away, so I can stop worrying.

Once he dies, we will return to Pan Gu world...to flatten Liang Zhu City."

A tremor went through Yi Di's body. Flatten Liang Zhu City? Did Ji Hao mean wiping out all the remaining forces of the non-humankind in Pan Gu world? With the current power of the humankind, without the threat from the non-humankind, human beings would become the true owners of Pan Gu Motherland, wouldn't they?

Dragons lived in oceans, while phoenixes dwelled in volcanos, and the entire motherland would become the ranches and the homelands of human beings.

"We will live a good life, won't we? With no wars?" Yi Di murmured to himself, "But, what about the art of archery we've been spending all the effort on? If we don't need to fight the Yu Dynasty anymore, what would we use our art of archery for?" Yi Di seemed to lost in his thoughts.

"What are you thinking? Will the world truly be at peace after we have destroyed Yu Dynasty?" Ji Hao curved his lip corners downwards and said carelessly, "When can the world be in peace? Hehe."

"Of course, the world will be in peace without the Yu Dynasty. Conflicts do exist between clans, but the human emperor will mediate those!" Yi Di looked at Ji Hao in confusion and said, "For so many years, hasn't it always been like that?"

Ji Hao remained silent, but grabbed Yi Di's shoulder, activated the golden bridge, and directly teleported him to near the city of Blood Crown. Standing on a towering mountain, they looked at countless tree giants roaring hoarsely while marching to the golden city.

Yi Di couldn't see what Ji Hao had been seeing clearly with his eye of Dao. Ji Hao saw Priest Hua and Priest Mu sitting side by side high up in the air, with countless different sized lotuses drifting

out of their mouths and falling on those tree giants and green spirits.

From time to time, some tree giants and green spirits would burst into roars towards the sky, then uncontrollably kowtow. Afterward, their powers would soar, and when they rejoined the battle, the number of lives of non-humankind beings they harvested would rise sharply by a few times.

Ji Hao also clearly saw Priest Hua and Priest Mu pointing down their fingers from time to time, easily breaking the powerful defensive seals in Blood Crown's city. The formidable army of Pan Heng world creatures broke the lines of defenses one after another, crushing more and more non-humankind troops as it pushed the battlefront forward for thousands of miles.

This was cheating. Priest Hua and Priest Mu had been secretly helping the Pan Heng world army. Without Blood Crown coming out to face the enemies himself, how could those non-humankind nobles under his command ever stop the Pan Heng army?

More lines of defense were broken, as countless non-humankind beings threw away their armors and escaped desperately. The splendid golden city was already halfway occupied by green figures.

Ji Hao slightly shook his head. What happened to Blood Crown? If he did not make a move, his subordinates would all die.

In the Chaos, tens of Chaos tide waves bumped violently against each other. A strong destructive power tore open a black hole in the air. From the black hole, Blood Crown, with a large hole in his chest and barely maintaining his shape, was thrown out.

Having suffered a strike from Priest Mu, he was injured badly. A faint layer of golden light glistened on his body, shielding him through the disordered Chaos tide waves as he held his last thread of life-force together.

Buzz!

With a thunderous noise, a dark-green, mottled giant city, which was many times greater than Blood Crown's golden city, thickly covered in breaches and scratches, broke the space in the Chaos and appeared right in front of Blood Crown's face.

Two men with golden clothes walked out of the city in large steps, coming to Blood Crown with scornful smiles. Judging by the senses of power released from their bodies, these two men weren't weaker than Blood Crown.

"This is how the man who didn't want to share profits with the others ended." Glancing at Blood Crown, they sneered together.

One of them pressed a hand on Blood Crown's head and incanted a secret spell to suppress his soul, to not give him a chance to wake up. The other man took out a human-head sized black crystal ball and carefully put it near Blood Crown's mouth.

As he flicked his finger, the crystal ball split up and let out a black drop of blood, which emitted an endless desire of killing. The blood dripped slowly out of the crystal ball and flowed quickly into Blood Crown's mouth. Blood Crown quivered immediately, then dark and thick veins bulged under his skins.

"Eh...Hehehe..."

Blood Crown laughed with a weirdly twisted voice. If one listened carefully, one might find that the voice wasn't coming out of his mouth, but from every cell of his body.

The two men hurriedly grabbed Blood Crown and aimed at one direction, then threw him back to Pan Heng world.

Blood Crown's gigantic body transformed into a blood-red streak of light as it flashed across the space and disappeared from the Chaos.

"A drop of spirit blood from Ancestor Saint is enough for him to make a show." The two men in gold clothes sneered

simultaneously.

"Ah, so expecting. How much will his power be improved? A hundred times? A thousand times? Or ten-thousand times?"

"No matter how much he can improve, as the expense, his souls and spirit blood will be burned. In three days tops, he will die and his soul will perish!"

"Three days, enough for us to find out exactly how powerful was the one who injured him."

"Let's wait and see, until we know exactly how powerful Pan Gu world is. That world and the group of great worlds surrounding it, so promising!"

They sighed, then turned around together and looked at the dark-golden, mottled city in awe and veneration.

Chapter 1579: The Strike of Destruction

One day, in only one day, a large half of Blood Crown's city had fallen. The Pan Heng world army had already occupied a big part of the city, leaving only the ten-thousand-miles-squared, central area under the control of the non-humankind.

The subordinates under Blood Crown's direct command, including the chief officer who was in the highest position, had all put on armors, led the troops of Blood Crown, and joined the battle. But, everyone that rushed out of the great hall was dead.

The chief officer was slightly weaker than Blood Crown. The moment he rushed out of the hall in a destructive weapon, a seven-colored light descended from the sky and brushed across his body, instantly turning the hundreds of meters tall destructive weapon and him into ashes, without leaving even a trace of his soul.

"Master, where are you?" In the hall, all non-humankind nobles watched the death of the officer with a soul-deep fear. What kind of power could kill such a powerful being instantly?

The smarter one even thought of Blood Crown. Since this destructive force ended the life of the officer so quickly, what happened to Blood Crown, who was only slightly stronger?

The enemies had marched to the city center, but Blood Crown still didn't show up. Did the enemy kill him already?

But, how could it be possible? Blood Crown was one of the one-hundred and eight holy beings from the Holy Realm, one of the most powerful beings in Pan Yu world, and the conquerors of thousands of worlds. He had killed countless powerful beings from much greater worlds, so how could he ever fall in such a small world with a single nature of green?

The roars of countless tree giants quaked the sky. Enlightened by Priest Mu and Priest Hua forcibly, Giant Kui and the other world

guards had already transformed into their human shapes and learned some simple magic. As they flicked their arms, countless green thunderbolts roared down and striking on the great hall, vibrating it ceaselessly.

Suddenly, a defensive screen was violently broken, and thousands of green thunderbolts landed on the hall.

The great hall, which looked so magnificent and had been emitting a dazzling golden light, was shaken. Exquisite embossments fell from the hall and hit some guards nearby, turning the perfectly ordered array around the hall into a mess.

Ji Hao stood on the mountain as he calmly watched the city fall into a hopeless situation.

If Blood Crown still did not show up and let Priest Mu and Priest Hua do whatever they want, all tree giants and green spirits on the scene would become Priest Mu and Priest Hua' disciples, and all non-humankind beings in the city would be gone.

No one could survive the power of quietus from Priest Mu, not even a trace of one's soul.

Non-humankind nobles shrieked hysterically, darting around in the great hall in a panic. This was a well-planned conquering, but how on earth did it end up like this?

According to those poor lowly families who had invaded Pan Gu world, Pan Gu world had immeasurable resources, but was incredibly weak, wasn't that right? Didn't all the world owners from the group of great worlds around Pan Gu world die? Those poor people said that no one powerful enough could be found from all these worlds. Weren't they telling the truth?

Didn't they conquer Pan Gu world so smoothly and easily? Didn't they kill all local creatures in Pan Gu world with no effort, then take possession of Pan Gu world and all owner-less worlds around it?

But, how on earth could all this happen? The creatures from Pan Heng world, the small world chosen by them as a bridgehead, had actually broken the unbreakable golden city and marched to the great sacred hall. How could this happen?

"Nightmare, we must be having a nightmare!" Said a Xiu Clan master while wielding his arms and darting around in the hall. He wasn't a fighter, and was freaking out since long ago. "Everyone, everyone, don't panic, don't panic. We're just having a nightmare. Haha, this can't be real! How can supreme Blood Crown ever lose? Haha, how can we ever die in this barbaric place?"

From the top of a mountain less than a hundred miles away from Ji Hao, those leaders and elders from large human families and clans, who were expelled by Ji Hao, suddenly showed up, surrounded by countless green spirits. They proudly glanced at Ji Hao, then kowtowed in the air, passionately calling the names of Priest Hua and Priest Mu and eulogizing them with the most beautiful language they knew.

Hearing them, Ji Hao wanted to even laugh. According to these people, Priest Hua and Priest Mu were the saviors of Pan Gu world, that without them, Pan Gu world would definitely fall into a dark, hopeless situation!

"Savior?" Shaking his head, Ji Hao said, "If they're the saviors, back then when non-humankind invaded Pan Gu world, they should have fought the invaders with all their powers...But they didn't. On the contrary, they seized the opportunity, made use of the invaders, and overturned the ancient heaven!"

Ji Hao didn't know what exactly happened back then, but based on all he had found out during these years, and the powers showed by Priest Mu and Priest Hua, Ji Hao deduced this.

He even suspected that if those poor Yu Clan families who lived a vagrant life in the Chaos were truly able to arrive in Pan Gu world or not! Those poor Yu Clan nobles were kicked out of Pan Yu

world, to hopelessly explore the Chaos. But, how did they manage to invade Pan Gu world so easily? Did someone show them the way to Pan Gu world on purpose?

"Savior?" Hehe, they only want your faith power." Ji Hao looked at these crazy large family people coldly.

All of a sudden, the sky of Pan Heng world split up, and a light-cyan sun exploded. Cyan-colored fire streams descended from the sky. Countless cyan fireballs hit on the ground, causing thunderous noises.

The smallest cyan fireball was over a thousand miles in diameter. With a great heat, the cyan fireballs landed heavily on the ground, turning everything it touched into ashes. The thriving forests was burned. Countless tree giants and green spirits were gone, and mountains were flattened.

Priest Mu and Priest Hua had already been seeing Pan Heng world as their own property. The falling of a sun caused extremely severe damages to Pan Heng world. Watching the sun falling, they stood up and grinned in anger, looking at the enormous figure darting in through the crack in the sky.

That was Blood Crown. His body had turned purely black, wrapped in dark smoke. From his erect eye, beams of black light had been releasing. He roared rumblingly while diving down from the sky.

He brought a hundred-thousand-miles diameter natural star composed with pure divine metal from the Chaos. Carrying the star with both arms, he threw it to the earth.

Priest Hua flashed across the air and raised his arms underneath the star, attempting to hold it back.

The tremendous star struck down and landed on the earth of Pan Heng world along with Priest Hua. With an earth-shaking boom, a giant dent appeared on the ground, with a diameter of over a

hundred-million-miles. Dark flame rose wave after wave, rolling up from the edge of the huge dent and spreading with an unstoppable power, which seemed to destroy the whole world.

Chapter 1580: Injure Priest Hua severely

"Help!" Priest Hua fell to the ground and created a giant dent on the ground. The destructive black fire spread out at lightning speed, reaching those leaders and elders from large human clans and families, who were expelled by Ji Hao, within a blink of an eye.

Ji Hao's eye corners twitched intensely.

Should he save them? Should he not?

Before Ji Hao figured it out, a streak of cyan flame swished down from the sky and hit violently on his body. The Pan Gu bell rang, echoing through the sky as it released countless Chaos power streams to shield Ji Hao and Yi Di. The cyan flame exploded and sent them tens of thousands of miles away.

The dark fire swept across the earth and flattened every mountain it touched, erasing all living beings from the earth. Those people who were expelled by Ji Hao screamed in fear as they activated all of the powerful life-saving treasures they had. However, none of those treasures managed to protect them from the black fire.

The treasures were crushed instantly. Hundreds of leaders and elders, who used to be at high positions among human beings, quivered, then their bodies disintegrated into the finest grains, dissipating in the air.

Not even Priest Mu managed to save these people. Blood Crown roared thunderously. His body was entirely black, and his erect eye had been releasing sharp black lights. He had completely lost his mind as he dove down from the sky like a monster, reaching to Priest Mu within a fraction of a second.

Priest Mu wielded his colorful branch. Blood Crown defended himself with one hand while scratching on Priest Mu's chest with

his other hand eighteen times, which was crooked like an eagle claw, at lightning speed.

Following a muffled bang, the branch crushed an arm and a shoulder of Blood Crown. From his wounds, his black blood poured down to the ground. Falling on the ground, every drop of the black blood could drain the life-force of an area ten-thousand miles in radius. Within this area, all plants would turn into ashes, while all of the tree giants and green spirits would become black dust in despair.

Priest Mu's chest shone with a green light because of the 'sacred linden body' he cast; the green light protected him like a strong armor.

Following a series of cracking noise, the green light was torn open by Blood Crown's claw, and with the rest seventeen moves, Blood Crown's claw sank deeply into Priest Mu's chest.

Priest Mu's face twitched slightly. His chest was mutilated, and his blood surged out of the wounds.

Unlike Blood Crown's black blood, as Priest Mu's blood fell to the ground, a thriving life-force suddenly erupted from the area affected by his blood. Countless plants drilled out from the earth as they emitted a refreshing aroma to neutralize the scorching power released from the black blood, cleaning out the destructive force contained in it.

"Die!" Blood Crown had completely lost his wits. As he growled deeply, his arm, which was crushed by Priest Mu's colorful branch, immediately grew back. He held Priest Mu with both arms, then widely opened his mouth and attempted to bite his head.

Priest Mu roared in rage. He nimbly freed himself from Blood Crown's embracement, then pointed his finger at him. Following his moves, a flying sword swished out of his sleeve, dazzling with a beam of cold light. That was a pre-world spirit treasure collected by Pan Heng. The frosty sword light transformed into a pink rain

of light and struck on Blood Crown's body.

Blood Crown was nearly shredded by the fierce light rain. Over seventy percent of his skin and muscles were sliced off, and his dark bones were exposed. However, he felt no pain. While howling, he gripped the flying sword which descended from the sky, then put forth his strength and snapped it into two.

Clang!

The damaged flying sword transformed into two streams of pink mist, slowly drifting back into Priest Mu's sleeve. Priest Mu's expression changed suddenly as he stared at Blood Crown and asked, "Blood Crown, are you possessed by the devil?"

Any danger could happen in the Chaos, which had unimaginable creatures like the sky devils hiding in it. When Priest Mu injure Blood Crown and sent him to the Chaos, nothing was wrong with him except for the injury.

However, when he returned, he had lost his mind completely, and his power had soared. By now, he could even snap pre-world spirit treasures with his bare hands. He had changed in a scary way. It was as if a devil was hiding inside him, controlling his body to fight. Besides, Priest Mu clearly sensed that Blood Crown's spirit blood and soul had been burning speedily. Based on the current burning rate of his soul and spirit blood, in two days at most, his spirit blood would be consumed up and his soul would be gone.

"Die!" Blood Crown burst into a growl. His arms squirmed, suddenly extending for tens of times like a pair of dark tentacles covered in mucus. Along with a series of swishing noise, another six long tentacles grew out of his shoulders. The eight tentacles lunged simultaneously towards Priest Mu's chest, swishing shrilly.

"Ignorant beasts, I won't waste my time on you." With dazzling eyes, Priest Mu snorted coldly and turned around to walk right away. He flashed across the air once and disappeared without a trace.

He believed that Blood Crown would certainly die in two days, so why should he risk his life in fighting against Blood Crown? Blood Crown's power had indeed soared, but still, he couldn't do true harm to Priest Mu. At the very most, Blood Crown could cause Priest Mu some slight injuries with his current power.

In this case, Priest Mu decided to let him die of exhaustion.

Priest Mu followed the great Dao of quietus, and was nearly emotionless. Facing Blood Crown's challenge, he chose the simplest and easiest way to deal with the situation. Rather than putting up a desperate fight against Blood Crown, he should better go save his disciples.

Just now, the hundreds of leaders and elders from large human clans of families, who were under his guidance, were erased from the universe. Watching those people die, Priest Mu's heart truly ached...

Including Giant Kui, his eight-hundred new disciples who were also the guards of Pan Heng world, were still in the golden city down below, with countless tree giants and green spirits, who had also followed his guidance. Priest Mu transformed into a stream of green light, diving down from the sky. As he wielded his arms, countless disciples of his were swirled into his broad sleeves.

"Kill!" Blood Crown failed to locate Priest Mu, who disappeared into the sky. But from a distance away, a bright shout could abruptly be heard. Following the shout, Priest Hua rose into the sky with a burning rage, his eyes sparkling with a seven-colored light. He approached Blood Crown at lightning speed.

Earlier, Priest Hua was pressed to the ground by the natural star from the Chaos. He wasn't harmed, but his robe was torn and his face covered in dirt. Besides, he was trying to stop the star, but as a result, he ended up being smashed to the ground by the star...

Priest Hua didn't have Priest Mu's stable mental state. He felt humiliated. Flying to Blood Crown, he lunged a longsword towards

Blood Crown's heart.

Dark spell symbols poured down from Blood Crown's eyeballs like waterfalls. He had lost his wits, but the fighting instinct which had been controlling his body clearly told him that he couldn't win against Priest Hua or Priest Mu.

As he couldn't win, Blood Crown suddenly spread his eight long tentacles and wrapped Priest Hua up.

A dazzling light flashed across the sky, then a dark light sphere emerged in the sky, a hundred times greater than the suns in Pan Heng world. Blood Crown released all his spirit blood and soul power instantly, detonating the drop of black blood inside his body.

The horrifying explosion quaked the earth and the sky. Ji Hao drove the golden bridge at his highest speed and fled desperately with Yi Di.

Bang! In the middle of the black light sphere, Priest Hua's limbs were blown up.

Chapter 1581: Nine Suns Shine in the Sky

A dark sun glowed in the higher sky, releasing thin and sharp beams of dark light that landed on the earth of Pan Jia world like a black rain of shooting stars. Every beam of dark light started a raging fire on the earth, instantly evaporating the mountains, erasing the forests, and killing countless Pan Heng world creatures.

Dark mushroom clouds rose into the sky, forming a thick layer of clouds with a destructive power.

Ji Hao reached his spirit power into the dark cloud and immediately sensed a sharp pain in the head. His spirit power was 'melting' quickly in the dark cloud. He was shocked, that not even his highly compressed spirit power could withstand the erosion of the dark cloud, which meant ordinary creatures would die the moment they touched it.

He grabbed Yi Di, drove the golden bridge, and swiftly flashed across the air, returning to the city of great calamity within a second. He didn't have the time to do anything else but shout as loud as he could to drive everyone around the city inside.

Countless thin metal petals of the city absorbed the natural powers at the highest rate and triggered strong layers of defensive screens. Ji Hao then activated the Pan Gu bell and released huge streams of Chaos power to shield the city. Next, the enormous city rose into the sky at its highest speed.

Underneath the city, the portal, which had been shut down, suddenly burst with a dazzling beam of light. Within the light, the city of great calamity turned hazy and disappeared within a blink of an eye. The moment the city merged into the Chaos, Ji Hao darted out of it and looked where Blood Crown detonated himself.

Priest Hua and Priest Mu roared in both anger and shock. They simultaneously released their great powers to defend the world

against the dark shooting stars descending from the sky and protect the environment of Pan Heng world as much as they could.

They had already been seeing this world as their property. Blood Crown detonated himself, by doing which, he not only injured Priest Hua severely, he also seemed to destroy this world. Priest Hua and Priest Mu were infuriated; they could not let the world be destroyed. However, Blood Crown was already gone without a trace, such that they couldn't even find someone to blame.

Dark light beams fell from the sky, while a gigantic linden tree and an enormous seven-colored lotus floated in the air, glowing with a clear light. The dark light was devoured by the clear light emitted from the tree and the lotus, without being able to cause any harm to Pan Heng world.

Nevertheless, just now, the hundreds of thousands of beams of dark light had already destroyed a small half of Pan Heng world, wiping out countless local creatures. A scorching power lingered in the air while a dark hurricane rolled the black fire spreading in every direction. Wherever the hurricane and the fire swept across, everything was turned into ashes.

Ji Hao considered himself lucky, as the city of great calamity moved fast enough. Otherwise, facing the overwhelming hurricane and dark fire, he didn't have the confidence to protect such a giant city, and everyone in the city could die.

The others weren't so important, but he did bring quite a number of his trusted subordinates from Yao Mountain territory to Pan Heng world. He couldn't let those people die in here for nothing.

'Anyhow, Blood Crown is finally dead,' Ji Hao nodded and thought. 'The ones who followed Priest Hua and Priest Mu all died as well...Back in Pan Gu world, we can focus on dealing with the Yu Dynasty. If we think of killing them or enslaving them, with our current power, Yu Dynasty cannot resist.'

While he was pondering, four dark cracks suddenly appeared in

the sky. From the cracks, four lion-like Chaos monsters rushed out and roared ferociously. Each of the four Chaos monsters had nine heads, with its entire body burned with a dark fire and eyes shining with a dark light.

The four 'lions' were hundred-miles-tall and thousand-miles-long, treading on the lotuses condensed from the black fire while emitting a black light from their bodies to illuminate the Chaos. Every slight movement of these four Chaos monsters seemed to break the surrounding space with the sharp light beams releasing from their bodies, that made them look quite formidable.

Seeing Priest Hua and Priest Mu, who had been stopping the dark light beams falling from the sky, the four 'lions' burst into thunderous raging roars. They widely opened their jaws and let out four giant spheres, spinning and swishing down towards Priest Hua and Priest Mu. The four Chaos monsters acted like they had a blood feud with Priest Hua and Priest Mu.

These four Chaos monsters seemed to be completely crazy, but they did know how to pick the weaker one to attack. Among the four spheres they spat out, one flew to Priest Mu as a distraction, while the other three all smashed towards Priest Hua along with a rumbling, deafening noise, as Priest Hua's broken limbs had still been regrowing.

Priest Hua and Priest Mu exclaimed out loud together. The power they sensed from these four 'lions' was exactly the same as what they sensed from Blood Crown, filled with a desire for destruction. The four spheres they let out were all pre-world supreme treasures, highly lethal.

"Brother, watch out!" Priest Mu raised his colorful branch and created a broad beam of light that shielded Priest Hua, who could not move at this moment.

Priest Hua's eyes shone with the seven-colored light as Great Freedom popped out again and chuckled, "You're the one who

needs to watch out, not me!"

Moving nimbly, Priest Hua brought up a gust of wind and moved to before Priest Mu's branch, straightening his neck and bumping into the four spheres.

Immediately, both Priest Mu and Ji Hao understood why Great Freedom did this. He wanted Priest Hua's body and soul to be injured severely, so that Priest Hua would fall into a low state and he could seize the opportunity to replace his soul.

"Damn you! If you dare to make trouble now, I will make you disappear!" Priest Mu was genuinely enraged, not because of Great Freedom, but because of Priest Hua.

He clearly understood that without Priest Hua's cooperation, how could Great Freedom pop out and cause troubles over and over again? Just now, when Blood Crown detonated himself, if Priest Hua didn't let Great Freedom control his body and throw himself into the weakest state on his own initiative, the worst that could ever happen to him would be him vomiting blood instead of vanished limbs, despite the destructiveness of Blood Crown's self-detonation.

On his way pursuing the great Dao of evolvement, Priest Hua had already been possessed by the inner devil. He was walking on the edge of a blade.

Seeing Priest Hua risk his life, Priest Mu had no better choice than rushing up, creating a soft yet strong stream of light with his colorful branch to forcibly stop the four spheres. With a thunderous boom, the colorful branch dimmed, while Priest Mu was pressed down for thousands of miles.

Ji Hao shook his head as he glanced at Priest Mu, who was clearly not coping with the situation easily. Next, Ji Hao activated the golden bridge and flashed across the space, instantly reaching the 'sun world' of Pan Heng world.

Same as the sun world in Pan Gu world, the nine suns in Pan Heng world also had an independent small world where no ordinary creatures could enter.

Earlier, Blood Crown destroyed a Pan Heng sun, causing a severe damage to Pan Heng world, also creating a giant breach in the 'sun world' of Pan Heng world. Through the breach, Ji Hao broke into the sun world.

"Get over here!" Ji Hao roared towards the sky and released a golden light from his head. The Pan Jia sun emitted a blinding light that illuminated the entire space, adding radiance and beauty to each other in coordination with the eight Pan Heng suns.

Ji Hao released his Pan Gu body, turning hundreds of thousands of miles tall and surrounded by an ocean-vast Chaos power. Ji Hao spread his arms and controlled his power, pulling one Pan Heng sun towards his body with all his power.

With the help of the Pan Jia sun, this Pan Heng sun trembled intensely while being slowly pulled into the void inside Ji Hao's body.

Chapter 1582: Nothing But Interests

"Great Master!"

When Blood Crown suddenly exploded, all direct subordinates of his in the great hall of the golden city, and the ones who wanted to follow him, burst into despairing wails. They could not believe that Blood Crown was dead, neither were they willing to believe that Blood Crown detonated himself for nothing!

What exactly happened? In the great hall, all non-humankind beings screamed like lunatics, as they didn't even know what was happening. They felt that this entire expedition trip was a mistake, and they smelled countless schemes.

Earlier, the chief official rushed out of the hall and ended up being destroyed by Priest Mu with one strike. At the moment, no leader existed in the hall, and everyone was yelling and shouting. Someone even cried hysterically, and some pulled out their weapons in despair, attempting to finish their own lives...

In this scene of chaos, two figures in golden cloaks quietly showed up before the throne of Blood Crown.

"Shut up! You, are you still the descendants of the noble ancestor Pan Yu?" With his staff, one man in a golden cloak struck the ground and caused a thunderous bang, vibrating the entire hall.

All non-humankind beings in the hall raised their heads, stunned, staring at these two men in golden cloaks, who definitely shouldn't have shown up in here.

In the 'Holy Realm', which was the most powerful organization in Pan Yu world, one-hundred and eight 'holy beings' had the highest power of Pan Yu world. Among the one-hundred and eight holy beings, the twelve with the titles of 'Crown' composed the Highest Council of the Holy Realm, and were the noblest, most powerful beings in Pan Yu world.

Blood Crown had slaughtered countless life, for which reason, he attained his title of Blood Crown. These two men in golden cloaks standing before his throne were equally powerful as Blood Crown. They were Shadow Crown and Evil Crown, and were enemies of Blood Crown.

Shadow Crown and Evil Crown both liked schemes and backstabbing. Therefore, they naturally became allies. Shadow Crown had his eyes and ears all over Pan Yu world, for which he was famous. In Pan Yu world, no one could guarantee that his or her most trusted subordinates weren't spying for Shadow Crown. Unlike Shadow Crown, Evil Crown was good at assassination and sowing discord among others. Thousands of large Yu Clan families started wars against each other because of Evil Crown, eventually sinking because of exhaustion.

When the non-humankind beings in the hall saw these two terrifying beings show up together, they clearly understood the situation. As they thought, Blood Crown was entrapped.

After a short silence, led by the fifth exclusive officer, who had the highest position among all under Blood Crown's command on the scene, all non-humankind beings in the hall kneeled, put their forehead and palms on the ground, and kowtowed to the two in golden cloaks, "Noble Masters, we will follow all your orders. Your will is the direction of our souls!"

Shadow Crow and Evil Crow smiled at each other, then the latter raised his hand and drew a line in the air, splitting the space with a golden beam of light and dividing the group of non-humankind beings kneeling on the ground evenly into two. Then, he said, "How's this? Their family powers are about the same, so neither of us will gain less than the other one, eh?"

Shadow Crown narrowed his eyes and observed the ones kneeling on the ground, then also drew a line in the air. As a golden beam of light flashed across the air, the positions of tens of non-humankind beings were switched from one side to the other

side. Afterward, Shadow Crown responded, "In this way, they are truly comparable. Now, each of the two sides has no more than a million troops...You pick first!"

The hearts of all non-humankind beings kneeling in the hall were ice-cold. They were from tens of thousands of families, and each family controlled hundreds of millions of warriors. However, Shadow Crown calculated out the total military force of all their families within a blink of an eye, and managed to evenly divide them into two parts...How many spies did he plant in every family?

"Alright! In this case, the ones near me are my subordinates from now on." Evil Crown carelessly nodded and said, "So, start from appendage families. If you do well, perhaps, your families will have the honor to be under my direct leadership after this expedition trip."

Tens of thousands of non-humankind beings in the hall reverently sang the praises of the two crowns, all swearing to pledge their loyalties lifelong. Next, they delightfully stood back up from the ground in two large groups, behind their new masters.

At this very moment, Blood Crown, the fallen holy being, had become history. Many non-humankind beings on the scene even directly erased all memories about Blood Crown from their souls with a special magic. This was a hidden rule from Pan Yu world that worthless people should not be memorized.

Shadow Crown and Evil Crowl smilingly looked at the void mirror in the middle of the hall, with greed flashing across their eyes. The mirror was a useful tool, a sharp weapon. Everyone wanted the mirror, but neither of them showed their intention towards the mirror.

Through the mirror, they silently watched Priest Hua and Priest Mu fight the four 'lions'.

Each of the four 'lions' was fed with a drop of sacred blood, but

was cruller than Blood Crown had suffered. Because of a secret dark magic cast by Shadow Crown and Evil Crown, their life-force would drain and their soul would explode within two hours.

Priest Mu and Priest Hua were both especially powerful beings, but by combining their powers and with the help of the four pre-world supreme treasures, the four 'lions' had been giving Priest Mu a hard time. Priest Mu did not only need to fight the four 'lions', he also had to be on guard against Priest Hua's little tricks. To Priest Mu, the enemies came from both the front and the back. He was indeed incredibly strong, but he could not attack Priest Hua no matter how!

"Interesting living beings... Very powerful, but have weaknesses." Evil Crown observed Priest Hua and Priest Mu for a while, slightly shaking his head as he said, "But we can't tell for sure if their weakness is real. In all probability, they have just been showing these weaknesses to us on purpose, right? Have they guessed about our existences already? Are they showing weaknesses intentionally to trap us?"

"It's possible, but...keep observing. Without being completely sure, I will never start a war against such powerful beings." Shadow Crown said smilingly, "I'm not like Blood Crown. I have never been a good fighter. Besides, these two are immeasurable to us."

Evil Crown sighed and said, "Pan Gu world, what a terrifying world. With these powerful 'holy-level' beings, the world was actually occupied by those poor families for so many years...Based on what we know, strong conflicts existed between Pan Gu world creatures. Maybe, we can make use of the unknown conflicts, can't we?"

Shadow Crown smiled immediately and asked, "How? Are we going to work with these two?"

Evil Crown raised his eyebrows and turned around, looking at

Shadow Crown as he responded, "Can't we do that?"

Shadow Crown frowned, seriously looking at Evil Crown as he said, "Can we?"

Evil Crown hesitated briefly and laughed, "Why not try?"

Shadow Crown remained silent for a short while, then both of them turned to the mirror, looking at Priest Mu and Priest Hua.

Chapter 1583: Chime In Easily

High up in the air, Ji Hao laughed resonantly towards the sky.

In the void inside his body, a golden sun had been releasing a raging fire and a blinding golden light inexhaustibly. Eight slightly larger suns with the color of light green mixed with a faint golden hue composed a perfect circle, surrounding the golden sun while giving out a strong light and heat.

Ji Hao's embryo of Dao sat above the golden sun with its legs crossed. The Pan Gu bell released streams of Chaos power and surrounded the embryo of Dao, while it was continuously changing its hand motions, leaving shreds of afterimages in the air.

Earlier, Ji Hao almost drained his embryo of Dao to pull the eight Pan Heng sun into his body. At the moment, his was filled with strength, but the embryo of Dao looked dim and exhausted. His soul power was exhausted, that he couldn't even control a finger. Fortunately, the embryo of Dao was protected by the Pan Gu bell, and nourished by the strong spirit blood from the physical body and the especially pure sun power from the Pan Jia sun. Bit by bit, Ji Hao was slowly regaining his soul power.

The eight Pan Heng suns spun swiftly and agitatedly inside Ji Hao's body, giving out a strong rejective power from their cores. The independent spirits of the eight Pan Heng suns were immature and weak, but they clearly sensed that they were pulled into Ji Hao's body, and this wasn't a good thing for themselves.

Abruptly, a light green Pan Heng sun rose into the sky, released raging fire streams that wove into a giant tentacle and whipped the surrounding space. Ji Hao's embryo of Dao, which had been recovering, raised its head with efforts and pointed at this unsettled Pan Heng sun.

The Pan Gu sword buzzed deeply, suddenly transforming into a dazzling dark light that tore apart the space and fiercely pierced

into the core of this Pan Heng sun, slaying the Pan Heng sun's weak independent spirit which hadn't waken up, making it disappear for good.

From the Pan Jia sun, a golden streak of fire rose and transformed into an enormous Gold Crow that darted into the Pan Heng sun. Without its independent spirit, the Pan Heng sun didn't do anything to resist. Instead, it let the Gold Crow into its core.

Boom!

A golden light erupted from the core of this Pan Heng sun, then spread out. Within a couple of breaths, this Pan Heng sun had turned into a dazzling golden sun. The power of this Pan Heng sun turned over ninety percent similar to the power of the Pan Jia sun, also similar to the power of the Pan Gu sun.

The green power was the foundation of Pan Heng world. The nine suns of this world were marked by the great Dao of green, and the pure sun power from these nine suns contained a strong green power. Under the effect of the great Dao of nature of this world, the pure sun power in the nine Pan Heng suns didn't emblazon the green power contained in the nine suns. On the contrary, the strong and pure green power had merged with the pure sun power.

However, Ji Hao directly killed the independent spirit of this Pan Heng sun, cutting off its connection with Pan Heng world and planting the fire generated from his own understanding about the great Dao of sun into it. It was like throwing a burning match onto a pile of firewood, that the entire pile was immediately set on fire.

As a basic natural law, the fire suppressed the green. The nine light green Pan Heng suns with abundant green powers existed in Pan Heng world because of the great Dao of nature of this world. But, Ji Hao 'corrected' this abnormal phenomenon and turned this sun into a normal, natural sun.

A sun was supposed to be dazzling, purely positive, and filled with the purest fire power. Why did a sun ever need any other type

of natural power?

This Pan Heng sun was changed all of a sudden, like a fire phoenix bursting out of its shell, without any constraints. The immeasurably great amount of green power contained in it was detonated, all becoming a source of energy.

"Duo! Go!" Ji Hao quickly changed his hand motions. The Pan Gu sword flashed across the inner void seven times in a row, killing the independent spirits of all the rest seven trembling Pan Heng suns.

The Pan Jia sun quivered intensely and let out seven Gold Crows, darting into the seven Pan Heng suns at light speed. At the moment, Ji Hao's entire body shone with a dazzling golden light, giving out a scorching heat while all nine purely golden suns quietly floated inside his body.

A strong burning power flowed to every corner of this body, making perspiration stream down his back. He silently activated the cultivation method with nine turns, quietly absorbing the flawless and pure sun power from the nine suns to replenish his embryo of Dao.

His hazy and transparent embryo of Dao gradually turned clear, and its weak sense of power slowly turned stronger.

At this very moment, Ji Hao's heart drummed for a few times. He had attained a Pan Gu body. Although not as powerful as Saint Pan Gu, this physical body of Ji Hao was already magical. He suddenly sensed something, which was definitely unfavorable.

He hurriedly opened his eyes and lowered his head, looking where Priest Mu was fighting the four 'lions'.

Since one of the nine Pan Heng world suns were destroyed and the other eight were occupied by Ji Hao, the entire Pan Heng world was now dark. The whole world had been quickly turning cold and moist. The darkness couldn't block Ji Hao's eyesight, not to

mention the fact that Priest Mu's entire body had been shining brightly.

He saw two men dressed like Blood Crown show up around Priest Mu, then the space around them twisted intensely. Ji Hao clearly understood that they were communicating with unimaginably strong soul powers.

With this method of communication, thousands of words could be told within a moment.

With Priest Mu and Priest Hua's cultivations, they were able to create hundreds of millions of thoughts within a moment. Within this moment, hundreds of millions of thoughts could also be given up; within a moment, they could pick out the most beneficial one from countless choices, then put it into practice at the highest speed.

Abruptly, Priest Mu, Priest Hua, and the two men in golden cloaks turned to Ji Hao simultaneously. The four ferocious 'lions', who had been crazily pouncing on Priest Mu, suddenly paused, then slowly turned around and locked their dazzling eyes on Ji Hao's body. They suddenly burst into a series of thunderous roars. The four spheres wrapped in dark fires swished towards Ji Hao, broke the space, and reached to Ji Hao's face within a blink of an eye.

Ji Hao hurriedly let out the Pan Gu bell and released a thick wall of Chaos power, defending against the four spheres.

With an earth-shaking noise, a terrifying force struck on Ji Hao's body through the Chaos power wall, numbing his entire body. His embryo of Dao hadn't recovered yet, and his soul power was extremely weak at the moment. Consequently, he wasn't able to freely control his incredibly strong physical body to fight.

Bumbling backward for tens of steps, Ji Hao looked at Priest Mu, Priest Hua, and the two men in golden cloaks in shock.

Chapter 1584: Supreme Treasure of Great Dao

The four wild Chaos monsters which were fed with the sacred blood of Saint Pan Yu completely went crazy, and had been burning their spirit blood and souls, added with the four dark fire spheres which were four highly lethal supreme treasures. They released a destructive power that even made Ji Hao's expression change in shock.

In the normal state of the four Chaos monsters, they were equally powerful as Ji Hao, who had just merged with eight Pan Heng suns. But, with the Pan Gu sword and the Pan Gu bell, Ji Hao could easily finish them with one sword attack. Nevertheless, they were fed with the sacred blood of Saint Pan Yu, and had sunken into a mad state. The powers they accumulated in the past countless years and their great life-force, which was supposed to allow them to have an endless lifespan, would erupt within two hours. By now, the effect delivered by every single strike from them was over a thousand times greater than the normal state!

These Chaos monsters were like a natural sun, naturally and ceaselessly giving out the light and heat for billions of years, or even longer. During the long lifespan of this sun, the emission rate of its light and heat would always be stable. Once an external force stimulated the sun, forcing out all of its power within two hours, the energy released within every second would definitely be millions of times greater than normal, powerful enough to destroy a world.

The four Chaos monsters were in such a state at the moment. They roared crazily as they pounced on Ji Hao, as if he were their greatest enemy. The four spheres hovered around them, bumping against the Pan Gu bell from time to time.

Ji Hao felt nothing more than strong forces coming at him from

all directions. He couldn't even see the moves of the four Chaos monsters clearly, as hundreds of millions of attacks from them would land on his body within every second. Many times, the claws and teeth of the four Chaos monsters broke the Chaos power streams released from the Pan Gu bell and directly clanged against the bell itself, starting resonant bell rings and dazzling sparkles.

Ji Hao was in a relatively weak state. He was full of physical strength and internal energy, but his embryo of Dao was extremely weak at the moment, such that he could not control his power and body well. He curled up his body and stayed under the protection of the Pan Gu bell while being sent flying all over the sky along with shrill noises, like a ball which was being played with by naughty boys.

The four spheres struck down over and over again. Every strike from the four spheres started a giant cloud of black fire against the Pan Gu bell. The black fire was greatly powerful. It was not only scorching hot, but also had an evil, corrosive power. The Pan Gu bell might be the only treasure in Pan Gu world which was so powerful, with an unimaginable defensive power, and was able to stay perfectly undamaged under the strikes from the four spheres while managing to protect Ji Hao.

The Pan Gu sword buzzed rumblingly inside Ji Hao's body, as it couldn't wait to dart out, slaughter the four Chaos monsters, and drink their blood.

However, Ji Hao dared not to let out the sword. His spirit power was weak at the moment, such that its coverage was no more than a million miles wide, while the four Chaos monsters moved swiftly. The four Chaos monsters could flash a hundred-million miles away within a blink of an eye, then fly back as fast as they could and hit against the Pan Gu bell.

Ji Hao wasn't sure that he could kill the four Chaos monsters if he let out the sword now. He was also afraid that letting out the sword would provide Priest Mu and Priest Hua with a chance for

them to directly take it away.

With a series of muffled bangs, the Pan Gu bell vibrated intensely while the bodies of the four Chaos monsters burned into four giant fire spheres. Their original lion-shape was gone, and they were about to meet the most dazzling, final moment of their lives. Within this moment, all their strength, all their souls, their life-force, and their old glories, would explode.

The four giant fire spheres suddenly exploded along with the four supreme treasures. Raging black flames wrapped up the Pan Gu bell layer by layer, while countless horrifyingly fierce airstreams struck on it one after another.

Because of the vibration, Ji Hao felt dizzy. He spun in the Chaos power streams released from the Pan Gu bell uncontrollably.

Strong pressures landed on his body, layer by layer. Fortunately, he now had a stunning physical strength, which protected him from suffering actual injuries from the pressure. Nothing worse than spider-web-like shallow wounds happened on his body.

Without shedding a drop of blood, Ji Hao gritted his teeth and endured the dizziness. His spirit blood surged inside his body, healing the shallow wounds. The wounds didn't concern Ji Hao at all. Instead, he placed his whole attention to Priest Hua, Priest Mu, and the two in golden cloaks.

The black fire finally faded. The Pan Gu bell had already expanded to about three-hundred-meters-tall, firmly shielding Ji Hao. The bell was dark and lusterless, but it was now shining with a mysterious faint light. The dim light emitted from the bell seemed to even illuminate the world.

Priest Hua and Priest Mu immediately widened their eyes, staring at the Pan Gu bell in shock.

This feeling — the sky was illuminated by extremely thin and faint beams of light; every beam of light seemed to connect a

natural law, in a perfect harmony with the core of the great Dao of Pan Heng world, allowing the operation of the great Dao of Pan Heng world to be under the Pan Gu bell's full control.

Stabilized and controlled by the Pan Gu bell, the space surrounding Ji Hao turned incomparably sturdy, for which reason, the self-destruction of the four Chaos monsters didn't cause any destructive damage to Pan Heng world, just slightly rippling the space.

This magical effect had gone far beyond Priest Mu and Priest Hua' highest expectation for the Pan Gu bell.

"It's a...Supreme treasure of great Dao! It can control the great Dao of a world!"

Priest Hua and Priest Mu were nearly driven crazy. In the past few years, they witnessed Ji Hao's growth. Under their watch, Ji Hao attained a powerful bell from an unknown source, and with this indestructive bell, he rampantly made their disciples suffer.

They thought that the bell was nothing more than a supreme treasure with a stunning defensive power. A supreme treasure for defense wasn't tempting enough for them to turn against Yu Yu openly. Therefore, even though Priest Mu and Priest Hua wanted the Pan Gu bell very much, because of Yu Yu, they didn't truly do anything for it.

But today, the self-destruction of the four Chaos monsters forced the Pan Gu bell to show its real face!

The dim light emitted from the bell actually managed to stabilize the great Dao of Pan Heng world. At this time, if Ji Hao were powerful enough to control the bell, he would be able to control everything in Pan Heng world!

Priest Mu and Priest Hua trembled slightly. The Pan Gu bell was from Pan Gu world, but it automatically stabilized the great Dao of Pan Heng world...This meant that the bell was the supreme

treasure of the great Dao of Pan Gu world!

"Saint Pan Gu's spine...Sky Pillar, Buzhou Mountain... He took it!" Suddenly, Priest Hua and Priest Mu figured out the past, present, and future of Pan Gu bell.

Flashing across the air, Priest Hua and Priest Mu darted towards Ji Hao simultaneously.

"Ji Hao, leave the bell, and we will spare your life today!"

Chapter 1585: Seal the World

Ji Hao looked at Priest Mu in shock and confusion, watching the bitterness on his face turn into a strong intent of killing. After a long, long while, Ji Hao shook his head quickly and responded, "This is beneath you, old priest!"

Priest Mu stared at Ji Hao in surprise. Did he mishear Ji Hao? Ji Hao didn't even say the word 'elder'. Instead, Ji Hao called him 'old priest', didn't he?"

"Ji Hao, kid! Today..." The fire of anger rose straight from his head, even agitating his soul. Looking at Ji Hao's blind smiling face, Priest Mu suddenly had an impulsion to break something.

This kind of impulsion never occurred in Priest Mu's long span of life. He cultivated himself severely with the great Dao of quietus, for which reason, his heart was like a lifeless tree, an ancient well, that nothing in the universe can easily trigger a mood swing of his. But today, seeing the Pan Gu bell and hearing Ji Hao call him 'old priest', the peaceful lake in his heart was stirred intensely. At the moment, he wanted to do something very much. For example, he wanted to thrust his linden thunder bombs into Ji Hao's mouth, then blow his head into pieces, along with Ji Hao's embryo of Dao.

"Indeed, this is beneath you, old priest!" Ji Hao said to Priest Mu seriously, "You're like a bandit the moment you saw me. Forcing me to hand out my supreme treasure for defense, isn't this beneath you?"

Priest Mu and Priest Hua remained silent, while Shadow Crown and Evil Crown chased up and stood behind them, looking at Ji Hao from head to toe. Seeing the Pan Gu bell, an obvious greediness emerged from their eyes, but they immediately concealed it with extra cautiousness. Instantly, their eyes were clear again

"You should say that this supreme treasure can affect the lives of

all living beings, and I, Ji Hao, am not good enough for it. But, you are following the great Dao of nature, thinking about all living creatures in the universe. Therefore, this supreme treasure should in under your control, so that the world can be in peace, people can live a happy life, and enjoy the happiness forever and ever."

Ji Hao looked at Priest Mu and Priest Hua evilly, then sneered and continued, "But you didn't bother to mention these high-sounding excuses before you directly attempted to rob me. Two old priests, this is truly beneath you!"

Priest Mu remained silent as he carefully observed the Pan Gu bell. Hiding in this hand, the colorful branch glowed with a dazzling light. Priest Mu's expression changed countless times within a moment. His eyes shone with the seven-colored dim light, as wisps of colorful mist rose from those eyes, forming a splendid colorful cloud floating above his head.

"Ji Hao, our little friend, as you said, this bell is very important, that only virtuous and capable people who possess great natural fortune can control it. This bell can affect the lives of all living beings. But you, as a child, can't allow it to work in the way it was supposed to. So please, give this bell to me. Let me control is, so that the universe can be in peace, and all living creatures can be safe."

With a warm smile, Priest Hua made a speech in a gentle tone, exactly the same as what Ji Hao said earlier. He even deeply bowed to Ji Hao, without straightening his waist back up.

His voice was strange, sounding to be coming from far away, with an indescribable power which would force one to pay all attention to his speech, while his voice became an immeasurable black hole. Once one focused on it, his or her entire soul might be drawn into it momentarily, and would suffer forever and ever.

Ji Hao smiled and remained silent.

Was it Priest Hua who made the speech? Or Great Freedom? Who

knew? Seeing the suddenly emerged silhouettes of countless worlds and living creatures, Ji Hao even suspected that Priest Hua let himself be possessed by the devil willingly, and he had already merged into one with Great Freedom.

Priest Mu did not say a word either. He had only been carefully observing the Pan Gu bell.

The expressions of Shadow Crown and Evil Crown changed immediately. As a tremor went through their bodies, their eyes were unfocused simultaneously, and their strong gazes were weakened largely. They carefully listened to what Priest Hua said, but as a result, they were nearly drawn into the black hole by Priest Hua, and completely lost themselves.

Fortunately, a muffled yet sonorous roar echoed across their minds, forcibly dispelling the mysterious power contained in Priest Hua's voice, making them quiver and wake them up.

With a lingering fear, they drew back for a long distance, then stared at Priest Hua in shock. They were two of the twelve 'Crowns' from Pan Yu world, who were the possessors of the highest power in the world and controlled the operation of the entire world. Nevertheless, despite their powerfulness, they failed to even take a word from Priest Hua...

As they thought, they weren't qualified to be enemies with Priest Hua and Priest Mu. Only the terrifying being behind them had the power to rival 'holy-level' beings like Priest Hua and Priest Mu.

'Blood Crown, how stupid you were. You foolishly came here even before you figured out who were your enemies!' With gloomy faces, the two 'Crowns' laughed in their heads over Blood Crown's misfortune.

Priest Hua now realized that his speech had failed to affect Ji Hao. The completely unconcealed greediness erupted from his eyes as he stared straight at the Pan Gu bell, looking at it from up to down.

Priest Hua's expression was weird. As he remained silent, Priest Mu slowly raised the colorful branch and released a dazzling colorful light, which then compressed into an immeasurably long, tens of thousands of miles wide streak of light and pierced through the space, like an enormous colorful needle penetrating the whole Pan Heng world.

The great Dao of the Pan Heng world was shaken. With his incomparable, immeasurable power, Priest Mu forcibly changed the great Dao of Pan Heng world with his great Dao of quietus.

The core of the great Dao of Pan Heng world had already been occupied by Ji Hao, and the creator of this world was killed by Ji Hao. Pan Heng world was at its weakest, most confused moment right now. Facing Priest Mu's strong spirit power, the independent spirit of this world was like a fragile, thin piece of paper, which was penetrated and crushed so easily.

Slowly, a colorful light emerged from the entire sky of Pan Heng world. This world began turning into a colorful world from a green world. However, a coldness could be sensed from this colorfulness. This was a feature of Priest Mu's great Dao of quietus, a feature of a world, which was being put into a state of quietus.

Watching Priest Mu making a move, Ji Hao sighed slightly.

If Priest Mu controlled the great Dao of Pan Heng world, he would be able to control the entire Pan Heng world and turn it into a giant cage to trap Ji Hao.

Ji Hao's embryo of Dao hadn't regained its power. Therefore, it was extremely difficult for him to escape, not even with the golden bridge. He couldn't even trigger his power right now.

At this moment, Ji Hao sighed and sat down with his legs crossed, then communicated with the Pan Gu bell with all his heart and spirit. The dim light emitted from the bell grew brighter and brighter. Beams of light illuminated the space while Ji Hao murmured in a muffled voice, "Seal the world, the unity of a world

and a man!"

The Pan Gu bell buzzed thunderously, and the entire Pan Heng world quaked.

Chapter 1586: The great Dao of Quietus

The base of the Pan Gu bell was Buzhou Mountain, which was transformed from Saint Pan Gu's spine. It was the core of Pan Gu world, which maintained a balance of the world and stabilized the great Dao of nature.

The sun and the stars hung above Buzhou Mountain, and earth meridians were buried underneath it. All Pan Gu world creatures lived around it, and all natural laws were centered on it. Every intelligent living being had left its smell on Buzhou Mountain, like flying birds left their reflections on the water surface and walking birds left lines of footprints on a snowfield; every natural law had marked Buzhou Mountain.

Nourished by the world for countless years, even the finest grain of dust from Buzhou Mountain had a strong sense of the great Dao of Pan Gu world.

The Pan Gu bell inherited everything that Buzhou Mountain possessed, including all the natural laws and great Dao of the world. Through the Pan Gu bell, one could reach the great Dao of Pan Gu world from any angle.

Beams of dim light emitting from the bell locked on all natural laws of Pan Heng world. Pan Heng world was thousands of times weaker than Pan Gu world, and its great Dao of green wasn't largely different from the great Dao of Pan Gu world. Except for a few slight differences, ninety-nine percent of the great Dao of green in Pan Heng world was exactly the same as that in Pan Gu world.

The dim light spun slowly as the great Dao of Pan Heng world was locked by the Pan Gu bell. Every part of the great Dao was like a precision gear, perfectly set up with each other. At the moment, all natural laws stopped operating, remaining still like the frozen movement of a watch.

The natural laws stopped operating, the world was sealed, and the time and space were frozen; everything paused.

Along with the Pan Gu bell's deep buzz, the Pan Heng world stopped moving. All living beings paused in where they were. In the brain of every living creature, the fire of soul had frozen like an iceberg, without being able to generate a thought anymore. The time stopped, the space froze, all stars ceased orbiting; the wind was not blowing, the water was not flowing, the raindrops floated in the air, motionless...

Shadow Crown and Evil Crown were both stunned. They were disabled from moving as well, like tiny bugs in a piece of amber. Their eyes sparkled brightly, but the thoughts in their heads were like the bubbles slowly rising from the bottom of the river, shaking and floating without cracking.

Their minds were sealed. Shadow Crown and Evil Crown lost all their spirit powers. They tried their best, struggled as hard as they could, but failed to move even a finger. Their faces twisted. Instinctively, they showed the despair and fear on their faces.

At their current level, being sealed by an enemy for such a long span of time was enough for both their bodies and souls to die a hundred million times!

Priest Hua's eyes shone with that dim seven-colored light. His hands trembled slightly while his face twitched from time to time. Priest Hua wanted to forcibly break the horrifying magic seal cast on the entire Pan Heng world by the Pan Gu bell, to free himself and then help Priest Mu to defeat Ji Hao.

However, Great Freedom wasn't thinking the same thing. Great Freedom was glad to watch Priest Mu and Ji Hao put up a desperate fight against each other. No matter who won or lost, as long as they fought and harmed each other, and once Priest Mu was weakened...there would be an opportunity for Great Freedom.

The seven-colored dim light flickered in his eyes for long, but

Priest Hua didn't make a move. With a faint and proud smile, he sat in midair with his legs crossed, and the silhouettes of countless mountains, rivers, and living beings crossing his eyes.

Priest Hua's face had been changing slightly. It was like layers of mask emerging from under his face, splitting up one after another, constantly changing his appearance. From the top of his head, a bright stream of light rose into the sky. His golden 'spirit warriors' showed up one after another, wearing all kinds of gemstones and standing on the golden light. As same as Priest Hua, their faces had all been changing constantly.

In the ever-changing great Dao of evolvement, Priest Hua stepped into an indescribable state at the moment.

Not only was his great Dao changing, his 'heart of Dao' had also been varying at every moment, sacred as Buddha, dirty as devils, kind as an old man from next door, or ferocious as a monster from hell...

"I have attained...my great Dao!" Priest Hua smiled. Above his head, thousands of spirit warriors shouted out rumblingly in cheers.

Priest Mu was also affected by the Pan Gu bell, which sealed the world. His body was frozen, disabling him from moving, while his soul was inactivated, unable to generate a thought. With difficulties, he turned around and glanced at Priest Hua, showing a faint smile on his bitter face. But soon, the smile turned into worry, and an even more obvious bitterness.

"Attain the great Dao with a devil?" Sitting under the Pan Gu bell, Ji Hao looked at Priest Hua's changing face and smiled, "Can I call it the great Dao of devil?"

"What do you know about my brother's great Dao? Even though my brother attained his great Dao through a devil, his Dao is still a decent supreme Dao!" Priest Mu's eyes shone with a colorless but especially clear fire, while his body glowed with a dim light. Beams

of dim light merged into the colorful branch in his hand, and the colorful rolling clouds in the heaven slowly turned colorless.

With a dry voice, he talked word by word. In the meantime, his great Dao of quietus had started crazily invading Pan Heng world.

Sealed by the Pan Gu bell, Pan Heng world was as sturdy as an iceberg by now. However, when Priest Mu's great Dao of quietus began invading the great Dao of nature of this world, this world instantly changed its color.

Gray and empty, the colorlessness was like a drop of ink falling into clear water, spreading immediately.

The colors of Pan Heng world changed in a strange way. The colors of all plants, animals, mountains, rivers, lakes, sands, and earth began fading, as if a giant hand had been taking away the colors and life-force of everything in this world.

"No!" Shadow Crown and Evil Crown burst into a scream in fright. They were also affected by the great Dao of quietus. Countless spell symbols emerged from their skins while their skins withered, turning more and more fragile. Their internal organs had constantly been weakening, and even the fires of their souls were shaking and dimming down.

Affected by Priest Mu's great Dao of quietus, the entire Pan Heng world began falling apart. The whole world was collapsing and dying.

Ji Hao raised his head and coldly looked at Priest Mu.

Afterward, he sensed the great Dao of quietus through the Pan Gu bell. The faint sense of quietus rose from his heart, making him cold and powerless. Uncontrollably, he wanted to give up every hope he had.

Through the bell, Ji Hao suddenly saw the whole image of Priest Mu's great Dao of quietus.

Chapter 1587: Your Dao is My Dao

The system of the great Dao of any world was like a rapidly flowing river, and every independent part of the great Dao was like the water in the river, ceaselessly flowing from the beginning to the end.

The light emitted from the Pan Gu bell was like an adventitious stream of water, quietly invading the river of the great Dao of Pan Heng world. Every beam of light from the bell represented one part of the great Dao that merged with the water in the river of Pan Heng world.

Priest Mu was doing the same. His great Dao of quietus emitted a dim yet clear light, quietly coiling around the great Dao of Pan Heng world like soft but strong water streams.

The Pan Gu bell and Priest Mu connected tightly with each other through Pan Heng world. The magically tremendous power of the bell, which allowed it to suppress the entire world, surged to Priest Mu, just like Priest Mu's power of quietus flew towards the bell. Therefore, through the bell, Ji Hao saw a whole image of the great Dao of quietus.

Ji Hao felt that his embryo of Dao gradually fell into silence, without generating any new soul power. Next, his internal organs cooled down. The vitality of his internal organs had been fading, while his blood flow slowed down bit by bit. The activity of this blood decreased quickly as well.

Afterward, his marrow froze, bone joints turned stiff, and muscles and skin were numbed. He couldn't feel anything anymore.

At last, his thoughts withered. Lazily, Ji Hao actually wanted to sit down and let himself die right on the spot, without fighting for anything or anyone, nor making any effort.

Slowly, Ji Hao sensed that he was like a piece of burning coal, while the colorless coldness from the surrounding environment slowly wrapped him up, bit by bit dimming his fire of life, pushing him to the edge of destruction step by step.

Priest Mu's great Dao of quietus was terrifying. Affected merely by the power of quietus that came through the Pan Gu bell, Ji Hao fell into an indescribably critical situation. Instinctively, he restrained his spirit power, with the nine dazzling golden suns giving out an immeasurable heat which shielded Ji Hao's spirit and soul, protecting him from being destroyed by the great Dao of quietus.

Suddenly, Yu Yu's study of magic formation transformed into countless golden-purple scrolls and emerged from Ji Hao's embryo of Dao. The blueprints of countless pre-world and after-world formations emerged on these scrolls, while an indescribable magical sense of great Dao began flowing inside Ji Hao's body.

The nine golden suns instantly started orbiting according to the blueprints on the scrolls. Starting from one, splitting into two, stabilizing in three...

'One leads to nine, nine leads to millions, countless, endless, ever-changing...'

Golden light spheres rotated in the air while Ji Hao's embryo of Dao floated among complicated formations which were composed of billions of golden light beams. His spirit power was all gathered in the embryo of Dao, that no matter how strongly the great Dao of quietus attacked, It could not break the powerful, magical formations.

Protected by Yu Yu's art of formation, Ji Hao's frozen mind was brought back to life. As his thoughts erupted from his mind, Ji Hao regained a part of his thinking capacity.

With a mysterious smile, Ji Hao saw the most precious treasure in the universe through the Pan Gu bell, that no one but he could

see. He was like a naughty child who peeked into the window of the most beautiful widow in the village with surprise.

Priest Mu had been pursuing the great Dao of quietus with no spare efforts, ever since Saint Pan Gu created Pan Gu world. At this moment, the great Dao of quietus exposed itself before Ji Hao's eyes like a beautiful body.

The strong sense of great Dao spread in front of Ji Hao like a scroll of painting.

On a boundless grassland, the grasses were as beautiful as the best jade, filled with an inexhaustible life-force.

On the grassland, two linden trees faced each other. One of them was thriving, with the essence of its life-force gathered in every leaf. Every leaf had clear veins, and every vein delivered a mysterious sense of great Dao, which could not be described by words.

The other linden tree had withered. Its tree trunks and main branches barely maintained its shape as a tree. Unlike the thriving one, this tree was rapidly withering and collapsing.

The faster this tree fell apart, the more thriving the other tree got, and the stronger life-force the other tree had.

Pop!

Ji Hao couldn't tell for sure about how long he had watched these two trees for, but suddenly, the withered tree disintegrated, turning into ashes. As its ashes rose to the sky, all the grasses on the grassland withered quietly, becoming ashes as well.

A clear voice could be heard from the thriving linden tree, which quaked the world like thunders. A strong sense of Dao was released from the tree, forming dense streams of green mist, rolling to where the withered tree stood.

On the standing point of the withered tree, from a small pile of ash, a thumb-sized, lusterless, wrinkled, and dry linden seed

slowly flew into the sky, weakly hovering in the air.

The tiny linden seed was covered in layers of marks, and every mark represented a profound natural law. Merely by looking at the tiny seed, Ji Hao felt that he was looking at a maturing great world!

With an inexhaustible life-force, the green mist rolled into this seed. Soon, the seed swelled up, became shiny, and started letting out a strong life-force from its core.

Pop! A tender sprout drilled out of the seed.

The seed with a sprout fell to the ground and sank deeply into the rich soil.

As a breeze blew across, a sandstorm was started on the grassland, which was now covered in ash. Within the ash, the grass sprouted beautifully.

The life-force of this whole world grew slightly stronger. Ji Hao saw it clearly. If one compared the whole life-force of the world before the withered tree collapsed to a trillion, as these grasses sprouted, this number had grown to one trillion and one!

Ji Hao clearly understood that Priest Mu's power had already grown slightly stronger!

What surprised him even more was that another mark appeared on the tiny seed, which meant, Priest Mu had a deeper understanding about the great Dao of nature.

As the life-force from the other tree was flowing into the seed, the linden sprout grew taller and taller. A thriving life-force suffused the entire world, making the color of this world especially vivid.

Abruptly, Ji Hao learned something — Priest Mu's great Dao of quietus was not like the great Dao of destruction, which would turn everything into nothingness. On the contrary, the truth of the great Dao of quietus was about 'rebirth', like a phoenix regaining

its life from fire. The ultimate purpose of Priest Mu's great Dao of quietus was freedom. Through endless death, he gathered the power, and with the power, he would eventually break his limitation and step into a whole new level.

"Your Dao, is mine now!" Ji Hao laughed quietly.

From now on, facing Ji Hao, Priest Hua and Priest Mu had no more secrets regarding their great Dao.

Chapter 1588: The Quietus of Gold Crow

Life and death, controlled under his will...

From life to death, Ji Hao's body turned completely lifeless, like a tree that withered millions of years ago, without any vitality.

Priest Mu immediately discovered this abnormal change of Ji Hao's body. He raised his head, looking startled with his especially bitter face. Soon, the shock turned into jealousy, then the jealousy became fury!

He was jealous of Yu Yu, because Yu Yu had such a talented disciple!

He was infuriated, because Ji Hao stole his supreme great Dao in such an unbelievable way!

Priest Mu had been pursuing the great Dao of quietus for countless years. Feeling the faint sense of Quietus from Ji Hao, Priest Mu clearly understood that Ji Hao's Dao of quietus was already considerably powerful, and his understanding about the great Dao of quietus was even deeper than the few disciples under Priest Mu's guidance. But, all of this happened within a couple of hours. Within a couple of hours when Priest Mu invaded Pan Heng world's great Dao with his Dao of quietus, Ji Hao stole his Dao!

"A supreme treasure of great Dao, indeed marvelous. My Dao hasn't broken the limit of the great Dao of Pan Gu world, but with a supreme treasure of great Dao, this kid attained my Dao!" Immediately, Priest Mu figured out the source of Ji Hao's great Dao of quietus.

"Ji Hao, I can't let you live." Priest Mu slowly raised his hand. His palm gradually turned vividly green and transparent. Soon, one could see his green finger bones through his transparent green skin and flesh.

Looking at Ji Hao, who curled himself up under the Pan Gu bell,

Priest Mu launched two gentle palm strikes in a row. Behind him, two linden trees appeared, one withering and one thriving. The thriving tree waved its branches, sending beams of green light up into the sky, stirring the space of Pan Heng world.

Shadow Crown and Evil Crown weren't far enough from Priest Mu. Eighteen beams of light scanned across their bodies in a row, making the two holy beings from Pan Yu world vomit blood. Their bones were crushed, sounding like popping corns, while they were sent flying away with blood surging out of their mouths.

Buzz!

Priest Mu's pressed his palms, which were glowing brightly with a green light, on the Chaos power streams released from the Pan Gu bell. Soon, a few wisps of Chaos power turned green, looking like green crystals, tinkling against each other. Before long, the wisps of green Chaos power freed themselves from the Pan Gu bell, swiftly raised their heads like the most dangerous poisonous snakes, and lunged towards Ji Hao.

The dim light emitted from the Pan Gu bell quaked slightly. All of a sudden, the space around Ji Hao froze like a gray crystal, with Ji Hao sealed inside. The green wisps of Chaos power pierce fiercely into the frozen space, generating an ear-piercing cracking noise, then shattered into a puff of drifting green light spots.

"It's such a smart treasure. How can a kid like you have the ability and fortune to control it?" murmured Priest Mu while slowly shaking his head. "Ji Hao, I don't care what people might say in the future. Today, I will destroy you. Both your body and soul will perish."

The withering linden tree slowly shook its branches. Priest Mu's pair of palms gradually turned gray, letting out thin streams of gray mist. Everything touched by the mist turned into ashes. Even the space of Pan Heng world around his palms squirmed intensely, slowly disappearing.

Priest Mu's gray pair of palms approached the Pan Gu bell while he fixed his eyes on Ji Hao. Abruptly, an especially thin gray mist emerged around the froze space surrounding Ji Hao. The gray mist coiled on the frozen space, quietly tearing it apart and melting it.

Priest Mu smiled proudly and said, "As the Sky Pillar, Buzhou Mountain was Saint Pan Gu's spine, the core of the great Dao of Pan Gu world. It was flawless, unbreakable. However, Ji Hao kid, you don't have the entire Buzhou Mountain, because a part of it was taken away by Priest Qingwei. This bell is incredibly powerful, but still, it has a flaw."

In Ji Hao's spiritual space, the mysterious man showed up and silently looked at Priest Mu through Ji Hao's eyes. Two beams of blue light shone from his deeply sunken eyes, illuminating the entire spiritual space like bolts of thunder.

"Little tree, you have made good progress in your cultivation. You found the flaw of Pan Gu bell, which shouldn't exist." The mysterious man said while smiling, "How can anything in the world be perfect without a flew? Even the great Dao of Pan Gu world had a missing 'one'...The Pan Gu bell can't be perfect. If it's perfect, it wouldn't be Pan Gu bell anymore. It would become some other unknown thing."

The gray mist slowly disintegrated the frozen space around Ji Hao. Priest Mu quivered slightly as he stared straight at Ji Hao with an excited grin. Extremely slowly, the gray mist approached Ji Hao.

"Ji Hao kid, die without feeling a pain!" Priest Mu laughed relaxedly.

At this moment, the bitterness on Priest Mu's face was gone without a trace, replaced by a grin from deep down his heart. He grinned in satisfaction as he raised his head and looked at the bell floating above Ji Hao's head.

A supreme treasure of great Dao, the most precious things in the

universe...

With this supreme treasure of great Dao, Priest Mu believed that when he returned to Pan Gu world, he would be able to directly challenge the powerful being who was like a giant mountain, which laid upon his heart and suffocated him, making him despair and causing him the endless bitterness.

He believed that he could rival that powerful being with the Pan Gu bell, then suppress Priest Dachi, Priest Qingwei, and Priest Yu Yu, rebuilding the great Dao of Pan Gu world and the heaven. Afterward, he would send a few puppets onto the thrones of divine emperors, then control the whole Pan Gu world.

As long as he had the Pan Gu bell under his control, there would be nothing to worry about. Therefore, Priest Mu laughed, delightfully and happily.

In Ji Hao's spiritual space, the mysterious man locked his fingers together, slowly wielded his hands, and sent the gray mist to quickly merge into Ji Hao's body.

Ji Hao fell into an indescribable state of apperception, without knowing about the things happening around him.

The mysterious man had been carefully drawing the power of quietus which was released by Priest Mu into Ji Hao's body, into the nine golden suns. Suddenly, shrill caws could be heard. In the cores of the nine suns, the feathers of the nine Gold Crows fell off simultaneously, became ashes, and drifted away.

The nine featherless Gold Crows screamed in despair and fear. Their bodies withered and rotted rapidly, while their powers changed. At last, the nine Gold Crow became nine tiny golden light spots, remaining in the nine suns.

Chapter 1589: Half A World

Through the long river of the great Dao of Pan Heng world, Priest Mu and the Pan Gu bell were connected tightly. Through the bell, Priest Mu clearly sensed the change that happened to the nine suns inside Ji Hao.

Priest Mu was enraged and anxious as he stared at Ji Hao, who had rolled himself like a fetus. Ji Hao, this bloody kid, had forcibly put the nine suns inside him into a state of quietus, with the great Dao of quietus he stole, to turn the natures of the nine suns and improve their powers.

The linden tree died, but a seed remained to absorb the immeasurable life-force, and grow into a new, stronger, and more vivacious tree. This was the core essence, the largest secret of the great Dao of quietus. No disciple under Priest Mu's guidance could understand the essence of the great Dao of quietus, which delivered an immeasurable power of creation. Nevertheless, Ji Hao had already managed to put the nine suns inside his body into the state of Quietus with the great Dao of quietus.

Ji Hao was such a talented young human being, but sadly, he was a disciple of Priest Mu's old enemy. Priest Mu was utterly enraged this time, that he even wanted to crush Ji Hao directly through the Pan Gu bell. The gray mist released from his palms grew thicker and thicker, stronger and stronger. Through the Pan Gu bell, a greater and greater power of quietus was sent to Ji Hao, seeming to condense into a giant shell and wrap Ji Hao entirely up.

Ji Hao didn't know about the change of Priest Mu's thoughts. He quietly sensed his highly compressed spirit power and soul power, and the strange feeling given by his embryo of Dao, which had almost shrunk into a tiny, dim spot of light. He quietly observed the nine suns, which had been going through a thorough change. If he knew what Priest Mu was thinking at the moment, he would tell him that it wasn't him who put the nine suns into the state of

quietus!

Ji Hao was indeed talented, but wasn't so talented. Just now, he attained Priest Mu's great Dao of quietus by simply glancing at him, after which, he was able to cultivate himself directly by using this supreme great Dao.

The nine suns had been shrinking rapidly. With a shrill series of caw, the Dao with a complicated nature fell off from the nine suns like withered leaves, leaving the purest, original cores.

When the nine suns shrank to an extreme degree, the Pan Gu bell buzzed thunderously. Golden streaks flickered quickly on the bell. The Pan Gu sun had moved across Buzhou Mountain over and over again, carving its Dao on the mountain layer upon layer, which had now become the golden streaks on the Pan Gu bell. These golden streaks were the marks of the great Dao of Pan Gu sun.

Any cultivator with the luck to see and understand these golden marks of Dao at this very moment would have an insight into all the secrets of the great Dao of Pan Gu sun. If this cultivator could defeat Ji Hao and replace him, he or she would naturally become the new 'owner of the sun'.

With a sizzling noise, the dim golden light spots left from the nine Gold Crows swelled like balloons, becoming dazzling beams of golden light that swiftly hovered around the nine suns, 'carving' the marks of great Dao of Pan Gu sun on the nine suns at an incredible rate.

Extremely pure golden light erupted from the nine dim suns. All impurities of Dao that belonged to the nine shrinking suns had been dispelled at the moment, while the nine eye-piercing golden light beams were swiftly carving the marks of the supreme Dao of Pan Gu sun on them.

The Pan Jia sun and the eight Pan Heng sun had all thoroughly reformed themselves, gaining new lives. Without all the old impure powers, these nine suns had now been turning into the

purest 'Pan Gu suns'.

A strong, melted-gold-like light burst from the nine suns, which now slowly grew stronger and stronger. Instead of Pan Jia sun and the eight Pan Heng, nine pure suns appeared inside Ji Hao's body, weaker than the Pan Gu sun, but having the purest sun power.

The nine reborn Gold Crows stood in the cores of the nine suns, cawing shrilly with a thriving life-force.

Purely positive, scorching hot, with an endless power of life which nourished all living beings in the universe, the light of sun filled up Ji Hao's entire body and started a violent clash against the lifeless power of quietus inside him.

The nine suns illuminated the inner void, composing of the most original pure sun great formation that stabilized the inner void. Inside Ji Hao's body, the gray mist buzzed deeply, being neutralized by the golden light layer by layer, bit by bit.

When the golden light reached to every corner of Ji Hao's body, he suddenly woke up.

An incredibly strong life-force erupted from the core of his embryo of Dao, like a seed which was planted in the rich soil, nourished by the sun and the rain, and grew invigoratingly, unstoppably breaking all the limitations and venting its life-force wildly, letting the universe hear its voice.

It was weak, but could not be stopped.

Ji Hao's embryo of Dao released a strong spirit power. He sensed his healthy body, the abundant sun power inside him, and the great power from his embryo of Dao, also sensing the powerful Dao through the Pan Gu bell.

An indescribably mysterious sense of Dao was channeled by the Pan Gu bell, adding layers of marks of Dao on Ji Hao's embryo of Dao. The power of Dao that Ji Hao had never touched before now merged into his embryo of Dao, leaving the 'seeds' of great Dao

inside his embryo of Dao.

"I get it!" Ji Hao said aloud instinctively. His weak embryo of Dao had gone through the death and rebirth, now restoring its power and making a major progress, becoming even stronger.

Torrents of soul power and spirit power surged out of his embryo of Dao. Ji Hao slowly stretched his body. By now, he could perfectly control his body, his power, and the powers of the nine suns. In addition, he clearly felt that his soul and body could now withstand an even greater power.

The Pan Gu bell was already connected with the entire Pan Heng world. Therefore, through the bell, Ji Hao sensed the operation of Pan Heng world. He smilingly reached out his hand and let the nine suns inside him release their terrifying power. All of a sudden, his arms turned golden, bursting with a raging fire and a destructive heat. Spreading his burning arms, Ji Hao generated a thunderous 'cracking' noise and tore Pan Heng world into two.

Everything in this world, except for the living beings, was torn apart.

The stars, the continent, the mountains, rivers, valleys...even the finest grain of sand in this world was torn into two.

"Merge!" Ji Hao locked his fingers together in a complicated but beautiful way. Following his movement, half a Pan Heng world flickered dimly, merging into his body in a moment.

Chapter 1590: Kill the Enemies and Return

The nine suns shone high up in the air, and a continent laid quietly below the suns. Between the suns and the continent, stars were orbiting in the vast void, glowing faintly. They were not bright enough to dim the suns, but gave the world inside Ji Hao's body a mysterious beauty.

In the middle of this inner world of Ji Hao, the nine suns composed the pure sun great formation, while the stars orbited in the same way as the natural stars in Pan Gu world since the beginning of the world, composing an immature yet magnificent great formation of natural stars.

The origin of Pan Heng world wasn't strong enough. Therefore, the natural stars in Pan Heng world were less than half of the natural stars in Pan Gu world.But, as the stars orbited in the great formation of natural stars, pure and strong starlight poured down from the sky onto the continent like waterfalls, nourishing the earth.

Except for the lack of living beings, this inner void of Ji Hao now already looked like an independent small world. The Pan Gu bell buzzed gently, louder than Priest Mu's raging roars.

Hearing the buzz of the bell, Ji Hao suddenly understood the true purpose of the Pan Gu world...no, it was the true purpose of Saint Pan Gu, who created the supreme Dao of Pan Gu world — Creating a vast void with one's own body, containing the pan Gu world inside the strong body, and using the Pan Gu body as a strong flying ship, freely traveling in the Chaos.

"The cultivation system of Senior Magi...the Dao of Supreme Magi who draw natural stars into their bodies...even the Dao of Priest Mu and Priest Hua, who created independent quite worlds... are no more than hazy shadows of the supreme Dao of Saint Pan Gu, generated from parts of great Dao of Saint Pan Gu."

The bell rang while Ji Hao's embryo of Dao glowed with a mysterious dim light. His mind was clear as water. Within a moment, he figured out many questions which used to puzzle him.

He, Ji Hao, had been walking on the most correct path which led to the great Dao of Pan Gu, the truest, purest, most original, most powerful, and most incredible Dao of Pan Gu. At the moment, the half of Pan Heng world which was torn and forcibly drawn into his body, had become the foundation of Ji Hao's great Dao of Pan Gu.

Yes, in this very moment, Ji Hao formally started the cultivation of the great Dao of Pan Gu, laying a foundation of his own great Dao. As for the others, including Priest Yu Yu, Priest Qingwei, even Priest Dachi, they might have unbelievable achievements in their cultivation of Dao already, but still, they hadn't reached the true great Dao of Pan Gu.

A seven-colored light poured down and landed on the Pan Gu bell in a formidable way like a great river. Priest Mu was blushing as he roared in rage, crazily wielding the colorful branch while marching to Ji Hao. The Pan Gu bell swayed intensely. Under Priest Mu's full strike, even the Pan Gu bell seemed to fail.

Ji Hao opened his eyes and glanced at the bell.

It wasn't because the Pan Gu bell wasn't strong enough, but because Ji Hao was too weak in comparison to Priest Mu. The colorful branch in Priest Mu's hand was also a supreme great Dao, and greatly powerful. Based on equally powerful treasures, the power difference between the treasure holders could largely affect the result of a battle. Apparently, Priest Mu was in a great advantage.

Priest Mu controlled the colorful branch with all his powers, while the Pan Gu bell defended Ji Hao on its own with difficulty. The bell seemed about to fail at any moment. Ji Hao took a deep breath. Under his will, in the half Pan Heng world inside his body, the continent, the stars, and the nine suns glowed simultaneously.

Ji Hao felt that his body was filled up — He felt like a man who could eat three bowls of rice for a meal, but had just forced whole three potfuls of rice into his stomach, totally stuffed.

The Pan Gu bell ran an accurate calculation. Half a Pan Heng world met the limitation of Ji Hao's current body condition, such that with one more grain of dust, Ji Hao's body would break; half a Pan Heng world was so appropriate, so fit.

"Priest Mu!" Looking at Priest Mu who acted so aggressively, Ji Hao smiled and asked, "Are you crazy?"

While teasing Priest Mu, Ji Hao had been sending his power into the Pan Gu bell and quickly adapting to the power inside his body.

Priest Mu gritted his teeth without saying a word. Was he crazy? Ji Hao had just taken half a Pan Heng world!

Priest Mu had already been seeing Pan Heng world as his own property, but Ji Hao took a half of It!

If Ji Hao took a half of the world with his own power, Priest Mu could take this fact in a better way. But, he didn't. Ji Hao forcibly sealed the half Pan Heng world inside his body purely by depending on the power of the Pan Gu bell. He locked up the great Dao of this world with the bell, then forcibly occupied a half of this world, which already belonged to Priest Mu.

A Pan Gu bell, half Pan Heng world, and Priest Mu's results of great Dao of quietus which he had spent countless years of severe cultivation on...All of these were serious enough for Priest Mu to put up a desperate fight against Ji Hao without a pain spared, even by risking his own life!

The colorful light poured down on Ji Hao overwhelmingly like a hurricane, a tsunami. The Pan Gu bell shone in the light while Priest Mu cast a spell and generated a series of linden thunderbolts, floating in the light. Once the Pan Gu bell was forced to move slightly, all linden thunder bombs would immediately swish to Ji

Hao and go off, tearing him into a billion bits, crushing his bones and souls.

Glancing at Priest Mu who seemed to have lost his mind, Ji Hao gave a resonant shout, then let out the golden bridge from between his eyebrows. A clear light flashed across the air while Ji Hao disappeared with the Pan Gu bell. In the following moment, he showed up beside Shadow Crown and Evil Crown, who were sent flying away by Priest Mu, and had still ben vomiting blood.

Laughing out loud, Ji Hao didn't pull out his sword, but gave Shadow Crown a palm attack.

Buzz!

Witnessing Ji Hao's palm strike, even Priest Mu and Priest Hua had their expressions changed.

Ji Hao's palm suddenly grew tens of thousands of miles wide, turned colorless and translucent, with countless splendidly shining stars orbiting in it. Inside his tremendous palm, a continent had been spun swiftly, while a sun shone dazzlingly in the top of every finger, with four suns flaring in the middle of his palm.

As Ji Hao pressed his palm down, Shadow Crown felt that a world fell from the sky.

Priest Mu was suddenly lost in his memories. Long, long ago, back in his 'childhood', he had witnessed a similar palm strike. The powerful being who created Pan Gu world also pressed his palm down like this when facing millions and millions of ferocious Chaos monsters.

With a palm strike, he crushed countless Chaos monsters with the power of a world, with the suns, the moons, and the stars. Not even the souls of those Chaos monsters managed to survive.

Along with a shrill howl, Shadow Crown was crushed by Ji Hao's palm like those Chaos monsters who died under Saint Pan Gu's palm back then. Ji Hao now shared the same origin with Saint Pan

Gu. His palm strike was millions of times weaker than the one made by Saint Pan Gu, but it did crush Shadow Crown.

The golden bridge flashed again. Laughing wildly, Ji Hao disappeared without a trace after killing Shadow Crown.

Chapter 1591: Hunt in the Chaos

The Chaos was like a gruel, with terrifying Chaos tide waves expanding for millions of miles, flowing rapidly like great rivers while violently bumping into and devouring each other, starting raging fires and destructive thunderbolts. Within Ji Hao's line of sight, nothing existed except cloudy fire and light or dazzling thunderbolts. From time to time, giant Chaos whirlpools and black holes emerged at random locations.

In the boundless, dangerous Chaos, unimaginably giant, weird-looking creatures could be seen occasionally. Long arms, feet, and tentacles madly swung in the Chaos, stirring up and quaking the chaos.

A clear beam of light nimbly flashed across the Chaos like a slim boat. Within a second, the light beam covered tens of thousands of miles.

The golden bridge stabilized the Chaos and calmed the agitated natural powers down, creating a broad way in the Chaos. Driving the golden bridge, Ji Hao headed to Pan Gu world at his highest speed.

Compared to before, Ji Hao's physical strength had improved by more than a thousand times. He had swallowed a half of Pan Heng world and eight Pan Heng suns, for which reason, he was much more powerful now.

Relying on his great power, he moved much faster than before. He looked even like a shadow of time in the Chaos. Before those Chaos monsters saw him clearly, the clear light brushed across them and flashed away, leaving an awfully tempting aroma of blood and flesh.

"Err..."

Sensing the aroma sweeping across its lips, a Chaos monster

which looked like a giant ball with hundreds of thousands of dark tentacles, crazily wielded its tentacles and went hysterical. It rolled up tens of giant Chaos tide waves as it fiercely struck the surrounding space.

A coldness could be sensed, as an enormous, bronze-colored, indescribably mottled golden city eased the agitated natural powers and crushed thousands of Chaos tide waves while flying over, causing a deafening, rumbling noise. The city seemed to be millions of years old.

This poor ball-like Chaos monster was right in the city's way. As the tremendous city roared across and slightly touched the monster, the latter was blown up like an egg ran over by a mountain. Its body was crushed, then turned into a strand of smoke by the power of destruction on the city wall.

Priest Hua and Priest Mu stood on top of the tallest tower in the city, they held their hands behind their bodies while gazing at Ji Hao, who had been escaping at lightning speed.

They lowered their heads down and glanced at the old city under their feet from time to time in shock. This giant city was forged from pure metal, but flying in the Chaos, it wasn't slower than Ji Hao with the golden bridge at all.

One could easily imagine how powerful this city was!

With their powerful eyes, Priest Hua and Priest Mu had clearly seen the energy core of the city. It was a powerful great formation, composed of a set of pre-world supreme treasure, which contained three-hundred and sixty pieces. The three-hundred and sixty pieces of treasure had been absorbing the complicated Chaos power at an amazing rate, turning it into a mighty energy which was much fiercer than the power of thunder. The energy flowed into the flying formation of the city and pushing the city forward.

All spell symbol systems in the formation for energy conversion and the flying formation of this giant city were completely

different from the spell symbol systems that Priest Hua and Priest Mu knew about.

If one described the spell symbols created by Priest Mu and Priest Hua with the words 'ingenious' and 'profound', the spell symbols used in this metal city were 'extremely violent and cruel'. Forcibly stabilized by the three-hundred and sixty pre-world supreme treasures, the owner of this city didn't need to worry about the burdens caused to the city by all the formations. All the city owner needed to do was driving the city as fast as possible.

Abruptly, Priest Hua began talking with a deep voice, while eyes flickered with a dim seven-colored light. "People say that the dragon-kind is the wealthiest in Pan Gu world. How rich can the dragons be in comparison with this friend of ours?"

Lowering his head, Priest Mu looked down at the enormous city, his eyes shining with a cold light. A long while later, by using a secret soul magic, he sneered to Priest Hua and responded, "This city is meant to belong to us. With this city in our peaceful world, the foundation of our sect can be sturdy forever."

A figure flashed through the air as Evil Crown showed up before Priest Mu and Priest Hua's faces.

With a lingering fear, he bowed deeply to Priest Mu and Priest Hua and said, "Elders, our supreme master is waking up from an eternal sleep. He needs time to restore his power...So, elders, please kill the kid who murdered Shadow Crown through a shameless method."

Judging by Shadow Crown's complicated facial expression, he took pleasure in Shadow Crown's misfortune. But in the meantime, he was badly frightened. Straightening his body, he continued, "Since you have agreed to ally with our supreme master, prove your sincerity with the head of that kid!"

Priest Mu frowned. Pointing at Ji Hao, who had been escaping swiftly in the Chaos, Priest Mu said, "Ji Hao kid has powerful

treasures. The golden bridge allows him to travel across the universe. With his current power and the golden bridge, we can hardly catch up with him, even if we try our best."

Evil Crown smiled and said blandly, "Of course, we will put in our efforts too."

Along with that, Evil Crown gently raised his arms. The giant metal city quaked slightly, while an especially heavy forcefield spread rapidly in all directions like a tsunami.

Suddenly, an enormous sphere-shaped empty space was created in the Chaos. Inside this space, all natural powers were suppressed, turning into a pure and peaceful energy. Ji Hao was right on the edge of this space. He paused while the golden bridge screamed, and next, he felt like being wrapped up in a tremendous, sticky power. Abruptly, he was stopped from his high-speed flying, that brought him a piercing pain and almost made him vomit blood.

On the golden bridge, countless strange spell symbols began spinning and flowing. This supreme treasure had been analyzing this mysterious forcefield as fast as it could. In the span of a breath...no, in one second, the golden bridge could reveal all secrets of this forcefield and set Ji Hao free from this weird, quiet sphere-shaped space.

However, Priest Mu and Priest Hua darted across the Chaos and marched to Ji Hao formidably, without giving Ji Hao even a second.

Priest Hua rubbed his hands and let thousands of lotuses bloom around Ji Hao. Instantly, layers of magic seal wrapped Ji Hao up. In the meanwhile, Priest Mu raised his colorful branch and poured down a torrent of colorful light. Under the violent colorful light, the Pan Gu bell buzzed as it spun above Ji Hao's head. Immediately, a tremendous power forced him backward for tens of steps.

Behind them, a dark erect eye suddenly appeared above the metal

city, coldly and emotionlessly gazing at Ji Hao.

Chapter 1592: Fought Both of Them

Ji Hao had paid all his attention to Priest Hua and Priest Mu, but ignored the giant erect eye above the metal city.

The colorful light descended. Ji Hao burst into a sonorous shout, while his long hair broke up. Following a series of popping noise that sounded like fireworks, every broken hair of his turned into a clone, tumbling in the Chaos and darting in every direction.

The Pan Gu bell had merged into Ji Hao's body, releasing streams of Chaos power as it connected with Ji Hao's body and provided him with an even stronger defensive power. Ji Hao mingled with his countless clones and rumbled in the Chaos, darting while leaving shreds of afterimages behind.

Ji Hao learned this 'rolling-escaping' skill from Yuan Li. His movements were not tasteful-looking, but were unpredictable and flexible. With every flip in the Chaos, he created tens of shreds of afterimages to efficiently confuse his enemies and draw attention. All his clones were doing the same. Looking at Ji Hao's face flashing all over the Chaos, even Priest Mu and Priest Hua felt dizzy. They weren't prepared for this, and failed to react timely.

Priest Hua had cast layers of lotus seals to seal off the space from all directions. Reasonably, Ji Hao shouldn't be able to escape from the sealed space. Nevertheless, as Ji Hao swiftly pointed out his fingers and released faint wisps of grey mist which struck on the lotuses, the beautiful lotuses withered ones other another.

At the moment, all lotus seals were broken and disordered.

Priest Mu's expression instantly turned especially bitter as he said, "Ever-changing, the results of great Dao of evolvement."

While murmuring, Priest Mu glanced at Priest Hua speechlessly. Priest Hua forcibly planted the results of the great Dao of evolvement in Ji Hao's soul after he was possessed by Great

Freedom. But, how did Ji Hao manage to see through all the secrets of the great Dao of evolvement so quickly?

Priest Hua was also shocked. He looked at the faint grey mist that drifted out of Ji Hao's fingertips and murmured, "Life and death, the results of the great Dao of quietus!"

Priest Hua couldn't help but turn around and cast a complicated glance at Priest Mu with a colorful, sparkling pair of eyes as he said, "Brother...One human being now has the supreme Dao of both of us. In mere terms of results of Dao, this kid can now be considered as the most gifted being in Pan Gu world...Sadly, he is not a disciple of ours!"

Priest Mu took a deep breath and gently flicked his fingers. A linden thunder bomb silently grew inside every shred of afterimage left by Ji Hao in the Chaos. Along with a clear cracking noise, all thunder bombs exploded, and all afterimages disappeared.

Ji Hao suffered the attack of one linden thunder bomb as well, giving a muffled snort in pain. With the help of the Pan Gu bell's great defensive power, he survived the thunder bomb while he transformed into a beam of light and flashed away at lightning speed. Within the short moment when Priest Hua and Priest Mu were distracted by his clones, the golden bridge managed to break the giant magical forcefield created by the metal city and bring Ji Hao away from the strange spherical space.

Priest Hua and Priest Mu burst into raging roars simultaneously, while the enormous erect eye above the metal city blinked briefly. The millions of miles wide, spherical space instantly began expanding. Along with an ear-piercing noise, this sphere with a strong sealing power became a long chain, connecting Ji Hao and the city.

The nature of the forcefield changed strangely. Before Ji Hao could run far away from the city, an arm-thick force reached him

and coiled on his ankles.

Ji Hao paused. Once again, he was disabled from moving.

Two silhouettes flashed across his eyes. Next, Priest Hua and Priest Mu showed up around Ji Hao, each pulling out a pre-world supreme treasure which were collected from Pan Heng world. Those were a divine creature seal and a sun and moon token, glowing beautifully. Both the two treasures were swung violently towards Ji Hao's head.

Priest Mu and Priest Hua were powerful, well-cultivated, prehistorical beings from Pan Gu world, but they shamelessly launched a joint offensive on Ji Hao with two incredibly powerful treasures. Along with a buzzing noise from Ji Hao's body, dazzling sparkles rose from his body because of the heavy strikes from Priest Hua and Priest Mu. His strong physical body quivered violently, which gave him a sharp pain from the internal organs, as if someone was stirring his insides with a dagger.

Letting out a mouthful of blood, Ji Hao glanced at Priest Mu and Priest Hua in shock.

His physical body was so strong now, such that Ji Hao could tell for sure that no living being from Pan Gu world could compete with him physically. Nevertheless, wish such a strong body and the strong defensive power of Pan Gu bell, he was now covered in wounds.

The injuries weren't serious, no more than a few thin cracks on the internal organs and a mouthful of blood squeezed out of his mouth. Within one breath, his thriving spirit blood rolled and healed the injuries completely. Ji Hao then widely opened his mouth and took a deep breath. A hundreds of meters long branch from a millions of miles long Chaos tideway surged rumblingly into Ji Hao's mouth, momentarily replenishing his consumed spirit blood.

"Human cultivation methods are indeed annoying!" Priest Hua

and Priest Mu simultaneously sensed that Ji Hao has already recovered. Complaining angrily, they combined their powers again and launched an offensive.

Priest Mu's eyes shone fiercely as he attacked again. As mentioned before, under Yu Yu's guidance, Po managed to survive a strike from Priest Mu, and if Ji Hao became the next one who was capable of this, Yu Yu would have too many geniuses among his disciples.

For channeling his anger, for weakening Yu Yu, and for all supreme treasures Ji Hao had, Priest Mu spared no efforts this time. In his hand, the divine creature seal was wrapped up by a thick layer of grey mist, as he swung the seal towards Ji Hao's head with all his power.

Ji Hao shouted out sonorously. He raised the Pan Gu bell to defend himself against Priest Mu's divine creature seal with his right hand and wielded the Pan Gu sword with his left hand, bringing up a sharp beam of sword light to protect himself from the sun and moon token of Priest Hua.

A bell ring shattered the surrounding Chaos, and tore the chain coiled on Ji Hao's body into pieces. The bell was sent flying up for tens of meters, while Priest Mu's divine creature seal screamed shrilly and fell apart against the bell.

Crack!

Making a strike directly against Priest Mu's divine creature seal with the Pan Gu bell, the skin and muscles of Ji Hao's left hand split up. Blood spurted out of his wounds, but then was drawn back into his body by an invisible force. Within one breath, the wounds were healed completely.

The Pan Gu sword tore the Chaos open and landed on the sun and moon token along with a deafening noise.

With that, the sun and moon token with an immeasurable power

was broken by the edge of the Pan Gu sword, which was sharp enough to destroy everything in the world. Ji Hao launched the combined move of the five and created an arc beam of light, which flashed to Priest Hua within a moment.

In this very moment, Priest Hua opened his mouth and let out a seven-colored lotus to defend himself against the sword edge. Ji Hao put forth his power through his wrist and cast a powerful spell, which was included in Yu Yu's art of sword, called 'shadow sword lights'. The Pan Gu bell suddenly turned into seven tangible beams of sword light, out of which three beams landed on the colorful lotus and four struck directly on Priest Hua's chest right after.

The sword light was clear as water, yet highly lethal.

The lotus was cut into two by the first three beams of sword light. Priest Hua howled in pain, while the rest four sword light beams penetrated his body.

Chapter 1593: Under the Guidance of a Famous Shifu

Outside Pan Gu world, in the boundless Chaos...

An old man who sat in the Chaos with his legs crossed, body emitting a dim light and as sturdy as a bell, abruptly opened his eyes.

With his eyes closed, the Chaos power rolled and surged around him like the roaring ocean in a hurricane; eyes opened, the Chaos around Pan Gu world was suddenly calmed down, like a giant crystal ball, clear without a ripple.

His motionless chest began moving. As he breathed deeply, the millions of miles long Chaos tide waves in the surroundings transformed into a pair of enormous dragons and flew into his nostrils. Next, he let out a long breath. The Chaos tide waves inhaled by him just now had already turned into a torrent of pure natural power, surging happily into Pan Gu world and merging with the natural powers.

Countless mountains and rivers flashed across the old man's eyes. Along with his breath, the natural screen of Pan Gu world had been fluctuating.

"Come!" said the old man abruptly, in a gentle tone.

From the Chaos power behind the old man, a boy with his hair coiled into a pair of buns flashed out. The boy carried a chime tone in his left hand, and a small golden pestle with his right hand. The boy rang the chime stone with the pestle and generated a silvery tinkle, which spread swiftly to all directions.

Priest Dachi, Priest Qingwei, and Priest Yu Yu, who guarded around Pan Gu world and had been killing Chaos monsters who attempted to break in, paused simultaneously. They raised their heads and glanced at the direction of the old man. Dense clouds

rose from under their feet, which led them speedily to the old man.

Clear mist streams extended for tens of millions of miles. The old man sat on the mist with his legs crossed, and entire body shining with a dim light that was connected with the light of Pan Gu world. Treading on clouds, Priest Dachi, Priest Qingwei, and Priest Yu Yu flew over and stood in front of the old man in a straight line, then solemnly bowed and greeted the old man 'Shifu'.

The old man slowly nodded. He was amiable-looking, but also like an ancient well, without any change in expressions. His eyes were filled with a mysterious light, which was completely emotionless, hazy, and primitive. He ran his eyes over Priest Dachi, Priest Qingwei, and Priest Yu Yu, and waited for a long while before he slowly said, "Go...do whatever you want!"

Pointing out his right forefinger, he let a stream of mist rise. Lights and shadows flashed across the mist, allowing Yu Yu and his brothers to see Ji Hao raising the Pan Gu bell with one hand, holding the Pan Gu sword with the other hand, and fighting Priest Mu and Priest Hua with difficulty.

When they saw the Pan Gu sword held in Ji Hao's hand generate seven tangible beams of light, break Priest Hua's defensive lotus, and penetrate his heart, Yu Yu laughed out loud and clapped his hands. Priest Dachi's expression slightly changed, then nodded with a faint smile, but Priest Qingwei's face turned dark, as he sullenly threw a glance at Ji Hao.

Priest Yu Yu was delighted, because Ji Hao had made a major progress in his art of Dao, and was already able to harm Priest Hua with his sword. Priest Hua was a top-grade powerful being from Pan Gu world, at the same level as Yu Yu himself. However, his disciple was actually capable of harming Priest Hua, and this was so worthy to be proud of.

Yu Yu was born like this, frank and straightforward. Ji Hao was his disciple, and made him proud. Therefore, he laughed out loud

like a shiny sword which was pulled out of the sheath, without concealing its glow.

Priest Dachi was carefree. Yu Yu was his brother, and Ji Hao was a young member of his sect. Ji Hao's impressive abilities delighted him, but except for being delighted, he had no other thoughts. Priest Dachi's heart of Dao was like a bottomless, dried well, that no matter what happened, it wouldn't stir up a ripple in the dry well, or leave a trace in his heart.

Priest Qingwei was displeased, as Ji Hao was such an amazing disciple. He hadn't finished his first century of cultivation, but with two after-world supreme treasure, he actually managed to hold a stalemate in a battle against Priest Hua and Priest Mu. Even though he fell at a disadvantage, he did injure Priest Hua. How astonishing was that?

Priest Qingwei wondered why such a fabulous disciple wasn't under his own guide.

Among Yu Yu and his two brothers, who were generated from Pan Gu's soul, Priest Qingwei was the most emulative one. His disciples were not as good as Ji Hao, for which reason, he felt like Ji Hao had just stomped on his face, and that made him very unhappy.

The old man noticed the expression changes of all three of them. Expressionlessly, he pointed at Priest Mu and Priest Hua, and said, "Go, go! It has been so many years. For what happened back then, we can't hurt them...But this time, they have only themselves to blame. They colluded with the extraneous ones and attempted to lay their fingers on Pan Gu world. By doing what they are doing, they have disengaged themselves from us...Even if Pan Gu were still alive, he would not spare them again just because they used to follow him and keep him company back then."

Hearing the old man's voice, the lights and shadows in the mist changed, showing the vast Chaos and the violent Chaos tide waves.

In the embryo of an enormous world, a giant curled his body, his eyes closed tightly, while holding a large axe in his arms and snoring.

A small linden tree and a tender lotus stood on the embryo of world, spreading their branches, shaking their leaves, and making silvery sounds, which echoed with the giant's snores and composed a beautiful melody.

Priest Dachi, Priest Qingwei and Priest Yu Yu each cast a complicated glance at the scene in the mist, then bowed to the old man and transformed into three streams of mist, flowing into the Chaos. Their powers were connected through long distances. Within a few breaths, they merged into the Chaos, without leaving a trace.

The old man quietly looked at the giant in the mist for a while, then shook his head and said, "The great Dao if merciless...With an affectionate heart, I tolerated you for years. What I have done is enough to repay you for the old stories. I was born together with Pan Gu, but I am not him, I...owe you nothing."

Sweeping his palm and crushing the mist, the old man slowly raised his right hand and pressed down.

Following his moves, all Chaos monsters who approached Pan Gu world, attempting to seize the opportunity while Pan Gu world was swallowing the twelve water worlds, to break into Pan Gu world and plunder, suddenly burst into shrill screams. They were ground by an invisible force, dying within a blink of an eye.

Next, Pan Gu world widely opened its 'mouth' and swallowed the corpses of these Chaos monsters, spreading them to every corner of the world as nourishment. Absorbing these corpses, countless new earth meridians emerged in the Pan Gu motherland, along with countless rich mines. Even the soil in Pan Gu world turned much richer because of these corpses, which contained magical powers.

"Pan Gu...my brother!" The old man slowly raised his head and said slowly, "The blood in my heart has been boiling these days. In stillness, I am actually on tenterhooks...A disaster is coming. What should I do?"

The Chaos was quiet and peaceful. The old man remained silent for long, then disappeared along with a gentle breeze.

Chapter 1594: A Slap

In the Chaos, Ji Hao split the sword light and hurt Priest Hua with a sword move.

Priest Hua lowered his head in shock. Looking at the puncture wound on his chest, which was caused by the Pan Gu sword, he couldn't even believe his own eyes.

With his power and cultivation, not even the falling of natural stars and collapse of a continent could harm a hair of his. Days ago, he let Ji Hao cut off an arm of his, but that was because of his carelessness. However, he fought Ji Hao with his full attention today, even activating his defensive lotus. But, Ji Hao wounded him once again. Furthermore, the injuries caused by Ji Hao this time were on the chest, a vital body area instead of a limb.

"Ji Hao kid!" Priest Hua growled hoarsely. Once he opened his mouth, a sharp stream of blood surged out.

Ji Hao howled seriously. He faced Priest Mu with his back, letting the latter brushed the colorful branch on his back. The skin of his back was broken, and his blood splashed. In the meantime, he moved both arms and swung the Pan Gu bell and the Pan Gu sword towards Priest Hua.

Also, as he slowly twisted his neck, another four arms grew out of the back of his neck, fingers locked together. They brought up a strong wave of Chaos power that struck on Priest Hua's face.

The Pan Gu bell bumped heavily on Priest Hua's head. A lotus rose from his head, defending him against the bell. But, the bell buzzed and shattered the lotus. The Pan Gu bell lunged towards the spot between his eyebrows. Priest Hua was startled, as he screamed shrilly while a lotus with an ever-changing color bloomed between his eyebrows, wrapped in Chaos power and clear streams of mist, facing the Pan Gu sword.

"Great Freedom! Get back if you want to live! Let my brother defend himself!" Priest Mu roared hoarsely in rage, "The lotus you activated is the original body of my brother! If it suffers any harm, you will not survive!"

Priest Hua's eyes sparkled with a dim seven-colored light, then the light faded, and those eyes turned water-clear, ice-cool. Priest Hua glanced at Ji Hao in a complicated way, then the lotus blooming between his eyebrows immediately drew back into his body. Next, the space between Ji Hao and himself began vibrating intensely.

He was less than nine meters away from Ji Hao. As the space vibrated violently, the nine meters of space between them was suddenly added with millions of layers, and every layer was tens of thousands of miles thick.

Ji Hao lunged the Pan Gu sword into the vibrating space and stirred up circles of ripples. Every time he penetrated a layer of space, the sharp light of the sword would dim a little bit. Ji Hao felt that the space before the sword tip was all empty, but no matter how hard he tried, he could not penetrate the immeasurable void and truly hurt Priest Hua.

Great Freedom gave up on controlling Priest Hua's body, and Priest Hua's soul regained the control of his own body and power. He activated the power of his ever-changing great Dao of evolvement and immediately caused Ji Hao a serious trouble.

Priest Mu growled resonantly with a hoarse voice. The seven-colored branch held in his hands brushed heavily on Ji Hao's back and wounded him even more violently, soon making his bones get exposed. Through the cracks between his bones, one could even see his squirming internal organs.

Bang! The four hands with locked fingers of Ji Hao strongly pressed on the layers of space created by Priest Hua.

Nine perfectly round formations immediately emerged in a

beautiful circle. The nine formations were complicated and mysterious, covered in splendid marks of the great Dao of sun-like golden colored glass statues, stunning but especially powerful.

Priest Hua's layers of space vibrated intensely. This full strike of Ji Hao actually managed to penetrate about thirty percent of the layers of space. Nine beams of golden light descended from the sky, shrilly penetrated the Chaos, and shattered the layers of space.

Every shattered layer of space transformed into dense clouds of black fire and smoke, spreading rapidly. Fires and sparkles burst from the space between Ji Hao and Priest Hua, while a destructive power swept across the entire area, sending both Priest Hua and Ji Hao flying backward.

Priest Mu gave a bright shout. He locked his left fingers together and pressed heavily on Ji Hao's spine from the back.

Along with a thunderous bang, a vividly green thunder erupted from Ji Hao's spine, blowing it into over ten pieces. The broken bones darted in every direction swiftly. A triangular piece of bone violently swept across Priest Mu's face and tore open an inch-deep wound on his face.

"How can this kid have such a strong body? None of our disciples have even ten percent of his strength!" Exclaimed Priest Mu.

With the thunder strike, Priest Mu finally discovered the weirdness of Ji Hao's body. It was strong, indescribably strong. Even a full power from Priest Mu failed to destroy Ji Hao body, and only managed break a section of his spine!

One had to mention the fact that Ji Hao wasn't protected by the Pan Gu bell this time, because he used the bell as a hammer to smash Priest Hua. He took this strike from Priest Mu purely with his incomparably strong physical body, and Priest Mu did no more than break a section of his spine!

Priest Mu believed that under his full strike, without any defense,

even Yu Yu, who had an incredibly strong body, would have at least two sections of spine broken! This meant that in a physical way, Ji Hao could be mentioned in the same breath as Priest Dachi, Priest Qignwei, and Priest Yu Yu, even with Priest Mu and Priest Hua and the other master-level powerful beings, whose bodies had been nourished and strengthened by the great Dao over countless centuries!

Every inch of the bodies of these powerful beings was thickly covered in layers of marks of the great Dao, to keep their bodies under the protection of the natural will moment after moment, gifting their bodies a marvelous defensive power. However, Ji Hao was able to compete with these powerful beings physically purely with his strong body itself. Discovering this, Priest Mu's scalp was numbed.

"We can't let this kid live!" Narrowing his eyes, Priest My growled, "Become a saint with a strong body? Attain the great Dao through strength? Not even we can dream this sweet dream. How dare a kid like you have such a wildly arrogant thought?"

Ji Hao turned around and glanced at Priest Mu speechlessly. 'Become a saint with a strong body? Attain the great Dao through strength?' He never thought in this way!

If the mysterious man, who lived in his spiritual space, didn't teach him a series of strange things...In the end, Ji Hao wouldn't even know what type of great Dao he had been perusing. Anyhow, his powers and abilities were completely different from the great Dao taught by Yu Yu!

While enduring the tearing pain from his back, one of the four newly grown arms one the back of his neck suddenly and magically extended for thousands of meters long, nimbly wriggled out like a snake, and slapped loudly on Priest Mu's wrinkled face!

"Haha! Good job!" Along with a sonorous growl, Yu Yu trod on a beam of light and arrived with giant steps, clad in a red robe.

Chapter 1595: Shake People's Hearts with Money

"Hahaha, old wood, my Shifu is here! No matter how powerful you are, talk to my Shifu! I won't keep you company anymore!" Seeing Yu Yu pull out his sword and lunge towards Priest Mu, Ji Hao laughed out wildly. The golden bridge sparkled and teleported him hundreds of miles away. He breathed deeply and let his bone pieces and muscles fly back to his body like smart birds flying back to their nests, then merge back together.

Even Divine Magi could regrow their bodies from drops of blood, not to mention Ji Hao, a powerful being with a Pan Gu body. He didn't lose even a drop of blood, because all the blood he shed had flown back into his body. Within a second, his injuries were healed completely, without leaving a scar.

Priest Mu and Priest Hua quickly stood side by side, looking at Yu Yu in fear.

In terms of cultivation, Yu Yu was stronger than Priest Hua, and equally powerful as Priest Mu, or maybe slightly weaker than him. However, Yu Yu inherited the fierceness from Saint Pan Gu's soul, and was amazing at fighting and killing. More importantly, his sword formation was highly lethal. Once the sword formation was activated, no target could survive. Priest Mu and Priest Hua weren't afraid of Yu Yu, but the sword formation did make them worry.

"Priest Mu, Priest Hua, let me cut your faces off for you, those are useless to you anyway!" Yu Yu shouted resonantly as he lunged his sword and released sharp sword light from his entire body, tearing the space open and leaving clear space cracks in the air. Pointing at Priest Mu and Priest Hua, he growled, "As sect masters, as top-grade cultivators, you actually combined your powers to bully my disciple. What do you need your faces for?"

Priest Mu and Priest Hua stared at Yu Yu and remained silent. Yu Yu sounded mean, but as richly experienced beings, those mean words were nothing to them.

Yu Yu's cyan-colored long sword swept across the air and sent a pair of extremely thin beams of sword light towards Priest Hua and Priest Mu' faces. As Yu Yu said, the sword light cut straight at their faces.

Priest Mu was enraged. He wielded the colorful branch and dispelled the sword light, while Priest Hua released three-thousand streams of mist from his head. Within the mist, three-thousand weirdly-shaped 'spirit warriors' rose, wearing all kinds of jewels, and launched offensives at Yu Yu with their strange weapons, which were condensed from all kinds of emotion and desires of living beings.

Yu Yu's eyes grew wider in surprise. Looking at the three-thousand spirit warriors, he sighed sincerely and said, "Priest Hua, this magic of yours is truly amazing...I haven't seen you do this before!"

While speaking, Yu Yu wielded his sword and sent up three-thousand beams of sword light, which transformed into cyan dragons and penetrated the space. With the cracking noise of gold and jade, the chests of all three-thousand spirit warriors of Priest Hua were punctured simultaneously by Yu Yu's sword light, turning into pieces of gold and jade and drifting down.

Priest Hua's expression changed suddenly. Letting out a mouthful of blood, he burst into wild laughter. Locking his finger together, he swiftly drew a spell symbol in the air with his blood.

As the blood-red spell symbol flew out, all pieces of his spirit warriors flew towards it immediately. Along with a thunderous growl that sounded like the explosions of tens of thousands of thunder bombs, a thousand-miles-tall, dark golden giant appeared, with four faces, four feet, and thirty-six arms.

Priest Hua took hundreds of pre-world spirit treasures and supreme treasures from where Pan Heng died. At the moment, this dark golden giant was holding a pre-world supreme treasure in each of his hands, starting millions of beams of warm light as it struck at Yu Yu formidably.

The moment the golden giant moved, Priest Mu flashed behind Yu Yu and violently lunged his colorful branch towards Yu Yu's back. Meanwhile, he gripped a jade board with his left hand, which was also a pre-world supreme treasure, and incanted a spell. It triggered a four-colored light that went forward spiraling and coiled around Yu Yu's entire body.

Priest Hua flicked his fingers quickly as he cast layers of magic seals on Yu Yu in a row. Dazzling lights forced Yu Yu to slightly shake his body and disturbed his power flows, making him feel like standing in a swamp.

Looking at the dark golden giant descending, Yu Yu laughed out loud, "Hah, Priest Hua, where did you get such a fortune? Thirty-six pre-world supreme treasures? Have you two ever been so wealthy?"

Standing aside gasping, Ji Hao healed his injuries and restored his power. Hearing Yu Yu, he burst into shouts, "Shifu, these pre-world supreme treasures were stolen from me by these two shameless old things!"

With simple language, Ji Hao told Yu Yu about what happened in Pan Heng world, from how he fought hard to kill Pan Heng, to finding over a thousand pre-world treasures from Pan Hengs' corpse, then to Priest Hua and Priest Mu robbing a half of those treasures.

Yu Yu raised his eyebrows. His grinning face was instantly occupied by the fierce intent of killing, and his entire body seemed to be covered in a layer of dark clouds, that even his jade-white skin turned slightly dark.

Pre-world spirit treasures and supreme treasures usually served as the foundation of a sect. With a spirit treasure, an ordinary cultivator could at least challenge the enemies two to three levels higher than him or herself. With a supreme treasure, an ordinary cultivator would at least be able to hang in for a while, even when facing master-level powerful beings, instead of being killed immediately.

Hundreds of supreme treasures and spirit treasures? How much could those improve the power of a sect?

Yu Yu had a large number of disciples, but except for the few senior ones, only a lucky handful of them had pre-world treasures. After all, pre-world treasures were way too rare, that not even Yu Yu had that many of those.

But Priest Mu and Priest Hua had actually 'robbed' hundreds of pre-world treasures from his disciple? Those treasures belonged to Ji Hao, and as Ji Hao's Shifu, Yu Yu has the ownership of those treasures too, which meant, Priest Hua and Priest Mu took Yu Yu's treasures!

"Priest Hua, Priest Mu, today, I will not stop before you die!" Shouted Yu Yu, "Brothers, do it! Not to mention anything else, we have to take our treasures back!"

Priest Dachi and Priest Qingwei were watching aside, without showing an intention to join the battle directly.

After all, Yu Yu was fierce and powerful. With his sword formation, Yu Yu was strong enough to deal with both Priest Mu and Priest Hua. Unless Yu Yu fell in disadvantages, Priest Dachi and Priest Qingwei wouldn't be willing to join hands to fight Priest Mu and Priest Hua, because of pride.

But on hearing Ji hao, they changed their minds. Priest Dachi remained as calm and quiet as an old well, while Priest Qignwei's eyes turned red.

Priest Qingwei didn't have as many disciples as Yu Yu did, but the number wasn't small either. Among his disciples, only a few owned pre-world treasures!

Hundreds of pre-world treasures? How could he let Priest Hua and Priest Mu have those?

With a thunderous bang, a giant hole was opened up in the space of the Chaos by a jade Ruyi, which was embossed with tigers and dragons. Priest Qingwei abruptly showed up behind Priest Hua and smashed the Ruyi on Priest Hua's back.

Chapter 1596: Break the Sky with a Hand

Ji Hao stood aside and watched the fight. Seeing Priest Qignwei suddenly launch an offensive and make a raging fire erupt from Priest Hua's eyes, nose, mouth, and ears, Ji Hao couldn't help but clap his hands and laugh out loud.

If Priest Hua was merely forced to vomit blood, as a powerful being, he would be able to replenish his consumed life-force and recover in a span of a gasp, and no actual harm would be caused to his foundation of Dao. However, the dragon and tiger jade Ruyi held in Priest Qingwei's hand was a top-grade pre-world supreme treasure, a greatly powerful piece. Under its power, instead of blood, what spurted out of Priest Mu's eyes, nose, ears, and mouth was actually his spirit true fire.

Normally, the spirit true fire hid in his soul, connected with his life-force and soul. The moment the fire died, his life and Dao would be gone. Just now, the fire puffed out of his body, because clearly, his foundation of Dao was harmed severely.

"Priest Qingwei!" Priest Hua screamed hysterically with a hoarse voice.

Priest Qingwei, as the most serious one among Yu Yu's brothers, and a typical rule follower, had actually attacked sneakily. And for the first move, he used his dragon and tiger jade Ruyi, which was the most powerful one among all pre-world supreme treasures he possessed.

Priest Mu felt that his internal organs were all stirred, and his brain was on fire. From his throat, a stream of fire spurted to a long distance away while he trembled slightly and lost his eyesight. He completely forgot where he was and what he had been doing.

Priest Qingwei hit the target with one strike and gave Priest Hua a strong dizziness, even stirring up his mind. Yu Yu gave a sonorous laugh as a splendid beam of sword light shone from his

cyan-colored longsword, rose into the sky like a long streak of rainbow, and instantly penetrated the chest of Priest Hua's dark golden giant.

The cyan-colored, sharp sword light beam spiraled and cut the giant into pieces. The thirty-six pre-world treasures fell from the giant's hands and landed in Yu Yu's hands.

Priest Mu roared furiously. He flashed across the air and reached behind Yu Yu, lunging his colorful branch again towards Yu Yu's back. The branch transformed into a dazzling beam of light and pierced towards Yu Yu like a sharp sword.

Yu Yu moved like a bolt of lightning. Along with a shrill swishing noise, he flashed across the space over and over again. The eye-piercing beam of light held in Priest Mu's hands lunged for a thousand times within a moment, but was always a short distance away from Yu Yu's body.

Weirdly, this short distance also seemed to be as great as the distance between the end of the sky and the bottom of an ocean, that no matter how hard Priest Mu tried, he never managed to touch Yu Yu. In the sphere of close combat, as a combative powerful being, Yu Yu was definitely more skillful than Priest Mu. Throwing himself in a disadvantage by starting a close fight against Yu Yu, Priest Mu must have been too angry to think when he made this wrong decision.

Seeing this, Ji Hao raised his eyebrows in excitement. Dodging Priest Mu's attacks, Yu Yu moved swiftly through the space like a sharp sword, with an incomparably strong sword intent. The Chaos tide waves were as fragile as tofu for Yu Yu, not causing him any difficulty.

Every step and movement made by Yu Yu was included in the sword spells he created, but still, watching his perfectly smooth and natural moves, Ji Hao felt so magical. Gradually, he caught a faint sense of Dao from Yu Yu's moves.

Watching Yu Yu fight, Ji Hao harvested more than he ever could from a hundred years of severe cultivation. Ji Hao grinned in happiness and wielded his arms excitedly. Suddenly, a strong sword power burst from every pore of his. Clearly, led by Yu Yu's mysterious steps, Ji Hao had stepped into a magical state, which allowed him to understand the great Dao of sword even deeper.

In his spiritual space, the mysterious man sat in midair with his legs crossed, fiddling with a hazy large axe with both hands. "Eh, Yu Yu, why does he have to play with swords? All other weapons are wrong. Only giant axes can serve as true weapon of Pan Gu!" The mysterious man clicked his tongue and murmured.

Shaking his head, he sighed helplessly and continued, "He chose the wrong path for himself, fine, and now he led his disciple to the wrong path. What an...endless baneful influence!"

Yu Yu laughed wildly while Priest Mu chased after him, attacking ferociously. Yu Yu leaped nimbly and swung his arms quickly. While dodging Priest Mu's attacks, he had also been carefully observing the thirty-six pre-word supreme treasures he looted from Priest Hua earlier.

"Not as good as the supreme treasures which emerged during the creation of Pan Gu world, but these are still genuine pre-world supreme treasures, and merely slightly weaker than the ones from Pan Gu world. These are good enough to merge with my disciples' souls and help them attain their great Dao!" Yu Yu laughed out loud, "Great treasures! You shameless old things, you robbed my disciple's treasures!"

Priest Dachi, Priest Qingwei, and Priest Yu Yu, their souls were connected in a mysterious and magical way. Through the connection between their souls, Priest Qingwei and Priest Dachi simultaneously found out the functions, powers, origins, and background stories of every treasure held in Yu Yu's hands at the moment when Yu Yu observed these treasures.

Priest Qingwei raised his eyebrows. A clear stream of mist rose tens of thousands of miles high from the top of his head while he wielded the dragon and tiger jade Ruyi with his right hand and launched another wave of violent strikes against Priest Hua.

Priest Hua shouted sonorously. Hit by Priest Qingwei's jade Ruyi for tens of times in a row, fire sparkles rose from every corner of his body. Wisps of spirit true fire puffed out of his pores ceaselessly, making his body look like a transparent piece of glass.

Priest Hua suffered a severe injury. Without focusing on the cultivation and healing for a period of time, what he had lost could never be replenished. As he lost more and more life-force, dodging Priest Qingwei's attacks became more and more difficult for him. For quite a few times, the dragon and tiger jade Ruyi nearly slapped on his forehead.

Priest Hua was about to lose to Priest Qingwei. Watching this, Priest Mu suddenly realized a fact — Priest Hua's ever-changing great Dao of evolvement was naturally suppressed by the results of Priest Qingwei's great Dao, and Priest Qingwei had a much greater cultivation than Priest Hua did!

Giving a resonant growl, Priest Mu turned way from Yu Yu and flashed across the air, attempting to help Priest Hua.

Suddenly, Priest Dachi, who had been hiding in the darkness and watching the fight all this while, gave a resounding shout and suddenly made his move. Like a crane, he slowly rose and then dove down swiftly, hitting heavily on Priest Mu's back with a purple-jade cudgel.

Priest Mu would never have dreamed that Priest Dachi would actually attack so suddenly, almost sneakily. After all, Priest Dachi had always been the most modest and peaceful one among all. Priest Dachi was immeasurably powerful, and being admired by Priest Qingwei and Priest Yu Yu, he was much more powerful than his two younger brothers.

Priest Mu tried to guess Priest Dachi's actual power level countless times, but it was only when he suffered a strike from Priest Dachi did he figure this out — Priest Dachi was truly, seriously terrifying!

The purple jade cudgel wasn't even Priest Dachi's spirit supreme treasure. Instead, it was just a random piece owned by Priest Dachi. However, with this random, ordinary-looking piece, Priest Dachi almost crushed Priest Mu's internal organs and made him scream in tears because of the pain.

"Brother Dachi, show mercy, please!" Priest Mu opened his mouth and let out a sharp streak of fire mixed with a large amount of blood. Suffering a severe injury, he screamed in a great shock, "For the friendship between Saint Pan Gu and us!"

Priest Dachi was preparing to make the second strike, but on hearing Priest Mu, he paused, showing hesitation on his expressionless face.

In this very moment, a raging roar burst from the giant city in a distance away.

In the following moment, a hundreds of millions of miles long, purely dark arm thrust out of the city, thickly covered in dark hair. The enormous arm slapped destructively on this area of Chaos where the battle was happening.

Along with a thunderous bang, the area of Chaos was shattered.

Chapter 1597: Yu Man

The giant hand violently crushed the space. Ji Hao exclaimed out loud while the Pan Gu bell released streams of Chaos power to shield his entire body. The golden bridge buzzed shrilly and transformed into a tens of thousands of miles long golden streak of light, forcibly creating a path that brought Ji Hao away from this crushed area of space.

From the crushed space, a silhouette flashed out. It was Priest Hua, wrapped in smoke and fire sparkles, injured badly. While vomiting blood, he popped out from the space beside Ji Hao.

Ji Hao was standing on the golden streak of light transformed from the golden bridge, while priest Hua showed up beside the golden bridge, less than thirty meters away from Ji Hao.

Staring at each other, both of them paused briefly. In the next moment, Ji Hao burst into a thunderous growl while raising streams of Chaos power with both arms. The Chaos power streams wove into a hundred-miles wide giant hand and descended on Priest Hua's head. The power of a half of Pan Heng world was sent into the pair of giant palms, creating a heavy pressure which even frightened Priest Hua.

Back in his best state, Priest Hua could ignore Ji Hao's offensive. But at this time, Priest Hua had already been injured by Priest Qingwei and Yu Yu. His countless spirit warriors generated from his great Dao of evolvement were destroyed by Yu Yu with one single move, and at the moment, Priest Hua was in his weakest state, with no power to fight Ji Hao.

Sighing in anger, Priest Hua flashed across the air, transformed into a gust of wind which emitted a refreshing aroma, and fled.

Ji Hao's pair of enormous hand slapped in the air, quaked the space, and crushed tens of Chaos tide waves.

"Priest Hua, you're a master and an elder. How can you flee with a sky devil magic? Aren't you ashamed?" Yelled Ji Hao while his eye corners twitched in rage. Priest Hua had actually escaped through a sky devil magic, and Ji Hao didn't even know what to say about this behavior of his.

A distance away, Yu Yu walked out of the crushed space, seeming to be startled, but remained perfectly unharmed.

Priest Mu took a deep breath. In the following moment, he teleported himself to tens of thousands of miles away. As a nicely scented gust of wind blew across, as Priest Hua showed up beside Priest Mu. Covered by Priest Mu, Priest Hua hurriedly took out a jade bottle and poured eighteen thumb-sized golden pills into his mouth. Hearing Ji Hao, he made no reaction at all, as if he heard nothing.

Priest Dachi, Priest Qingwei and Priest Yu Yu turned away from Priest Mu and Priest Hua, who were injured quite badly, then looked seriously at the enormous metal city far away.

"My friend, where are you from? What are you here for?" Priest Dachi put away the purple jade cudgel, then slowly took out a wooden cudgel from his sleeve, which was not eye-catching at all. Next, he took out a vividly green Japanese banana leaf, and put it in his neckband.

Priest Dachi seemed to worry that the wooden cudgel and the leaf might not be able to deal with the unknown powerful enemy. Therefore, he took out a pair of beautifully glowing gemstone rings and wore them on his left fingers. Following the movements of his fingers, the pair of rings released two streams of mist, one turbid and one clear, coiling on Priest Dachi's palm and condensing into a hazy diagram of Taiji.

On the giant metal city, a large number of Yu Clan nobles and Jia Clan warriors in luxurious armors flew up, silently floating in the air. A deep laughter could be heard from the city, cold and hoarse,

sounding like muffled thunder in a summer night as it slowly swept across the sky. The color of the Chaos suddenly changed. Within Ji Hao's line of sight, everything became evilly black.

Black Chaos, black tide waves, black, disordered energy clashed against each other and generated dark light and thunderbolts, while a giant blackhole quietly emerged. The surrounding space turned quiet, but the dark cold laughter which wasn't pleasant to hear lingered in the Chaos and echoed through Ji Hao's spiritual space.

Gradually, this cold laugher turned louder and louder, stronger and stronger, tearing Ji Hao's body and soul like a thousand rotten, dull knives and blades. It even dazzled his eyes and made him indescribably uncomfortable.

"Devil, how dare you?" Priest Qingwei frowned and abruptly launched a strike at the Chaos with the dragon and tiger Ruyi in his hands.

A rumbling thunder erupted all of a sudden, clearing away the noisy laughter in Ji Hao's head. Ji Hao took a deep breath and hurriedly incanted a spell which could clear his mind and restrain the inner world, calming himself down with a secret magic.

The Pan Gu bell floated above Ji Hao's head and rang brightly, shielding his embryo of Dao together with the spell.

"Devils?" From the core of the metal city, an extremely ferocious, hoarse voice shouted, "To me, you're the devils!"

Along with the voice, another millions of miles long giant arm with thick dark hair reached out of the metal city. The two arms grabbed the wall of the metal city and squeezed the city wall with a tremendous force, making the bronze wall creak.

Slowly, a giant figure straightened its upper body. Even from millions of miles away, everyone clearly saw the thick black hair on the wild face of this creature, and the enormous single eye on

his forehead, which was filled with the sense of violence and destruction, as if he were right in front of everyone's eyes.

This creature had such a wild look, like a chimpanzee with physical disabilities. He was like a wild animal with its head smashed by a giant rock tens of times in a row, ending up completely out of shape, extremely ugly looking, yet who suddenly became an intelligent creature.

Wild, rude, violent, hideous... No light of wisdom could be discovered from his twisted face, and there was only the obvious wildness and desire of destruction. Two long lines of saliva hung on his mouth corners, making him look like a fierce hydrophobic dog.

The single eye between his eyebrows was glowing red, because of the swollen blood streaks in his eyes.

"I am Yu Man." His pair of arms trembled slightly and supported his body, allowing him to stand up with difficulty.

It seemed that he hadn't moved his body for long, because he stood up very slowly and strenuously. From the long distance, Ji Hao heard the creaking noise from his bone joints.

"Every world has its own Dao. The controller of the Dao of every world believes that his or her Dao is the true great Dao. Those who believe that they are 'saints' all see the others as devils."

Yu Man was such a scary-looking creature, but what he said sounded reasonable.

"I have conquered and destroyed countless worlds. I thought the Dao controllers from the worlds I destroyed were devils, but they saw me as a devil too. But, what about the results? The winner's Dao is always the true great Dao, while the losers end up as failed devils."

"I am stronger than you, so you are devils."

"This is the absolutely right Dao I learned from my long life!"

Chapter 1598: The Right Dao

Millions of Yu Clan nobles and Jia Clan warriors composed a tremendous, formidable array in the dark Chaos. They looked at Yu Man in reverence and admiration, like ordinary human beings looking at their gods. Led by Evil Crown, they kneeled and kowtowed to Yu Man.

Yu Man, the enormous creature roared with a deep voice, and slowly straightened his body. As he stood up slowly, his body had been shrinking ceaselessly. When he completely straightened his body, he shrank to about thirty meters tall.

He had a ferocious and hideous face. His thick black hair covered his body like a blanket, and he didn't wear a thing. Shaking his head hard, Yu Man creaked his neck loudly, which sounded like tens of shaking cowbells.

Ji Hao looked at Yu Man from a long distance away. He looked like a disfigured gorilla walking upright, single-eyed and extremely ugly. However, from this single-eyed ugly creature, a strong sense of Dao was emitted. Judging by the sense of Dao, he was a 'master' like Yu Yu and his brothers, or even a 'saint'.

He stretched his neck, then his arms, waist, legs, and feet. After that, he laughed out loud and cleared his throat, then reached his hand backward. A giant black bone cudgel flew out of the metal city into his hand, along with a deep swishing noise.

He wielded the thousands of meters long black cudgel and started waves of whooshing noise that made people feel dizzy, then carried the cudgel on his shoulder as he walked out of the city in giant steps. Behind him, millions of Yu Clan nobles and Jia Clan warriors shouted crazily, as loud as they could, their faces blushed.

Ji Hao heard them clearly. They used an ancient language from Pan Yu world, which was profound, hard to understand, and very unpleasant to hear, completely different from the gentle and

beautiful language used by current Yu Clan nobles from Pan Yu world.

Yu Clan people who invaded Pan Gu world were qualified to lean this ancient language, which, according to the legends, contained a magical power. Therefore, Ji Hao had only learned a few simple sound marks of this language from the books he found from the collections of some Xiu Clan people. Based on what he knew, these non-humankind beings had been praising Yu Man with all their passions, for his great achievements of destroying thirty thousand worlds.

Ji Hao sensed that the souls of these non-humankind beings were boiling, and scorching hot streams of faith power roared into his body like melted iron. Supported by the faith power, Yu Man's stiff, inflexible body turned nimble and agile within a short couple of breaths.

Carrying the giant bone cudgel, he came to Ji Hao, Yu Yu, and Yu Yu's brothers. He widely opened his single eye and carefully looked at Ji Hao and the others from heads to toe, one after another.

Ji Hao didn't know about the feelings the others had, but when Yu Man looked at him with that single eye, he sensed his gaze, which was like a tiny yet especially sharp dagger violently cutting every cell of his as it attempted to dig out every secret he had.

Yu Man looked at him in such an aggressive way. From his gaze, Ji Hao also sensed a strong maliciousness, and craziness.

"My two friends!" Yu Man laughed abruptly. Before he laughed, he looked just averagely scary. But, once he widely opened his giant mouth, which was like a bloody hole, and exposed his three layers of sharp teeth, he looked unacceptably scary.

He was so ill-looking, that Ji Hao instinctively glanced at those beautiful Yu Clan nobles and strong Jia Clan warriors above the metal city. He couldn't believe that these perfect-looking non-humankind beings actually shared an origin with Yu Man, such a

wild, deformed creature!

"Hehe!" Priest Dachi laughed with a gentle voice, while his pair of rings tinkled.

Priest Mu and Priest Hua glanced at each other, pondered for a short while, then flew up and landed beside Yu Man. Priest Mu remained silent with a bitter face, while Priest Hua bowed seriously to Yu Man and said, "Greetings, Yu Man, my friend."

Yu Man laughed, then carelessly waved his hand to Priest Hua and said, "Cut the crap. These courtesies are useless, meaningless. The three of us together...Hmm, which one of these three is the weakest? Let's combine our power and launch one strike to kill one of them first, then the rest will be easy to deal with."

Priest Hua and Priest Mu paused right on the spot.

Yu Man's style of handling things was completely unacceptable to them. Why would they do that?

Some people were straightforward and simple-minded, but as high-level, powerful beings like Priest Hua and Priest Mu, shouldn't they act less straightforward than the others. In other words, shouldn't they be hypocritical and conceal a part of their real purposes?

Although what Yu Man had just said was exactly what Priest Hua and Priest Mu always wanted to do, clearly, they couldn't just say it out loud, instead just do it directly! Therefore, Priest Mu and Priest Hua felt so embarrassed. They looked at Yu Yu and his two brothers while struggling, without being able to say a word.

"So, you don't understand what is the true great Dao like, neither do you know what the right Dao is!" Watching Priest Hua and Priest Mu's reactions, Yu Man scornfully shook his head and roared, "The right Dao is doing whatever you want to do."

"If you like something that belongs to some other people, just grab it. Wealth, treasures, lovers... As long as I am strong enough,

everything in the universe belongs to me. So, I can attain anything I want without a doubt. As for the things I don't like, I will destroy them. I am strong enough, so I do whatever I want. I am powerful, so I do anything I like!"

"I saw these three, who were hindering my conquering of Pan Gu world. You two,are the allies I chose, who should give me your full cooperation. At all costs, we kill one of these three, then we will be at an advantage."

Yu Man looked at Priest Mu seriously and said, "Don't think, don't ponder, don't hesitate. Any kind of thinking is wrong. We follow our natures, our hearts, to kill, to destroy, to loot, to rape... and this... is the rightest Dao, the strongest Dao, the..."

"The Dao pursued by wild animals!" said Ji Hao coldly, "Without reason, without thinking, but to instinctively kill and loot and burn, this is the Dao of animals, without intelligence at all!"

"Yu Man, you're a giant wild animal! Don't you understand? Do I have to say this?" continued Ji Hao scornfully, "As an undeveloped, primeval, barbaric creature, how dare you even talk about the 'right Dao'?"

"Bullsh*t! Unbearable!" Ji Hao pointed at Yu Man and cursed.

Chapter 1599: Shaped Like A Beast

Priest Mu and Priest Hua's expressions changed slightly. Ji Hao cursed out loud at Yu Man, which was no different from slapping their faces directly. If Yu Man were a wild animal, as his allies, what were they?

Priest Mu remained silent with a gloomy look while Priest Hua pointed his finger at Ji Hao and shouted angrily, "Ji Hao kid, how dare you...?"

Before he finished, Yu Man raised his head and laughed out loud, sounding like a group of roaring beasts. His rumbling voice devoured Priest Hua's shouts and disabled him from finishing his speech.

"The Dao of wild animal? Smart, correct, my Dao is exactly the Dao of wild animals. So what?" Widely opening his single eye, Yu Man looked at Ji Hao with a strong interest and continued, "When I'm hungry and thirsty, I eat and drink; when I want women, I capture one, a hundred, a thousand women to have as much fun as I want; when I want to kill, I slaughter as many as I like."

"Everything I do follows my heart, my nature, the most original desires in my soul. I do everything I want with the purest strength, in the most direct way. This is the Dao, the most original, purest Dao in the world, the most basic Dao of a world!"

Yu Man suddenly pointed in the direction of Pan Gu world and yelled, "Kid, let me ask you a question. Saint Pan Gu, as the creator of your world, did he create the world by following his instinct and launching his greatest strike...Or, did he carefully ponder in the embryo for countless years and patiently dug into the great Dao for millions of centuries before he created the world?"

Ji Hao remained silent. Yu Man argued irrationally, but Ji Hao couldn't disprove what he said about one thing — Did Pan Gu follow his instinct to create the world? Or, did he create the world

for any other reason?

In his spiritual space, the mysterious man sat with crossed legs and frowned, with his pair of eyebrows squirming like a pair of flood dragons. "Did Pan Gu create the world because he instinctively wanted to, or he believed he should do so upon a deep consideration? Hmm...Who can answer this question?"

Remaining silent for a short while, he pointed his finger at his heart and said, "I can't...What about you?"

Through Ji Hao's eyes, the mysterious man glanced at Priest Dachi, Priest Qingwei, and Yu Yu, who also fell into a weird silence. Their eyes dazzled, while countless thoughts had been emerging and disappearing in their minds. They were all lost in their thoughts.

Priest Hua and Priest Mu glanced at each other embarrassedly. One of them pursued the great Dao of quietus and attempted to find the great power of rebirth from quietus, then free himself from the limitation of life. On the other hand, the other one followed the Dao of evolvement, attempting to discover the flaws of the great Dao of nature, and then attain the ultimate freedom through these flaws.

They weren't Pan Gu's descendants. Therefore, on hearing Yu Man's question, they only wanted to laugh, without falling into the indescribable state of thinking like Yu Yu and his two brothers. Therefore, they were embarrassed. They wanted to angrily question the universe — As same-level 'masters', why were Priest Dachi, Priest Qingwei, and Priest Yu Yu always at a higher state than them?

Yu Man gave a twisted grin and exposed his four tusks, then straightened his long black hair. He suddenly burst into a thunderous roar as he raised the giant bone cudgel with his right hand and started a dark fierce gale, lunging towards Ji Hao while roaring.

"Kill the weakest first, then attack the second weakest one!" Marching towards Ji Hao, Yu Man roared, "Cutting off his one finger is better than hurting his ten fingers; having one bird in your hands is better than looking at ten birds in the forest. The great Dao of killing, the death of the targets leads to the true 'Dao'!"

The bone cudgel raised a fierce gust of wind as it swished towards Ji Hao.

Ji Hao hurriedly activated the Pan Gu bell. A bell ring echoed through the sky as the bone cudgel landed heavily on the bell. With a deafening bang, dazzling sparkles erupted from the entire bell, while the bell rings made everyone feel dizzy. Ji Hao's whole body was numb, as if a bolt of thunder had just fallen on his head. He sensed a sharp pain from his internal organs as he was sent flying away along with the Pan Gu bell by the bone cudgel.

"Cutting off one finger, cutting off one finger, cutting off one finger..." Yu Man roared madly and leaped nimbly towards Ji Hao, then hit the Pan Gu bell three times in a row with the bone cudgel.

Ji Hao wasn't able to even stand. Under the heavy strikes, the bell buzzed rumblingly. Through the bell, an awfully strong force landed on Ji Hao's body, paralyzing him and hurting his internal organs. He saw nothing but bindings lights and tasted blood from his mouth, as a steam of blood had already gushed to his throat.

At last, Ji Hao's ribs were crushed, and the stream of blood was squeezed out of his mouth, squirting a long distance away.

Yu Man was incredibly strong, and the giant bone cudgel had an immense power. The cudgel was clearly a supreme treasure, at least at the level of the Pan Gu bell.

The bone cudgel perfectly neutralized the defensive power of the Pan Gu bell. Yu Man's terrifying strength was weakened halfway by the Pan Gu bell, then landed on Ji Hao's body. Fortunately, Ji Hao was protected by his own Pan Gu body. Otherwise, he could have been crushed long ago.

"Can't I kill you with thirty percent of my power?" Yu Man looked at Ji Hao in confusion. Suddenly, he heavily knocked on his own forehead with the giant bone cudgel, and burst into laughter. "Yes, your bell... Same as my weapon, it is made from a body part of 'Pan', isn't it?"

In dizziness, Ji Hao raised his head. But before he could respond, Yu Man lunged to him once again and banged the bone cudgel against the Pan Gu bell.

"Forty percent of my power, explode!" Roared Yu Man. From the bone cudgel, wisps of dark fire rose into the sky, while a much greater force struck on Ji Hao's body through the bell.

Ji Hao gave a muffed snort. As more of his bones broke, he vomited even more blood. This time, he was sent hundreds of thousands of miles away with the bell, nearly bumping into the giant metal city.

What disappointed Yu Man was that Ji Hao was injured, but didn't explode, become a puff of meat paste, and fly all over the Chaos as he expected. Even worse, as Ji Hao gasped desperately for air, all his inner injuries and outer injuries had been healing rapidly.

"B*stard kid. Cutting off one finger, cutting off one finger, why haven't you died yet?" Yu man murmured over and over again like a madman while he marched towards Ji Hao with giant steps once again.

But this time, before he approached Ji Hao, a cyan-colored beam of sword light flashed across the Chaos from behind. In fury and with his full power, Yu Yu sent his sword towards the heart of Yu Man from the back.

"If you can't cut off one finger...you damage his ten fingers!" Roared Yu Man. He abruptly turned around, dodged Yu Yu's sword, and opened his mouth ferociously, rushing to Yu Yu like a mad wild dog and attempting to bite Yu Yu's neck with his shiny

sharp teeth.

Yu Man's style of fighting was indeed exactly the same as that of wild beasts.

Chapter 1600: Slaughter, Deracinate

Yu Yu gave a shrill shout and turned his body to dodge. But still, Yu Man made a huge bite on Yu Yu's shoulder. His shiny white teeth sank deeply into Yu Yu's muscles, making the latter's face twist in pain!

Ji Hao was stunned, and so were Priest Dachi and Priest Qingwei.

As the fiercest living being in Pan Gu world, Yu Yu had fought all kinds of enemies. From prehistorical powerful beings to masters, in terms of fighting experience, no one in Pan Gu world could ever surpass Yu Yu.

Based on his rich fighting experiences, Yu Yu had raised his own fighting habits and formed his own style of fighting.

Against Chaos monsters, without a doubt, he would fight in all evil and cruel ways, even in mean and dirty ways. But facing 'master-level' beings, Yu Yu would naturally act 'politer', and leave a space for everyone's dignity. Taking Priest Mu and Priest Hua as an example, they had fought Yu Yu secretly for many times before, but no matter how intensely they wrangled, when they actually started fighting, they always kept the basic politeness as 'masters'.

Therefore, Yu Yu never thought that Yu Man, who clearly had a had a high social status in Pan Yu world as a 'saint-level' being, would actually bite him!

He opened his mouth wide and bit violently like a crazy dog, and Yu Yu didn't see this coming, failing to react timely.

"Hrr! Damage ten fingers!" A muffled rumbling noise could be heard from Yu Man's stomach. He swung his head violently and bit even tighter on Yu Yu's shoulder, generating a creaking noise and letting the purple-golden blood with layers of interwoven marks of great Dao stream down Yu Yu's shoulder, emitting a faint aroma.

Priest Mu and Priest Hua were both dumbfounded, that they

literally couldn't say a word for a long while. Yu Yu, the fiercest being in Pan Gu world, the powerful one who made them suffer in countless battles, the one who never lost a fight, was actually wounded by a bite of Yu Man. Was this even real?

Subconsciously, Priest Hua moved his jaw. If he knew that Yu Yu could be wounded by teeth, perhaps...

"Brother, are you seeing yourself as a wild dog?" Hearing the click of Priest Hua's teeth, Priest Mu sullenly glanced at him.

'What a joke? Yu Man could fight like a beast, but you, as Priest Hua...'

Shaking his head, Priest Mu quickly erased this strange feeling from his mind, 'It seems that the method doesn't matter, as long as Yu Yu can be defeated, right? Only if Yu Yu can be defeated, right? But, bite?' Priest Mu's face twisted. Once again, he glanced at Priest Hua. As they made an eye-contact with each other, the expressions on their faces turned especially weird.

"Evil monster!" Yu Yu blushed with shame, and gave vent to a torrent of curse furiously.

Anyhow, Yu Man was a 'saint-level' being from a great world. He had been talking about the 'Dao of animal' since he showed up, fine! But he actually bit like a dog? This was supposed to be a 'saint-level' battle, but because of him, it turned so weird. This, this, this was so humiliating!

Priest Yu Yu was actually wounded by a bite!

Yu Yu's eyes even turned green in anger. He moved his shoulder and attempted to get rid of Yu Man, but his teeth sparkled with marks of Dao and suddenly turned purely black. With a series of cracking noise, his teeth penetrated Yu Yu's muscles and cut on his bones.

It was painful, and so embarrassing. Yu Yu's heart of Dao was shaken. At the moment, he didn't know what to do.

Yu Man bit tightly on Yu Yu's shoulder, then swiftly wrapped his left arm around Yu Yu's body. The hair of his long and thick leg coiled around Yu Yu as well, attempting to clamp him up. In the meanwhile, he raised the giant bone cudgel with his right hand and fiercely swung it down towards Yu Yu's head.

Priest Dachi and Priest Qingwei finally realized what was happening. Because of the anger, their faces twitched intensely.

Yu Yu and his brothers were generated from Pan Gu's soul. Since the beginning of Pan Gu time, they had been fairly close to each other. They had different personalities, but they were tied together. Watching Yu Yu being injured by Yu Man in such a lowly way and falling into a difficult situation, even Priest Dachi, the most carefree one who was never enraged, cursed out loud.

Standing aside, Ji Hao pretended to hear nothing from Priest Dachi.

Priest Daci transformed into a streak of purple mist, while Priest Qingwei turned into a beam of golden light. Simultaneously, they activated their most powerful supreme treasure, gritted their teeth, and dashed towards Yu Yu. Priest Dachi swung a golden pre-world

supreme treasure which looked like a shoulder-pole towards Yu Man's head, starting bolts of thunder. Priest Qingwei quickly wielded a long streamer which was wrapped in Chaos power streams and released sharp strands of Chaos sword power, swishing towards Yu Man in disorder.

"Our two friends, our friend Yu Man is fighting a fair battle with our friend Yu Yu. Both of you are moral living beings. How can you win a fight like this?" Priest Mu and Priest Hua moved immediately, facing Priest Dachi and Priest Qingwei.

Yu Yu was thrown into a hard situation by Yu Man. In all probability, he might suffer a severe loss. In the worst case, he could even lose a limb and his foundation of Dao could be harmed.

To Priest Mu and Priest Hua, this was such a wonderful thing. So, how could they ever let Priest Dachi and Priest Qignwei stop it from happening?

They clearly understood that once they made this move, the conflict between Priest Dachi, Priest Qingwei and themselves would go up to a higher level. But still, they did it without hesitation. At all costs, they would stop Dachi and Qingwei from helping Yu Yu...It would be perfect if Yu Man died together with Yu Yu!

If Yu Yu disappeared, Priest Mu and Priest Hua wouldn't be so afraid of Dachi and Qingwei.

A linden tree and a colorful lotus rose. Priest Mu and Priest Hua showed their original shapes and transformed into ssplendidly glowing screens, blocking Dachi and Qingwei's way. Dachi and Qignwei could try their bests, but how could they break the screen so easily?

"Good, good, good!" Dachi's amiable face was suddenly changed by the fierceness.

A nice man wouldn't flare up easily, but once he did, the result would be unpredictable. Sensing the intent of killing from Dachih's face, Priest Mu and Priest Hua felt that their hearts were frozen. Instinctively, they realized that this wouldn't end so simply.

Before Priest Dachi made a move, Yu Yu, who just suffered cudgel strike with his forehead, burst into a furious roar.

"Slaughter, deracinate...Today, you will all die!" A soul-freezing sword intent erupted from Yu Yu's body, while a giant formation diagram spiraled up from under this feet, immediately covering the Chaos trillions of miles in radius.

Four beams of light with different colors flew out of his body, towards the four corners of the diagram. The sword intent swept

across the entire space, silently cutting Man Yu's mental city into two, and wiping out a giant number of non-humankind warriors in the city.

Table of Contents

- The Magus Era
  - Synopsis
  - Copyright
  - Chapter 1501: The Heaven and Earth Divine Tower
  - Chapter 1502: Appoint Ministers
  - Chapter 1503: All Followers Get Promotion
  - Chapter 1504: Fuso Staff
  - Chapter 1505: The Essence of the Sun
  - Chapter 1506: Crow Warriors of the Sun
  - Chapter 1507: The Anger of Priest Mu
  - Chapter 1508: Bygones
  - Chapter 1509: Be Frustrated
  - Chapter 1510: Crow Warriors Sword Formation
  - Chapter 1511: Priest Hua’s Destiny
  - Chapter 1512: Proud Dragons, Arrogant Phoenixes
  - Chapter 1513: Release Their Full Power
  - Chapter 1514: The God of Rain
  - Chapter 1515: The Great Battle
  - Chapter 1516: Seek Their Dooms
  - Chapter 1517: Muffled Thunder
  - Chapter 1518: Horrifying
  - Chapter 1519: Golden Bombs Wipe Out the Devils
  - Chapter 1520: Priest Mu Arrives Again
  - Chapter 1521: Pure Sun Sword Formation for Extermination
  - Chapter 1522: Hesitating
  - Chapter 1523: Harmonization
  - Chapter 1524: Priest Mu's Promise
  - Chapter 1525: Ji Hao’s confusion
  - Chapter 1526: A Lot of Work
  - Chapter 1527: The Power of ‘Blood Crown
  - Chapter 1528: Fight Through Space
  - Chapter 1529: Netherworld Priest Made a Move
  - Chapter 1530: Change Directions
  - Chapter 1531: Powerful Human Beings
  - Chapter 1532: Yawing

Chapter 1533: The Negotiation Between Worlds
Chapter 1534: I Want Nine Cauldrons
Chapter 1535: All Souls Creation Cauldron
Chapter 1536: Formulate A Plan
Chapter 1537: In A Big Way
Chapter 1538: Intense Preparation
Chapter 1539: Leave For Pan Heng World
Chapter 1540: In the Sun World
Chapter 1541: 'Welcoming' Pan Heng
Chapter 1542: The Outpost Fort
Chapter 1543: Brotherhood
Chapter 1544: The Power of Gold Crows
Chapter 1545: Blood Crown Descends
Chapter 1546: Brutal Invasion
Chapter 1547: Pan Heng Catastrophe
Chapter 1548: Merits Strike
Chapter 1549: We Are Destined to Meet Each Other
Chapter 1550: Giant Kui's Insistence
Chapter 1551: Pan Heng's Eight Hundred Guards
Chapter 1552: Blood Crown's Aggressiveness
Chapter 1553: A Confrontation of Dao
Chapter 1554: Life and Destruction
Chapter 1555: Harvest Lives
Chapter 1556: Family Test
Chapter 1557: The Main Goal
Chapter 1558: Seeing Samsara Again
Chapter 1559: Pan Heng Green Ancestor
Chapter 1560: Kill Pan Heng
Chapter 1561: The Story of Pan Heng
Chapter 1562: The Chaos Spirit Milk
Chapter 1563: The Ninth Turn of the Cultivation Method
Chapter 1564: True Pan Gu Boby
Chapter 1565: The Sealing Place
Chapter 1566: Dead Giant Vine
Chapter 1567: Make A Painstaking Investigation
Chapter 1568: Facing Pan Heng
Chapter 1569: Shocked
Chapter 1570: Failed Negotiation
Chapter 1571: Natural Suppression

Chapter 1572: Finish It With the Axe
Chapter 1573: The Quality of the Evil Being
Chapter 1574: Be Greatly Shocked
Chapter 1575: Share the Interests
Chapter 1576: Conquering
Chapter 1577: Expelling
Chapter 1578: Watching the Fight
Chapter 1579: The Strike of Destruction
Chapter 1580: Injure Priest Hua severely
Chapter 1581: Nine Suns Shine in the Sky
Chapter 1582: Nothing But Interests
Chapter 1583: Chime In Easily
Chapter 1584: Supreme Treasure of Great Dao
Chapter 1585: Seal the World
Chapter 1586: The great Dao of Quietus
Chapter 1587: Your Dao is My Dao
Chapter 1588: The Quietus of Gold Crow
Chapter 1589: Half A World
Chapter 1590: Kill the Enemies and Return
Chapter 1591: Hunt in the Chaos
Chapter 1592: Fought Both of Them
Chapter 1593: Under the Guidance of a Famous Shifu
Chapter 1594: A Slap
Chapter 1595: Shake People's Hearts with Money
Chapter 1596: Break the Sky with a Hand
Chapter 1597: Yu Man
Chapter 1598: The Right Dao
Chapter 1599: Shaped Like A Beast
Chapter 1600: Slaughter, Deracinate